A

VOYAGE

TO THE

PACIFIC OCEAN.

UNDERTAKEN,

BY THE COMMAND OF HIS MAJESTY,

FOR MAKING

Diſcoveries in the Northern Hemiſphere.

Performed under the Direction of Captains COOK, CLERKE, and GORE,
In His Majeſty's Ships the *Reſolution* and *Diſcovery*; in the Years 1776, 1777, 1778, 1779, and 1780.

IN THREE VOLUMES.

VOL. I. and II. written by Captain JAMES COOK, F.R.S.
VOL. III. by Captain JAMES KING, LL.D. and F.R.S.

Publiſhed by Order of the Lords Commiſſioners of the Admiralty.

THE SECOND EDITION.



VOL. III.

LONDON:
PRINTED BY H. HUGHS,
FOR G. NICOL, BOOKSELLER TO HIS MAJESTY, IN THE STRAND;
AND T. CADELL, IN THE STRAND.
M.DCC.LXXXV.

B&L

CONTENTS

OF THE

THIRD VOLUME.

BOOK V.

CAPTAIN KING'S JOURNAL OF THE TRANSACTIONS ON RETURNING TO THE SANDWICH ISLANDS.

CHAP. I.

DEſcription of Karakakooa Bay.—Vaſt Concourſe of the Natives.—Power of the Chiefs over the inferior People.—Viſit from Koah, a Prieſt and Warrior.—The Morai at Kakooa deſcribed.—Ceremonies at the Landing of Captain Cook.—Obſervatories erected.—Powerful Operation of the Taboo.—Method of ſalting Pork in tropical Climates.—Society of Prieſts diſcovered.—Their Hoſpitality and Munificence.—Reception of Captain Cook.—Artifice of Koah.—Arrival of Terreeoboo, King of the Iſland.—Singular Ceremony.—Viſit from the King.—Returned by Captain Cook. Page 1.

CONTENTS.

CHAP. II.

Farther Account of Tranſactions with the Natives.—Their Hoſpitality.—Propenſity to Theft.—Deſcription of a Boxing Match.—Death of one of our Seamen.—Behaviour of the Prieſts at his Funeral.—The Wood Work and Images on the Morai purchaſed.—The Natives inquiſitive about our Departure.—Their Opinion about the Deſign of our Voyage.—Magnificent Preſents of Terreeoboo to Captain Cook.—The Ships leave the Iſland.—The Reſolution damaged in a Gale, and obliged to return. 20

CHAP. III.

Suſpicious Behaviour of the Natives, on our Return to Karakakooa Bay.—Theft on board the Diſcovery, and its Conſequences.—The Pinnace attacked, and the Crew obliged to quit her.—Captain Cook's Obſervations on the Occaſion.—Attempt at the Obſervatory.—The Cutter of the Diſcovery ſtolen.—Meaſures taken by Captain Cook for its Recovery.—Goes on Shore, to invite the King on board.—The King being ſtopped by his Wife, and the Chiefs, a Conteſt ariſes.—News arrives of one of the Chiefs being killed, by one of our People.—Ferment on this Occaſion.—One of the Chiefs threatens Captain Cook, and is ſhot by him.—General Attack by the Natives.—Death of Captain Cook.—Account of the Captain's Services, and a Sketch of his Character. 35

CHAP. IV.

Tranſactions at Owhyhee, ſubſequent to the Death of Captain Cook.—Gallant Behaviour of the Lieutenant of Marines.—

Dangerous

Dangerous Situation of the Party at the Morai.—Bravery of one of the Natives.—Conſultation reſpecting future Meaſures.—Demand of the Body of Captain Cook.—Evaſive and inſidious Conduct of Koah, and the Chiefs.—Inſolent Behaviour of the Natives.—Promotion of Officers.—Arrival of two Prieſts with Part of the Body.—Extraordinary Behaviour of two Boys.—Burning of the Village of Kakooa.—Unfortunate Deſtruction of the Dwellings of the Prieſts.—Recovery of the Bones of Captain Cook.—Departure from Karakakooa Bay. 53

CHAP. V.

Departure from Karakakooa in Search of an Harbour on the South Eaſt Side of Mowee.—Driven to Leeward by the Eaſterly Winds and Current.—Paſs the Iſland of Tahoorowa.—Deſcription of the South Weſt Side of Mowee.—Run along the Coaſts of Ranai and Morotoi to Woahoo.—Deſcription of the North Eaſt Coaſt of Woahoo.—Unſucceſsful Attempt to water.—Paſſage to Atooi.—Anchor in Wymoa Bay.—Dangerous Situation of the Watering Party on Shore.—Civil Diſſentions in the Iſlands.—Viſit from the contending Chiefs.—Anchor off Oneeheow.—Final Departure from the Sandwich Iſlands. 83

CHAP. VI.

*General Account of the Sandwich Iſlands.—Their Number, Names, and Situation.—*OWHYHEE.*—Its Extent, and Diviſion into Diſtricts.—Account of its Coaſts, and the adjacent Country.—Volcanic Appearances.—Snowy Mountains.—Their Height determined.—Account of a Journey into the*

interior Parts of the Country.—MOWEE.—TAHOOROWA.—MOROTOI.—RANAI.—WOAHOO.—ATOOI.—ONEEHEOW. OREEHOUA.—TAHOORA.—*Climate.*—*Winds.*—*Currents.*—*Tides.*—*Animals and Vegetables.*—*Aſtronomical Obſervations.* 100

CHAP. VII.

General Account of the Sandwich Iſlands continued.—*Of the Inhabitants.*—*Their Origin.*—*Perſons.*—*Pernicious Effects of the Ava.*—*Numbers.*—*Diſpoſition and Manners.*—*Reaſons for ſuppoſing them not Cannibals.*—*Dreſs and Ornaments.*—*Villages and Houſes.*—*Food.*—*Occupations and Amuſements.*—*Addicted to Gaming.*—*Their extraordinary Dexterity in Swimming.*—*Arts and Manufactures.*—*Curious Specimens of their Sculpture.*—*Kipparee, or Method of painting Cloth.*—*Mats.*—*Fiſhing Hooks.*—*Cordage.*—*Salt Pans.*—*Warlike Inſtruments.* 124

CHAP. VIII.

General Account of the Sandwich Iſlands continued.—*Government.*—*People divided into three Claſſes.*—*Power of Eree-taboo.*—*Genealogy of the Kings of Owhyhee and Mowee.*—*Power of the Chiefs.*—*State of the inferior Claſs.*—*Puniſhment of Crimes.*—*Religion.*—*Society of Prieſts.*—*The Orono.*—*Their Idols.*—*Songs chanted by the Chiefs, before they drink Ava.*—*Human Sacrifices.*—*Cuſtom of knocking out the Fore-teeth.*—*Notions with regard to a future State.*—*Marriages.*—*Remarkable Inſtance of Jealouſy.*—*Funeral Rites.* 153

BOOK

CONTENTS.

BOOK VI.

TRANSACTIONS DURING THE SECOND EXPEDITION TO THE NORTH, BY THE WAY OF KAMTSCHATKA; AND ON THE RETURN HOME, BY THE WAY OF CANTON, AND THE CAPE OF GOOD HOPE.

CHAP. I.

Departure from Oneeheow.—Fruitleſs Attempt to diſcover Modoopapappa.—Courſe ſteered for Awatſka Bay.—Occurrences during that Paſſage.—Sudden Change from Heat to Cold.—Diſtreſs occaſioned by the leaking of the Reſolution.—View of the Coaſt of Kamtſchatka.—Extreme Rigour of the Climate.—Loſe Sight of the Diſcovery.—The Reſolution enters the Bay of Awatſka.—Proſpect of the Town of Saint Peter and Saint Paul.—Party ſent aſhore.—Their Reception by the Commanding Officer of the Port.—Meſſage diſpatched to the Commander at Bolcheretſk.—Arrival of the Diſcovery.—Return of the Meſſengers, from the Commander.—Extraordinary Mode of travelling.—Viſit from a Merchant, and a German Servant belonging to the Commander. 171

CHAP. II.

Scarcity of Proviſions and Stores at the Harbour of Saint Peter and Saint Paul.—A Party ſet out to viſit the Commander at Bolcheretſk.—Paſſage up the river Awatſka.

ſka.—Account of their Reception by the Toion of Karatchin.—Deſcription of a Kamtſchadale Dreſs.—Journey on Sledges.—Deſcription of this Mode of Travelling.—Arrival at Natcheekin.—Account of hot Springs.—Embark on the Bolchoireka.—Reception at the Capital.—Generous and hoſpitable Conduct of the Commander and the Garriſon.—Deſcription of Bolcheretſk.—Preſents from the Commander.—Ruſſian and Kamtſchadale Dancing.—Affecting Departure from Bolcheretſk.—Return to Saint Peter and Saint Paul's, accompanied by Major Behm, who viſits the Ships.—Generoſity of the Sailors.—Diſpatches ſent by Major Behm to Peterſburg.—His Departure and Character. 196

CHAP. III.

Continuation of Tranſactions in the Harbour of St. Peter and St. Paul.—Abundance of Fiſh.—Death of a Seaman belonging to the Reſolution.—The Ruſſian Hoſpital put under the Care of the Ship's Surgeons.—Supply of Flour and Cattle.—Celebration of the King's Birth-day.—Difficulties in ſailing out of the Bay.—Eruption of a Volcano.—Steer to the Northward.—Cheepoonſkoi Noſs.—Errors of the Ruſſian Charts.—Kamtſchatſkoi Noſs.—Olutorſkoi Noſs.—Tſchukotſkoi Noſs.—Iſland of St. Laurence.—View, from the ſame Point, of the Coaſts of Aſia and America, and the Iſlands of St. Diomede.—Various Attempts to get to the North, between the two Continents.—Obſtructed by impenetrable Ice.—Sea-horſes and white Bears killed.—Captain Clerke's Determination, and future Deſigns. 228

CHAP.

CONTENTS.

CHAP. IV.

Fruitleſs Attempts to penetrate through the Ice to the North Weſt.—Dangerous Situation of the Diſcovery.—Sea-horſes killed.—Freſh Obſtructions from the Ice.—Report of Damages received by the Diſcovery.—Captain Clerke's Determination to proceed to the Southward.—Joy of the Ships Crews on that Occaſion.—Paſs Serdze Kamen.—Return through Beering's Strait.—Inquiry into the Extent of the North Eaſt Coaſt of Aſia.—Reaſons for rejecting Muller's Map of the Promontory of the Tſchutſki.—Reaſons for believing the Coaſt does not reach a higher Latitude than 70° ½ *North.—General Obſervations on the Impracticability of a North Eaſt, or North Weſt Paſſage from the Atlantic into the Pacific Ocean.—Comparative View of the Progreſs made in the Years* 1778 *and* 1779.*—Remarks on the Sea, and Sea-coaſts, North of Beering's Strait.—Hiſtory of the Voyage reſumed.—Paſs the Iſland of St. Laurence.—The Iſland of Mednoi.—Death of Captain Clerke.—Short Account of his Services.* 255

CHAP. V.

Return to the Harbour of Saint Peter and Saint Paul.—Promotion of Officers.—Funeral of Captain Clerke.—Damages of the Diſcovery repaired.—Various other Occupations of the Ships Crews.—Letters from the Commander.—Supply of Flour and Naval Stores from a Ruſſian Galliot.—Account of an Exile.—Bear-hunting and Fiſhing Parties.—Diſgrace of the Serjeant.—Celebration of the King's Coronation

nation Day, and Viſit from the Commander.—The Serjeant reinſtated.—A Ruſſian Soldier promoted at our Requeſt.—Remarks on the Diſcipline of the Ruſſian Army.—Church at Paratounca.—Method of Bear-hunting.—Farther Account of the Bears and Kamtſchadales.—Inſcription to the Memory of Captain Clerke.—Supply of Cattle.—Entertainments on the Empreſs's Name Day.—Preſent from the Commander.—Attempt of a Marine to deſert.—Work out of the Bay.—Nautical and Geographical Deſcription of Awatſka Bay.—Aſtronomical Tables, and Obſervations. 282

CHAP. VI.

General Account of Kamtſchatka.—Geographical Deſcription.—Rivers.—Soil.—Climate.—Volcanos.—Hot Springs.—Productions.—Vegetables.—Animals.—Birds.—Fiſh. 324

CHAP. VII.

General Account of Kamtſchatka continued.—Of the Inhabitants.—Origin of the Kamtſchadales.—Diſcovered by the Ruſſians.—Abſtract of their Hiſtory.—Numbers.—Preſent State.—Of the Ruſſian Commerce in Kamtſchatka.—Of the Kamtſchadale Habitations and Dreſs.—Of the Kurile Iſlands.—The Koreki.—The Tſchutſki. 358

CHAP. VIII.

Plan of our future Proceedings.—Courſe to the Southward, along the Coaſt of Kamtſchatka.—Cape Lopatka.—Paſs the Iſlands Shoomſka and Paramouſir.—Driven to the Eaſtward of the Kuriles.—Singular Situation with reſpect to the pretended

pretended Diſcoveries of former Navigators.—Fruitleſs Attempts to reach the Iſlands North of Japan.—Geographical Concluſions.—View of the Coaſt of Japan.—Run along the Eaſt Side.—Paſs two Japaneſe Veſſels.—Driven off the Coaſt by contrary Winds.—Extraordinary Effect of Currents.—Steer for the Baſhees.—Paſs large Quantities of Pumice Stone.—Diſcover Sulphur Iſland.—Paſs the Pratas.—Iſles of Lema, and Ladrone Iſland.—Chineſe Pilot taken on board the Reſolution.—Journals of the Officers and Men ſecured. 382

CHAP. IX.

Working up to Macao.—A Chineſe Comprador.—Sent on Shore to viſit the Portugueſe Governor.—Effects of the Intelligence we received from Europe.—Anchor in the Typa.—Paſſage up to Canton.—Bocca Tygris.—Wampû.—Deſcription of a Sampane.—Reception at the Engliſh Factory.—Inſtance of the ſuſpicious Character of the Chineſe.—Of their Mode of trading.—Of the City of Canton.—Its Size.—Population.—Number of Sampanes.—Military Force.—Of the Streets and Houſes.—Viſit to a Chineſe.—Return to Macao.—Great Demand for the Sea-otter Skins.—Plan of a Voyage for opening a Fur Trade on the Weſtern Coaſt of America, and proſecuting further Diſcoveries in the Neighbourhood of Japan.—Departure from Macao.—Price of Proviſions in China. 417

CHAP. X.

Leave the Typa.—Orders of the Court of France reſpecting Captain Cook.—Reſolutions in conſequence thereof.—Strike

Soundings on the Macclesfield Banks.—Paſs Pulo Sapata.—Steer for Pulo Condore.—Anchor at Pulo Condore.—Tranſactions during our Stay.—Journey to the principal Town.—Receive a Viſit from a Mandarin.—Examine his Letters.—Refreſhments to be procured.—Deſcription, and preſent State of the Iſland.—Its Produce.—An Aſſertion of M. Sonnerat refuted.—Aſtronomical and Nautical Obſervations. 445

CHAP. XI.

Departure from Pulo Condore.—Paſs the Straits of Banca.—View of the Iſland of Sumatra.—Straits of Sunda.—Occurrences there.—Deſcription of the Iſland of Cracatoa.——Prince's Iſland.—Effects of the Climate of Java.—Run to the Cape of Good Hope.—Tranſactions there.—Deſcription of Falſe Bay.—Paſſage to the Orkneys.—General Reflections. 463

APPENDIX.

CONTENTS.

APPENDIX.

N°

I. *Tables of the Route of the Reſolution and Diſcovery, the Variation of the Compaſs, and Meteorological Obſervations, during the Voyage.* 491

II. *A comparative Table of Numerals, exhibiting the Affinity and Extent of Language, which is found to prevail in all the Iſlands of the Eaſtern Sea, and derived from that ſpoken on the Continent of Aſia, in the Country of the Malayes.* fronting 528

III. *Vocabulary of the Languages of the Friendly Iſlands.* 529

IV. *Vocabulary of the Language of Nootka, or King George's Sound.* 540

V. *Vocabulary of the Language of Atooi, one of the Sandwich Iſlands.* 547

VI. *Table to ſhew the Affinity between the Languages ſpoken at Oonalaſhka and Norton Sound, and thoſe of the Greenlanders and Eſquimaux.* 552

VII. *Table of the Variations of the Compaſs, obſerved by Captain Cook during his Paſſage from England to the Cape of Good Hope.* See Vol. I. p. 49. 554

200° 45′ 15′ 30′ 45′ 201° 15′ 30′ 45′ 202° 15′

22° 45′ 30′ 15′ 21° 45′ 30′ 15′ 20° 45′ 30′ 15′ 19°

Feb.y 24th 1778.

ATOOI

Feb.y 28th 1779.

Orcehoua

ONEEHEOW

Hymoa Bay

March 15th 1779.

Tahoora

Feb.y 27th 1779.

WOAHOO

Jan.y 18th 1778.

KAKOOA

KOWROWA

N.B. The dotted Line shews the Extent of the foul-ground

Scale of ONE Nautic Mile.

SKETCH
of
KARAKAKOOA BAY.
Lat.19°.28′.N. Lon.204°.0′.E.
Var.n 8°.0′.E. 1779.

CHART
of the
SANDWICH ISLANDS.

MOROTOI

RANAI

Owhyrookoo

MOWEE

Whamadoa

Morokinne

TAHOOROWA

made the land Nov.r 26th 1778.

Dec.r 1st 1778

Dec.r 16th.

Dec.r 25th

Feb.y 26th.

Feb.y 25th.

Feb.y 24th.

Feb.y 6th.

Feb.y 23d.

Jan.y 16th.

Jan.y 3d 1779

160 no ground

no ground 160

160 no ground

OWHYHEE

Karakakooa Bay

Mowna Roa

Mowna Kaah

East Longitude from Greenwich

A

VOYAGE

TO THE

PACIFIC OCEAN.

BOOK V.

CAPTAIN KING'S JOURNAL OF THE TRANSACTIONS ON RETURNING TO THE SANDWICH ISLANDS.

CHAP. I.

Deſcription of Karakakooa Bay.—Vaſt Concourſe of the Natives.—Power of the Chiefs over the inferior People.—Viſit from Koah, a Prieſt and Warrior.—The Morai at Kakooa deſcribed.—Ceremonies at the Landing of Captain Cook.—Obſervatories erected.—Powerful Operation of the Taboo.—Method of ſalting Pork in tropical Climates.—Society of Prieſts diſcovered.—Their Hoſpitality and Munificence.—Reception of Captain Cook.—Artifice of Koah.—Arrival of Terreeoboo, King of the Iſland.—Singular Ceremony.—Viſit from the King.—Returned by Captain Cook.

KARAKAKOOA Bay is ſituated on the Weſt ſide of the iſland of Owhyhee, in a diſtrict called Akona. It is about a mile in depth, and bounded by two low points of land, at the diſtance of half a league, and bearing South South Eaſt and North North Weſt from each other. 1779. January. Sunday 17.

1779. January. On the North point, which is flat and barren, ſtands the village of Kowrowa; and in the bottom of the bay, near a grove of tall cocoa-nut trees, there is another village of a more conſiderable ſize, called Kakooa: between them runs a high rocky cliff, inacceſſible from the ſea ſhore. On the South ſide, the coaſt, for about a mile inland, has a rugged appearance; beyond which the country riſes with a gradual aſcent, and is overſpread with cultivated incloſures and groves of cocoa-nut trees, where the habitations of the natives are ſcattered in great numbers. The ſhore, all round the bay, is covered with a black coral rock, which makes the landing very dangerous in rough weather; except at the village of Kakooa, where there is a fine ſandy beach, with a *Morai*, or burying-place, at one extremity, and a ſmall well of freſh water, at the other. This bay appearing to Captain Cook a proper place to refit the ſhips, and lay in an additional ſupply of water and proviſions, we moored on the North ſide, about a quarter of a mile from the ſhore, Kowrowa bearing Weſt North Weſt.

As ſoon as the inhabitants perceived our intention of anchoring in the bay, they came off from the ſhore in aſtoniſhing numbers, and expreſſed their joy by ſinging and ſhouting, and exhibiting a variety of wild and extravagant geſtures. The ſides, the decks, and rigging of both ſhips were ſoon completely covered with them; and a multitude of women and boys, who had not been able to get canoes, came ſwimming round us in ſhoals; many of whom not finding room on board, remained the whole day playing in the water.

Among the chiefs who came on board the Reſolution, was a young man, called Pareea, whom we ſoon perceived to be a perſon of great authority. On preſenting himſelf to Captain

Captain Cook, he told him, that he was *Jakanee* * to the king of the iſland, who was at that time engaged on a military expedition at Mowee, and was expected to return within three or four days. A few preſents from Captain Cook attached him entirely to our intereſts, and he became exceedingly uſeful to us in the management of his countrymen, as we had ſoon occaſion to experience. For we had not been long at anchor, when it was obſerved that the Diſcovery had ſuch a number of people hanging on one ſide, as occaſioned her to heel conſiderably; and that the men were unable to keep off the crowds which continued preſſing into her. Captain Cook, being apprehenſive that ſhe might ſuffer ſome injury, pointed out the danger to Pareea, who immediately went to their aſſiſtance, cleared the ſhip of its incumbrances, and drove away the canoes that ſurrounded her. 1779. January.

The authority of the chiefs over the inferior people appeared from this incident to be of the moſt deſpotic kind. A ſimilar inſtance of it happened the ſame day on board the Reſolution; where the crowd being ſo great, as to impede the neceſſary buſineſs of the ſhip, we were obliged to have recourſe to the aſſiſtance of Kaneena, another of their chiefs, who had likewiſe attached himſelf to Captain Cook. The inconvenience we laboured under being made known, he immediately ordered his countrymen to quit the veſſel; and we were not a little ſurprized to ſee them jump overboard, without a moment's heſitation; all except one man, who loitering behind, and ſhewing ſome unwillingneſs to obey,

* We afterward met with ſeveral others of the ſame denomination; but whether it be an office, or ſome degree of affinity, we could never learn with certainty.

1779. January. Kaneena took him up in his arms, and threw him into the ſea.

Both theſe chiefs were men of ſtrong and well-proportioned bodies, and of countenances remarkably pleaſing. Kaneena eſpecially, whoſe portrait Mr. Webber has drawn, was one of the fineſt men I ever ſaw. He was about ſix feet high, had regular and expreſſive features, with lively, dark eyes; his carriage was eaſy, firm, and graceful.

It has been already mentioned, that during our long cruiſe off this iſland, the inhabitants had always behaved with great fairneſs and honeſty in their dealings, and had not ſhewn the ſlighteſt propenſity to theft; which appeared to us the more extraordinary, becauſe thoſe with whom we had hitherto held any intercourſe, were of the loweſt rank, either ſervants or fiſhermen. We now found the caſe exceedingly altered. The immenſe crowd of iſlanders, which blocked up every part of the ſhips, not only afforded frequent opportunity of pilfering without riſk of diſcovery, but our inferiority in number held forth a proſpect of eſcaping with impunity in caſe of detection. Another circumſtance, to which we attributed this alteration in their behaviour, was the preſence and encouragement of their chiefs; for, generally tracing the booty into the poſſeſſion of ſome men of conſequence, we had the ſtrongeſt reaſon to ſuſpect that theſe depredations were committed at their inſtigation.

Soon after the Reſolution had got into her ſtation, our two friends, Pareea and Kaneena, brought on board a third chief, named Koah, who, we were told, was a prieſt, and had been, in his youth, a diſtinguiſhed warrior. He was a little old man, of an emaciated figure; his eyes exceedingly

ingly ſore and red, and his body covered with a white leprous ſcurf, the effects of an immoderate uſe of the *ava*. Being led into the cabin, he approached Captain Cook with great veneration, and threw over his ſhoulders a piece of red cloth, which he had brought along with him. Then ſtepping a few paces back, he made an offering of a ſmall pig, which he held in his hand, whilſt he pronounced a diſcourſe that laſted for a conſiderable time. This ceremony was frequently repeated during our ſtay at Owhyhee, and appeared to us, from many circumſtances, to be a ſort of religious adoration. Their idols we found always arrayed with red cloth, in the ſame manner as was done to Captain Cook; and a ſmall pig was their uſual offering to the *Eatooas*. Their ſpeeches, or prayers, were uttered too with a readineſs and volubility that indicated them to be according to ſome formulary. 1779. January.

When this ceremony was over, Koah dined with Captain Cook, eating plentifully of what was ſet before him; but, like the reſt of the inhabitants of the iſlands in theſe Seas, could ſcarcely be prevailed on to taſte a ſecond time our wine or ſpirits. In the evening, Captain Cook, attended by Mr. Bayly and myſelf, acompanied him on ſhore. We landed at the beach, and were received by four men, who carried wands tipt with dog's hair, and marched before us, pronouncing with a loud voice a ſhort ſentence, in which we could only diſtinguiſh the word *Orono* *. The crowd, which had been collected on the ſhore, retired at our ap-

* Captain Cook generally went by this name amongſt the natives of Owhyhee; but we could never learn its preciſe meaning. Sometimes they applied it to an inviſible being, who, they ſaid, lived in the heavens. We alſo found that it was a title belonging to a perſonage of great rank and power in the iſland, who reſembles pretty much the Delai Lama of the Tartars, and the eccleſiaſtical emperor of Japan.

proach;

1779. January.

proach; and not a perſon was to be ſeen, except a few lying proſtrate on the ground, near the huts of the adjoining village.

Before I proceed to relate the adoration that was paid to Captain Cook, and the peculiar ceremonies with which he was received on this fatal iſland, it will be neceſſary to deſcribe the *Morai*, ſituated, as I have already mentioned, at the South ſide of the beach at *Kakooa*. It was a ſquare ſolid pile of ſtones, about forty yards long, twenty broad, and fourteen in height. The top was flat, and well paved, and ſurrounded by a wooden rail, on which were fixed the ſculls of the captives, ſacrificed on the death of their chiefs. In the centre of the area, ſtood a ruinous old building of wood, connected with the rail, on each ſide, by a ſtone wall, which divided the whole ſpace into two parts. On the ſide next the country, were five poles, upward of twenty feet high, ſupporting an irregular kind of ſcaffold; on the oppoſite ſide, toward the ſea, ſtood two ſmall houſes, with a covered communication.

We were conducted by Koah to the top of this pile by an eaſy aſcent, leading from the beach to the North Weſt corner of the area. At the entrance, we ſaw two large wooden images, with features violently diſtorted, and a long piece of carved wood, of a conical form inverted, riſing from the top of their heads; the reſt was without form, and wrapped round with red cloth. We were here met by a tall young man with a long beard, who preſented Captain Cook to the images, and after chanting a kind of hymn, in which he was joined by Koah, they led us to that end of the *Morai*, where the five poles were fixed. At the foot of them were twelve images ranged in a ſemicircular form, and before the middle figure ſtood a high

ſtand

ſtand or table, exactly reſembling the *Whatta* * of Otaheite, on which lay a putrid hog, and under it pieces of ſugar-cane, cocoa-nuts, bread-fruit, plantains, and ſweet potatoes. Koah having placed the Captain under this ſtand, took down the hog, and held it toward him; and after having a ſecond time addreſſed him in a long ſpeech, pronounced with much vehemence and rapidity, he let it fall on the ground, and led him to the ſcaffolding, which they began to climb together, not without great riſk of falling. At this time we ſaw, coming in ſolemn proceſſion, at the entrance of the top of the *Morai*, ten men carrying a live hog, and a large piece of red cloth. Being advanced a few paces, they ſtopped, and proſtrated themſelves; and Kaireekeea, the young man above-mentioned, went to them, and receiving the cloth, carried it to Koah, who wrapped it round the Captain, and afterward offered him the hog, which was brought by Kaireekeea with the ſame ceremony. 1779. January.

Whilſt Captain Cook was aloft, in this aukward ſituation, ſwathed round with red cloth, and with difficulty keeping his hold amongſt the pieces of rotten ſcaffolding, Kaireekeea and Koah began their office, chanting ſometimes in concert, and ſometimes alternately. This laſted a conſiderable time; at length Koah let the hog drop, when he and the Captain deſcended together. He then led him to the images before mentioned, and having ſaid ſomething to each in a ſneering tone, ſnapping his fingers at them as he paſſed, he brought him to that in the centre, which, from its being covered with red cloth, appeared to be in greater eſtimation than the reſt. Before this figure he proſtrated himſelf, and kiſſed it, deſiring Captain Cook to do the ſame; who

* See Captain Cook's former Voyage.

ſuffered

1779. January.

ſuffered himſelf to be directed by Koah throughout the whole of this ceremony.

We were now led back into the other diviſion of the *Morai*, where there was a ſpace, ten or twelve feet ſquare, ſunk about three feet below the level of the area. Into this we deſcended, and Captain Cook was ſeated between two wooden idols, Koah ſupporting one of his arms, whilſt I was deſired to ſupport the other. At this time, arrived a ſecond proceſſion of natives, carrying a baked hog, and a pudding, ſome bread-fruit, cocoa-nuts, and other vegetables. When they approached us, Kaireekeea put himſelf at their head, and preſenting the pig to Captain Cook in the uſual manner, began the ſame kind of chant as before, his companions making regular reſponſes. We obſerved, that after every reſponſe, their parts became gradually ſhorter, till, toward the cloſe, Kaireekeea's conſiſted of only two or three words, which the reſt anſwered by the word *Orono*.

When this offering was concluded, which laſted a quarter of an hour, the natives ſat down fronting us, and began to cut up the baked hog, to peel the vegetables, and break the cocoa-nuts; whilſt others employed themſelves in brewing the *ava*; which is done by chewing it, in the ſame manner as at the Friendly Iſlands. Kaireekeea then took part of the kernel of a cocoa-nut, which he chewed, and wrapping it in a piece of cloth, rubbed with it the Captain's face, head, hands, arms, and ſhoulders. The *ava* was then handed round, and after we had taſted it, Koah and Pareea began to pull the fleſh of the hog in pieces, and to put it into our mouths. I had no great objection to being fed by Pareea, who was very cleanly in his perſon; but Captain Cook, who was ſerved by Koah, recollecting the putrid

putrid hog, could not ſwallow a morſel; and his reluctance, as may be ſuppoſed, was not diminiſhed, when the old man, according to his own mode of civility, had chewed it for him. 1779. January.

When this laſt ceremony was finiſhed, which Captain Cook put an end to as ſoon as he decently could, we quitted the *Morai*, after diſtributing amongſt the people ſome pieces of iron and other trifles, with which they ſeemed highly gratified. The men with wands conducted us to the boats, repeating the ſame words as before. The people again retired, and the few that remained, proſtrated themſelves as we paſſed along the ſhore. We immediately went on board, our minds full of what we had ſeen, and extremely well ſatisfied with the good diſpoſition of our new friends. The meaning of the various ceremonies, with which we had been received, and which, on account of their novelty and ſingularity, have been related at length, can only be the ſubject of conjectures, and thoſe uncertain and partial: they were, however, without doubt, expreſſive of high reſpect on the part of the natives; and, as far as related to the perſon of Captain Cook, they ſeemed approaching to adoration.

The next morning, I went on ſhore with a guard of eight marines, including the corporal and lieutenant, having orders to erect the obſervatory in ſuch a ſituation as might beſt enable me to ſuperintend and protect the waterers, and the other working parties that were to be on ſhore. As we were viewing a ſpot conveniently ſituated for this purpoſe, in the middle of the village, Pareea, who was always ready to ſhew both his power and his good-will, offered to pull down ſome houſes that would have obſtructed our obſervations. However, we thought it proper to decline this Monday 18.

1779. January. offer, and fixed on a field of ſweet potatoes adjoining to the *Morai*, which was readily granted us; and the prieſts, to prevent the intruſion of the natives, immediately conſecrated the place, by fixing their wands round the wall by which it was incloſed.

This ſort of religious interdiction they call *taboo*; a word we heard often repeated, during our ſtay amongſt theſe iſlanders, and found to be of very powerful and extenſive operation. A more particular explanation of it will be given in the general account of theſe iſlands, under the article of religion; at preſent it is only neceſſary to obſerve, that it procured us even more privacy than we deſired. No canoes ever preſumed to land near us; the natives ſat on the wall, but none offered to come within the *tabooed* ſpace, till he had obtained our permiſſion. But though the men, at our requeſt, would come acroſs the field with proviſions, yet not all our endeavours could prevail on the women to approach us. Preſents were tried, but without effect; Pareea and Koah were tempted to bring them, but in vain; we were invariably anſwered, that the *Eatooa* and Terreeoboo (which was the name of their king) would kill them. This circumſtance afforded no ſmall matter of amuſement to our friends on board, where the crowds of people, and particularly of women, that continued to flock thither, obliged them almoſt every hour to clear the veſſel, in order to have room to do the neceſſary duties of the ſhip. On theſe occaſions, two or three hundred women were frequently made to jump into the water at once, where they continued ſwimming and playing about, till they could again procure admittance.

Tueſday 19. From the 19th to the 24th, when Pareea and Koah left us to attend Terreeoboo, who had landed on ſome other part

part of the iſland, nothing very material happened on board. The caulkers were ſet to work on the ſides of the ſhips, and the rigging was carefully overhauled and repaired. The ſalting of hogs for ſea-ſtore was alſo a conſtant, and one of the principal objects of Captain Cook's attention. As the ſucceſs we met with in this experiment, during our preſent voyage, was much more complete than it had been in any former attempt of the ſame kind, it may not be improper to give an account of the detail of the operation. 1779. January.

It has generally been thought impracticable to cure the fleſh of animals by ſalting, in tropical climates; the progreſs of putrefaction being ſo rapid, as not to allow time for the ſalt to take (as they expreſs it) before the meat gets a taint, which prevents the effect of the pickle. We do not find that experiments relative to this ſubject have been made by the navigators of any nation before Captain Cook. In his firſt trials, which were made in 1774, during his ſecond voyage to the Pacific Ocean, the ſucceſs he met with, though very imperfect, was yet ſufficient to convince him of the error of the received opinion. As the voyage, in which he was now engaged, was likely to be protracted a year beyond the time for which the ſhips had been victualled, he was under the neceſſity of providing, by ſome ſuch means, for the ſubſiſtence of the crews, or of relinquiſhing the further proſecution of his diſcoveries. He therefore loſt no opportunity of renewing his attempts, and the event anſwered his moſt ſanguine expectations.

The hogs, which we made uſe of for this purpoſe, were of various ſizes, weighing from four to twelve ſtone *. The time of ſlaughtering was always in the afternoon; and as

* 14 lb.

1779. January.

ſoon as the hair was ſcalded off, and the entrails removed, the hog was divided into pieces of four or eight pounds each, and the bones of the legs and chine taken out; and, in the larger ſort, the ribs alſo. Every piece then being carefully wiped and examined, and the veins cleared of the coagulated blood, they were handed to the ſalters, whilſt the fleſh remained ſtill warm. After they had been well rubbed with ſalt, they were placed in a heap, on a ſtage raiſed in the open air, covered with planks, and preſſed with the heavieſt weights we could lay on them. In this ſituation they remained till the next evening, when they were again well wiped and examined, and the ſuſpicious parts taken away. They were then put into a tub of ſtrong pickle, where they were always looked over once or twice a day, and if any piece had not taken the ſalt, which was readily diſcovered by the ſmell of the pickle, they were immediately taken out, re-examined, and the ſound pieces put to freſh pickle. This, however, after the precautions before uſed, ſeldom happened. After ſix days, they were taken out, examined for the laſt time, and being again ſlightly preſſed, they were packed in barrels, with a thin layer of ſalt between them. I brought home with me ſome barrels of this pork, which was pickled at Owhyhee in January 1779, and was taſted by ſeveral perſons in England about Chriſtmas 1780, and found perfectly ſound and wholeſome *.

I ſhall

* Since theſe papers were prepared for the preſs, I have been informed by Mr. Vancouver, who was one of my Midſhipmen in the Diſcovery, and was afterward appointed Lieutenant of the *Martin* ſloop of war, that he tried the method here recommended, both with Engliſh and Spaniſh pork, during a cruize on the Spaniſh Main, in the year 1782, and ſucceeded to the utmoſt of his expectations. He alſo made the experiment at Jamaica

I ſhall now return to our tranſactions on ſhore at the obſervatory, where we had not been long ſettled before we diſcovered, in our neighbourhood, the habitations of a ſociety of prieſts, whoſe regular attendance at the *Morai* had excited our curioſity. Their huts ſtood round a pond of water, and were ſurrounded by a grove of cocoa-nut trees, which ſeparated them from the beach and the reſt of the village, and gave the place an air of religious retirement. On my acquainting Captain Cook with theſe circumſtances, he reſolved to pay them a viſit; and, as he expected to be received in the ſame manner as before, he brought Mr. Webber with him to make a drawing of the ceremony *.

1779. January.

On his arrival at the beach, he was conducted to a ſacred building called *Harre-no-Orono*, or the houſe of *Orono*, and ſeated before the entrance, at the foot of a wooden idol, of the ſame kind with thoſe on the *Morai*. I was here again made to ſupport one of his arms; and, after wrapping him in red cloth, Kaireekeea, accompanied by twelve prieſts, made an offering of a pig with the uſual ſolemnities. The pig was then ſtrangled, and a fire being kindled, it was thrown into the embers, and after the hair was ſinged off, it was again preſented, with a repetition of the chanting,

maica with the beef ſerved by the victualling office to the ſhips, but not with the ſame ſucceſs, which he attributes to the want of the neceſſary precautions in killing and handling the beaſts; to their being hung up and opened before they had ſufficient time to bleed, by which means the blood-veſſels were expoſed to the air, and the blood condenſed before it had time to empty itſelf; and to their being hard driven and bruiſed. He adds, that having himſelf attended to the killing of an ox, which was carefully taken on board the *Martin*, he ſalted a part of it, which at the end of the week was found to have taken the ſalt completely, and he has no doubt would have kept for any length of time; but the experiment was not tried.

* See Plate, Numb. LX.

in

1779. January.

in the manner before deſcribed. The dead pig was then held for a ſhort time under the Captain's noſe; after which it was laid, with a cocoa-nut, at his feet, and the performers ſat down. The *ava* was then brewed, and handed round; a fat hog, ready dreſſed, was brought in; and we were fed as before.

During the reſt of the time we remained in the bay, whenever Captain Cook came on ſhore, he was attended by one of theſe prieſts, who went before him, giving notice that the *Orono* had landed, and ordering the people to proſtrate themſelves. The ſame perſon alſo conſtantly accompanied him on the water, ſtanding in the bow of the boat, with a wand in his hand, and giving notice of his approach to the natives, who were in canoes, on which they immediately left off paddling, and lay down on their faces till he had paſſed. Whenever he ſtopped at the obſervatory, Kaireekeea and his brethren immediately made their appearance with hogs, cocoa-nuts, bread-fruit, &c. and preſented them with the uſual ſolemnities. It was on theſe occaſions that ſome of the inferior chiefs frequently requeſted to be permitted to make an offering to the *Orono*. When this was granted, they preſented the hog themſelves, generally with evident marks of fear in their countenances; whilſt Kaireekeea and the prieſts chanted their accuſtomed hymns.

The civilities of this ſociety were not, however, confined to mere ceremony and parade. Our party on ſhore received from them, every day, a conſtant ſupply of hogs and vegetables, more than ſufficient for our ſubſiſtence; and ſeveral canoes loaded with proviſions were ſent to the ſhips with the ſame punctuality. No return was ever demanded, or even hinted at in the moſt diſtant manner. Their preſents were

were made with a regularity, more like the diſcharge of a religious duty, than the effect of mere liberality; and when we inquired at whoſe charge all this munificence was diſplayed, we were told, it was at the expence of a great man called Kaoo, the chief of the prieſts, and grandfather to Kaireekeea, who was at that time abſent attending the king of the iſland. 1779. January.

As every thing relating to the character and behaviour of this people muſt be intereſting to the reader, on account of the tragedy that was afterward acted here, it will be proper to acquaint him, that we had not always ſo much reaſon to be ſatisfied with the conduct of the warrior chiefs, or *Earees*, as with that of the prieſts. In all our dealings with the former, we found them ſufficiently attentive to their own intereſts; and beſides their habit of ſtealing, which may admit of ſome excuſe, from the univerſality of the practice amongſt the iſlanders of theſe ſeas, they made uſe of other artifices equally diſhonourable. I ſhall only mention one inſtance, in which we diſcovered, with regret, our friend Koah to be a party principally concerned. As the chiefs, who brought us preſents of hogs, were always ſent back handſomely rewarded, we had generally a greater ſupply than we could make uſe of. On theſe occaſions, Koah, who never failed in his attendance on us, uſed to beg ſuch as we did not want, and they were always given to him. It one day happened, that a pig was preſented us by a man whom Koah himſelf introduced as a chief, who was deſirous of paying his reſpects, and we recollected the pig to be the ſame that had been given to Koah juſt before. This leading us to ſuſpect ſome trick, we found, on further inquiry, the pretended chief to be an ordinary perſon; and on connecting this with other circumſtances, we had reaſon

to

1779. January. to ſuſpect, that it was not the firſt time we had been the dupes of the like impoſition.

Sunday 24. Things continued in this ſtate till the 24th, when we were a good deal ſurprized to find that no canoes were ſuffered to put off from the ſhore, and that the natives kept cloſe to their houſes. After ſeveral hours ſuſpence, we learned that the bay was *tabooed*, and all intercourſe with us interdicted, on account of the arrival of Terreeoboo. As we had not foreſeen an accident of this ſort, the crews of both ſhips were obliged to paſs the day without

Monday 25. their uſual ſupply of vegetables. The next morning, therefore, they endeavoured, both by threats and promiſes, to induce the natives to come along-ſide; and as ſome of them were at laſt venturing to put off, a chief was obſerved attempting to drive them away. A muſquet was immediately fired over his head, to make him deſiſt, which had the deſired effect, and refreſhments were ſoon after purchaſed as uſual. In the afternoon, Terreeoboo arrived, and viſited the ſhips in a private manner, attended only by one canoe, in which were his wife and children. He ſtaid on board till near ten o'clock, when he returned to the village of Kowrowa.

Tueſday 26. The next day, about noon, the king, in a large canoe, attended by two others, ſet out from the village, and paddled toward the ſhips in great ſtate. Their appearance was grand and magnificent. In the firſt canoe was Terreeoboo and his chiefs, dreſſed in their rich feathered cloaks and helmets, and armed with long ſpears and daggers; in the ſecond, came the venerable Kaoo, the chief of the prieſts, and his brethren, with their idols diſplayed on red cloth. Theſe idols were buſts of a gigantic ſize, made of wicker-work, and curiouſly covered with ſmall feathers of various

various colours, wrought in the ſame manner with their cloaks. Their eyes were made of large pearl oyſters, with a black nut fixed in the centre; their mouths were ſet with a double row of the fangs of dogs, and, together with the reſt of their features, were ſtrangely diſtorted. The third canoe was filled with hogs and various ſorts of vegetables. As they went along, the prieſts in the centre canoe ſung their hymns with great ſolemnity; and after paddling round the ſhips, inſtead of going on board, as was expected, they made toward the ſhore at the beach where we were ſtationed *.

1779. January.

As ſoon as I ſaw them approaching, I ordered out our little guard to receive the king; and Captain Cook, perceiving that he was going on ſhore, followed him, and arrived nearly at the ſame time. We conducted them into the tent, where they had ſcarcely been ſeated, when the king roſe up, and in a very graceful manner threw over the Captain's ſhoulders the cloak he himſelf wore, put a feathered helmet upon his head, and a curious fan into his hand. He alſo ſpread at his feet five or ſix other cloaks, all exceedingly beautiful, and of the greateſt value. His attendants then brought four very large hogs, with ſugar-canes, cocoa-nuts, and bread-fruit; and this part of the ceremony was concluded by the king's exchanging names with Captain Cook, which, amongſt all the iſlanders of the Pacific Ocean, is eſteemed the ſtrongeſt pledge of friendſhip. A proceſſion of prieſts, with a venerable old perſonage at their head, now appeared, followed by a long train of men leading large hogs, and others carrying plantains, ſweet potatoes, &c. By the looks and geſtures of Kaireekeea, I immediately

* This curious ceremony is repreſented in the annexed print. The preſents were made to Captain Cook after he went on ſhore.

1779. January.

knew the old man to be the chief of the prieſts before mentioned, on whoſe bounty we had ſo long ſubſiſted. He had a piece of red cloth in his hands, which he wrapped round Captain Cook's ſhoulders, and afterwards preſented him with a ſmall pig in the uſual form. A ſeat was then made for him, next to the king, after which, Kaireekeea and his followers began their ceremonies, Kaoo and the chiefs joining in the reſponſes.

I was ſurprized to ſee, in the perſon of this king, the ſame infirm and emaciated old man, that came on board the Reſolution when we were off the North Eaſt ſide of the iſland of Mowee; and we ſoon diſcovered amongſt his attendants moſt of the perſons who at that time had remained with us all night. Of this number were the two younger ſons of the king, the eldeſt of whom was ſixteen years of age, and his nephew Maiha-Maiha, whom at firſt we had ſome difficulty in recollecting, his hair being plaſtered over with a dirty brown paſte and powder, which was no mean heightening to the moſt ſavage face I ever beheld.

As ſoon as the formalities of the meeting were over, Captain Cook carried Terreeoboo, and as many chiefs as the pinnace could hold, on board the Reſolution. They were received with every mark of reſpect that could be ſhewn them; and Captain Cook, in return for the feathered cloak, put a linen ſhirt on the king, and girt his own hanger round him. The ancient Kaoo, and about half a dozen more old chiefs, remained on ſhore, and took up their abode at the prieſts houſes. During all this time, not a canoe was ſeen in the bay, and the natives either kept within their huts, or lay proſtrate on the ground. Before the king left the Reſolution, Captain Cook obtained leave for

for the natives to come and trade with the ſhips as uſual; but the women, for what reaſon we could not learn, ſtill continued under the effects of the *taboo*; that is, were forbidden to ſtir from home, or to have any communication with us. 1779. January.

CHAP. II.

Farther Account of Tranſactions with the Natives.—Their Hoſpitality.—Propenſity to Theft.—Deſcription of a Boxing Match.—Death of one of our Seamen.—Behaviour of the Prieſts at his Funeral.—The Wood Work and Images on the Morai purchaſed.—The Natives inquiſitive about our Departure.—Their Opinion about the Deſign of our Voyage.—Magnificent Preſents of Terreeoboo to Captain Cook.—The Ships leave the Iſland.—The Reſolution damaged in a Gale, and obliged to return.

1779. January. Tueſday 26. THE quiet and inoffenſive behaviour of the natives having taken away every apprehenſion of danger, we did not heſitate to truſt ourſelves amongſt them at all times, and in all ſituations. The officers of both ſhips went daily up the country, in ſmall parties, or even ſingly, and frequently remained out the whole night. It would be endleſs to recount all the inſtances of kindneſs and civility which we received upon thoſe occaſions. Wherever we went, the people flocked about us, eager to offer every aſſiſtance in their power, and highly gratified if their ſervices were accepted. Various little arts were practiſed to attract our notice, or to delay our departure. The boys and girls ran before, as we walked through their villages, and ſtopped us at every opening, where there was room to form a group for dancing. At one time, we were invited to accept a draught of cocoa-nut milk, or ſome other refreſhment, under

under the ſhade of their huts; at another, we were ſeated within a circle of young women, who exerted all their ſkill and agility to amuſe us with ſongs and dances. 1779. January.

The ſatisfaction we derived from their gentleneſs and hoſpitality, was, however, frequently interrupted by that propenſity to ſtealing, which they have in common with all the other iſlanders of theſe ſeas. This circumſtance was the more diſtreſſing, as it ſometimes obliged us to have recourſe to acts of ſeverity, which we ſhould willingly have avoided, if the neceſſity of the caſe had not abſolutely called for them. Some of their moſt expert ſwimmers were one day diſcovered under the ſhips, drawing out the filling nails of the ſheathing, which they performed very dexterouſly by means of a ſhort ſtick, with a flint ſtone fixed in the end of it. To put a ſtop to this practice, which endangered the very exiſtence of the veſſels, we at firſt fired ſmall ſhot at the offenders; but they eaſily got out of our reach by diving under the ſhip's bottom. It was therefore found neceſſary to make an example, by flogging one of them on board the Diſcovery.

About this time, a large party of gentlemen, from both ſhips, ſet out on an excurſion into the interior parts of the country, with a view of examining its natural productions. An account of this journey will be given in a ſubſequent part of our narrative. It is, therefore, only neceſſary at preſent to obſerve, that it afforded Kaoo a freſh opportunity of ſhewing his attention and generoſity. For as ſoon as he was informed of their departure, he ſent a large ſupply of proviſions after them, together with orders, that the inhabitants of the country through which they were to paſs, ſhould give them every aſſiſtance in their power. And, to complete the delicacy and diſintereſtedneſs of his conduct, even the people

1779. January. people he employed could not be prevailed on to accept the ſmalleſt preſent. After remaining out ſix days, our Officers returned, without having been able to penetrate above twenty miles into the iſland; partly from want of proper guides, and partly from the impracticability of the country.

Wedneſ. 27. The head of the Reſolution's rudder being found exceedingly ſhaken, and moſt of the pintles either looſe or broken, it was unhung, and ſent on ſhore, on the 27th in the morning, to undergo a thorough repair. At the ſame time the carpenters were ſent into the country, under conduct of ſome of Kaoo's people, to cut planks for the head rail work, which was alſo entirely decayed and rotten.

Thurſday 28. On the 28th, Captain Clerke, whoſe ill health confined him, for the moſt part, on board, paid Terreeoboo his firſt viſit, at his hut on ſhore. He was received with the ſame formalities as were obſerved with Captain Cook; and, on his coming away, though the viſit was quite unexpected, he received a preſent of thirty large hogs, and as much fruit and roots as his crew could conſume in a week.

As we had not yet ſeen any thing of their ſports or athletic exerciſes, the natives, at the requeſt of ſome of our Officers, entertained us this evening with a boxing-match. Though theſe games were much inferior, as well in point of ſolemnity and magnificence, as in the ſkill and powers of the combatants, to what we had ſeen exhibited at the Friendly Iſlands; yet, as they differed in ſome particulars, it may not be improper to give a ſhort account of them. We found a vaſt concourſe of people aſſembled on a level ſpot of ground, at a little diſtance from our tents. A long ſpace was left vacant in the midſt of them, at the upper end of which

1779. January.

which ſat the judges, under three ſtandards, from which hung ſlips of cloth of various colours, the ſkins of two wild geeſe, a few ſmall birds, and bunches of feathers. When the ſports were ready to begin, the ſignal was given by the judges, and immediately two combatants appeared. They came forward ſlowly, lifting up their feet very high behind, and drawing their hands along the ſoles. As they approached, they frequently eyed each other from head to foot, in a contemptuous manner, caſting ſeveral arch looks at the ſpectators, ſtraining their muſcles, and uſing a variety of affected geſtures. Being advanced within reach of each other, they ſtood with both arms held out ſtraight before their faces, at which part all their blows were aimed. They ſtruck, in what appeared to our eyes an awkward manner, with a full ſwing of the arm; made no attempt to parry, but eluded their adverſary's attack by an inclination of the body, or by retreating. The battle was quickly decided; for if either of them was knocked down, or even fell by accident, he was conſidered as vanquiſhed, and the victor expreſſed his triumph by a variety of geſtures, which uſually excited, as was intended, a loud laugh among the ſpectators. He then waited for a ſecond antagoniſt; and if again victorious, for a third, till he was, at laſt, in his turn, defeated. A ſingular rule obſerved in theſe combats is, that whilſt any two are preparing to fight, a third perſon may ſtep in, and chooſe either of them for his antagoniſt, when the other is obliged to withdraw. Sometimes three or four followed each other in this manner, before the match was ſettled. When the combat proved longer than uſual, or appeared too unequal, one of the chiefs generally ſtepped in, and ended it by putting a ſtick between the combatants. The ſame good-humour was preſerved through-

1779. January. throughout, which we before ſo much admired in the Friendly Iſlanders. As theſe games were given at our deſire, we found it was univerſally expected, that we ſhould have borne our part in them; but our people, though much preſſed by the natives, turned a deaf ear to their challenge, remembering full well the blows they got at the Friendly Iſlands.

This day died William Watman, a ſeaman of the gunner's crew; an event which I mention the more particularly, as death had hitherto been very rare amongſt us. He was an old man, and much reſpected on account of his attachment to Captain Cook. He had formerly ſerved as a marine twenty-one years; after which he entered as a ſeaman on board the Reſolution in 1772, and ſerved with Captain Cook in his voyage toward the South Pole. At their return, he was admitted into Greenwich hoſpital, through the Captain's intereſt, at the ſame time with himſelf; and being reſolved to follow throughout the fortunes of his benefactor, he alſo quitted it along with him, on his being appointed to the command of the preſent expedition. During the voyage, he had frequently been ſubject to ſlight fevers, and was a convaleſcent when we came into the bay, where being ſent on ſhore for a few days, he conceived himſelf perfectly recovered, and, at his own deſire, returned on board; but the day following, he had a paralytic ſtroke, which in two days more carried him off.

At the requeſt of the king of the iſland, he was buried on the *Morai*, and the ceremony was performed with as much ſolemnity as our ſituation permitted. Old Kaoo and his brethren were ſpectators, and preſerved the moſt profound ſilence and attention, whilſt the ſervice was reading.

When

When we began to fill up the grave, they approached it with great reverence, threw in a dead pig, ſome cocoa-nuts, and plantains; and, for three nights afterward, they ſurrounded it, ſacrificing hogs, and performing their uſual ceremonies of hymns and prayers, which continued till day-break. 1779. February.

At the head of the grave, we erected a poſt, and nailed upon it a ſquare piece of board, on which was inſcribed the name of the deceaſed, his age, and the day of his death. This they promiſed not to remove; and we have no doubt, but that it will be ſuffered to remain, as long as the frail materials, of which it is made, will permit.

The ſhips being in great want of fuel, the Captain deſired me, on the 2d of February, to treat with the prieſts, for the purchaſe of the rail, that ſurrounded the top of the *Morai*. I muſt confeſs, I had, at firſt, ſome doubt about the decency of this propoſal, and was apprehenſive, that even the bare mention of it might be conſidered, by them, as a piece of ſhocking impiety. In this, however, I found myſelf miſtaken. Not the ſmalleſt ſurprize was expreſſed at the application, and the wood was readily given, even without ſtipulating for any thing in return. Whilſt the ſailors were taking it away, I obſerved one of them carrying off a carved image; and, on further inquiry, I found, that they had conveyed to the boats the whole * ſemicircle. Though this was done in the preſence of the natives, who had not ſhewn any mark of reſentment at it, but had even aſſiſted them in the removal, I thought it proper to ſpeak to Kaoo, on the ſubject; who appeared very indifferent about the matter, and only deſired, that we would reſtore the centre Tueſday 2.

* See deſcription of the *Morai*, in the preceding Chapter.

1779. February.

image, I have mentioned before, which he carried into one of the prieſt's houſes.

Terreeoboo, and his Chiefs, had for ſome days paſt, been very inquiſitive about the time of our departure. This circumſtance had excited in me a great curioſity to know, what opinion this people had formed of us, and what were their ideas reſpecting the cauſe and objects of our voyage. I took ſome pains to ſatisfy myſelf on theſe points; but could never learn any thing farther, than that they imagined we came from ſome country where proviſions had failed; and that our viſit to them was merely for the purpoſe of filling our bellies. Indeed, the meagre appearance of ſome of our crew, the hearty appetites with which we ſat down to their freſh proviſions, and our great anxiety to purchaſe, and carry off, as much as we were able, led them, naturally enough, to ſuch a concluſion. To theſe may be added, a circumſtance which puzzled them exceedingly, our having no women with us; together with our quiet conduct, and unwarlike appearance. It was ridiculous enough to ſee them ſtroking the ſides, and patting the bellies of the ſailors (who were certainly much improved in the ſleekneſs of their looks, during our ſhort ſtay in the iſland), and telling them, partly by ſigns, and partly by words, that it was time for them to go; but if they would come again the next bread-fruit ſeaſon, they ſhould be better able to ſupply their wants. We had now been ſixteen days in the bay; and if our enormous conſumption of hogs and vegetables be conſidered, it need not be wondered, that they ſhould wiſh to ſee us take our leave. It is very probable, however, that Terreeoboo had no other view, in his inquiries, at preſent, than a deſire of making ſufficient preparation for diſmiſſing

us

us with preſents, ſuitable to the reſpect and kindneſs with which he had received us. For, on our telling him we ſhould leave the iſland on the next day but one, we obſerved, that a ſort of proclamation was immediately made, through the villages, to require the people to bring in their hogs, and vegetables, for the king to preſent to the *Orono*, on his departure. 1779. February.

We were this day much diverted, at the beach, by the buffooneries of one of the natives. He held in his hand an inſtrument, of the ſort deſcribed in the laſt volume *; ſome bits of ſea-weed were tied round his neck; and round each leg, a piece of ſtrong netting, about nine inches deep, on which a great number of dogs' teeth were looſely faſtened, in rows. His ſtyle of dancing was entirely burleſque, and accompanied with ſtrange grimaces, and pantomimical diſtortions of the face; which though at times inexpreſſibly ridiculous, yet, on the whole, was without much meaning, or expreſſion. Mr. Webber thought it worth his while to make a drawing of this perſon, as exhibiting a tolerable ſpecimen of the natives; the manner in which the *maro* is tied; the figure of the inſtrument before mentioned, and of the ornaments round the legs, which, at other times, we alſo ſaw uſed by their dancers.

In the evening, we were again entertained with wreſtling and boxing matches; and we diſplayed, in return, the few fireworks we had left. Nothing could be better calculated to excite the admiration of theſe iſlanders, and to impreſs them with an idea of our great ſuperiority, than an exhibition of this kind. Captain Cook has already deſcribed the extraordinary effects of that which was made at Hapaee; and though the preſent was, in every reſpect, infinitely

* See Vol. ii. p. 236.

1779. February. inferior, yet the aſtoniſhment of the natives was not leſs.

I have before mentioned, that the carpenters, from both ſhips, had been ſent up the country to cut planks, for the head-rail-work of the Reſolution. This was the third day ſince their departure; and having received no intelligence from them, we began to be very anxious for their ſafety. We were communicating our apprehenſions to old Kaoo, who appeared as much concerned as ourſelves, and were concerting meaſures with him, for ſending after them, when they arrived all ſafe. They had been obliged to go farther into the country than was expected, before they met with trees fit for their purpoſe; and it was this circumſtance, together with the badneſs of the roads, and the difficulty of bringing back the timber, which had detained them ſo long. They ſpoke in high terms of their guides, who both ſupplied them with proviſions, and guarded their tools with the utmoſt fidelity.

Wedneſ. 3. The next day, being fixed for our departure, Terreeoboo invited Captain Cook and myſelf to attend him, on the 3d, to the place where Kaoo reſided. On our arrival, we found the ground covered with parcels of cloth; a vaſt quantity of red and yellow feathers, tied to the fibres of cocoa-nut huſks; and a great number of hatchets, and other pieces of iron-ware, that had been got in barter from us. At a little diſtance from theſe, lay an immenſe quantity of vegetables, of every kind, and near them was a large herd of hogs. At firſt, we imagined the whole to be intended as a preſent for us, till Kaireekeea informed me, that it was a gift, or tribute, from the people of that diſtrict to the king; and, accordingly, as ſoon as we were ſeated, they brought all the bundles, and laid them ſeverally at Terreeoboo's feet; ſpreading

ing out the cloth, and diſplaying the feathers, and iron-ware, before him. The king ſeemed much pleaſed with this mark of their duty; and having ſelected about a third part of the iron-ware, the ſame proportion of feathers, and a few pieces of cloth, theſe were ſet aſide, by themſelves; and the remainder of the cloth, together with all the hogs and vegetables, were afterward preſented to Captain Cook, and myſelf. We were aſtoniſhed at the value and magnitude of this preſent, which far exceeded every thing of the kind we had ſeen, either at the Friendly or Society Iſlands. Boats were immediately ſent, to carry them on board; the large hogs were picked out, to be ſalted for ſea-ſtore; and upward of thirty ſmaller pigs, and the vegetables, were divided between the two crews. 1779. February.

The ſame day, we quitted the *Morai*, and got the tents and aſtronomical inſtruments on board. The charm of the *taboo* was now removed; and we had no ſooner left the place, than the natives ruſhed in, and ſearched eagerly about, in expectation of finding ſomething of value, that we might have left behind. As I happened to remain the laſt on ſhore, and waited for the return of the boat, ſeveral came crowding about me, and having made me ſit down by them, began to lament our ſeparation. It was, indeed, not without difficulty, I was able to quit them. And here, I hope I may be permitted to relate a trifling occurrence, in which I was principally concerned. Having had the command of the party on ſhore, during the whole time we were in the bay, I had an opportunity of becoming better acquainted with the natives, and of being better known to them, than thoſe whoſe duty required them to be generally on board. As I had every reaſon to be ſatisfied with their kindneſs, in general, ſo I cannot too often, nor too particularly,

1779. February. cularly, mention the unbounded and conſtant friendſhip of their prieſts.

On my part, I ſpared no endeavours to conciliate their affections, and gain their eſteem; and I had the good fortune to ſucceed ſo far, that, when the time of our departure was made known, I was ſtrongly ſolicited to remain behind, not without offers of the moſt flattering kind. When I excuſed myſelf, by ſaying, that Captain Cook would not give his conſent, they propoſed, that I ſhould retire into the mountains; where, they ſaid, they would conceal me, till after the departure of the ſhips; and on my farther aſſuring them, that the Captain would not leave the bay without me, Terreeoboo and Kaoo waited upon Captain Cook, whoſe ſon they ſuppoſed I was, with a formal requeſt, that I might be left behind. The Captain, to avoid giving a poſitive refuſal, to an offer ſo kindly intended, told them, that he could not part with me, at that time, but that he ſhould return to the iſland next year, and would then endeavour to ſettle the matter to their ſatisfaction.

Thurſday 4. Early in the morning of the 4th, we unmoored, and ſailed out of the bay, with the Diſcovery in company, and were followed by a great number of canoes. Captain Cook's deſign was to finiſh the ſurvey of Owhyhee, before he viſited the other iſlands, in hopes of meeting with a road better ſheltered, than the bay we had juſt left; and in caſe of not ſucceeding here, he purpoſed to take a view of the South Eaſt part of Mowee, where the natives informed us we ſhould find an excellent harbour.

Friday 5. We had calm weather all this and the following day, which made our progreſs to the Northward very ſlow. We were accompanied by a great number of the natives in their canoes; and Terreeoboo gave a freſh proof of his friendſhip

friendſhip to Captain Cook, by a large preſent of hogs, and vegetables, that was ſent after him. 1779. February.

In the night of the 5th, having a light breeze off the land, we made ſome way to the Northward; and in the morning of the 6th, having paſſed the Weſternmoſt point of the iſland, we found ourſelves abreaſt of a deep bay, called by the natives Toe-yah-yah. We had great hopes, that this bay would furniſh us with a ſafe and commodious harbour, as we ſaw, to the North Eaſt, ſeveral fine ſtreams of water; and the whole had the appearance of being well ſheltered. Theſe obſervations agreeing with the accounts given us by Koah, who accompanied Captain Cook, and had changed his name, out of compliment to us, into Britannee, the pinnace was hoiſted out, and the Maſter, with Britannee for his guide, was ſent to examine the bay, whilſt the ſhips worked up after them. Saturday 6.

In the afternoon, the weather became gloomy, and the guſts of wind, that blew off the land, were ſo violent, as to make it neceſſary to take in all the ſails, and bring to, under the mizen ſtay-ſail. All the canoes left us, at the beginning of the gale; and Mr. Bligh, on his return, had the ſatisfaction of ſaving an old woman, and two men, whoſe canoe had been overſet by the violence of the wind, as they were endeavouring to gain the ſhore. Beſides theſe diſtreſſed people, we had a great many women on board, whom the natives had left behind, in their hurry to ſhift for themſelves.

The Maſter reported to Captain Cook, that he had landed at the only village he ſaw, on the North ſide of the bay, where he was directed to ſome wells of water; but found, they would by no means anſwer our purpoſe; that he afterward proceeded farther into the bay, which runs inland to a great

1779. February. a great depth, and ſtretches toward the foot of a very conſpicuous high mountain, ſituated on the North Weſt end of the iſland; but that inſtead of meeting with ſafe anchorage, as Britannee had taught him to expect, he found the ſhores low and rocky, and a flat bed of coral rocks running along the coaſt, and extending upward of a mile from the land; on the outſide of which the depth of water was twenty fathoms, over a ſandy bottom; and that, in the mean time, Britannee had contrived to ſlip away, being afraid of returning, as we imagined, becauſe his information had not proved true.

In the evening, the weather being more moderate, we again made ſail; but about midnight it blew ſo violently, as to ſplit both the fore and main topſails. On the morning of Sunday 7. the 7th, we bent freſh ſails, and had fair weather, and a light breeze. At noon, the latitude, by obſervation, was 20° 1′ North, the Weſt point of the iſland bearing South, 7° Eaſt, and the North Weſt point North, 38° Eaſt. As we were, at this time, four or five leagues from the ſhore, and the weather very unſettled, none of the canoes would venture out, ſo that our gueſts were obliged to remain with us, much indeed to their diſſatisfaction; for they were all ſeaſick, and many of them had left young children behind them.

In the afternoon, though the weather was ſtill ſqually, we ſtood in for the land, and being about three leagues from it, we ſaw a canoe, with two men paddling toward us, which we immediately conjectured had been driven off the ſhore by the late boiſterous weather; and therefore ſtopped the ſhip's way, in order to take them in. Theſe poor wretches were ſo entirely exhauſted with fatigue, that had not one of the natives on board, obſerving their weakneſs, jumped

jumped into the canoe to their aſſiſtance, they would ſcarcely have been able to faſten it to the rope we had thrown out for that purpoſe. It was with difficulty we got them up the ſhip's ſide, together with a child, about four years old, which they had laſhed under the thwarts of the canoe, where it had lain with only its head above water. They told us, they had left the ſhore the morning before, and had been, from that time, without food or water. The uſual precautions were taken in giving them victuals, and the child being committed to the care of one of the women, we found them all next morning perfectly recovered. 1779. February.

At midnight, a gale of wind came on, which obliged us to double reef the topſails, and get down the top-gallant yards. On the 8th, at day-break, we found, that the foremaſt had again given way, the fiſhes, which were put on the head, in King George's or Nootka Sound, on the coaſt of America, being ſprung, and the parts ſo very defective, as to make it abſolutely neceſſary to replace them, and, of courſe, to unſtep the maſt. In this difficulty, Captain Cook was for ſome time in doubt, whether he ſhould run the chance of meeting with a harbour in the iſlands to leeward, or return to Karakakooa. That bay was not ſo remarkably commodious, in any reſpect, but that a better might probably be expected, both for the purpoſe of repairing the maſts, and for procuring refreſhments, of which, it was imagined, that the neighbourhood of Karakakooa had been already pretty well drained. On the other hand, it was conſidered as too great a riſk to leave a place, that was tolerably ſheltered, and which, once left, could not be regained, for the mere hopes of meeting with a better; the failure of which might perhaps have left us without reſource. Monday 8.

We therefore continued ſtanding on toward the land, in

1779. February. order to give the natives an opportunity of releaſing their friends on board from their confinement; and, at noon, being within a mile of the ſhore, a few canoes came off to us, but ſo crowded with people, that there was not room in them for any of our gueſts; we therefore hoiſted out the pinnace to carry them on ſhore; and the Maſter, who went with them, had directions to examine the South coaſts of the bay for water; but returned without finding any.

The winds being variable, and a current ſetting ſtrong to the Northward, we made but little progreſs in our return;
Tueſday 9. and at eight o'clock in the evening of the 9th, it began to blow very hard from the South Eaſt, which obliged us to
Wedneſ. 10. cloſe reef the topſails; and at two in the morning of the 10th, in a heavy ſquall, we found ourſelves cloſe in with the breakers, that lie to the Northward of the Weſt point of Owhyhee. We had juſt room to haul off, and avoid them, and fired ſeveral guns to apprize the Diſcovery of the danger.

In the forenoon, the weather was more moderate, and a few canoes came off to us, from which we learnt, that the late ſtorms had done much miſchief; and that ſeveral large canoes had been loſt. During the remainder of the day, we kept beating to windward; and, before night, we were within a mile of the bay; but not chooſing to run on, while
Thurſday 11. it was dark, we ſtood off and on till day-light next morning, when we dropt anchor nearly in the ſame place as before.

CHAP.

CHAP. III.

Suſpicious Behaviour of the Natives, on our Return to Karakakooa Bay.—Theft on board the Diſcovery, and its Conſequences.—The Pinnace attacked, and the Crew obliged to quit her.—Captain Cook's Obſervations on the Occaſion.—Attempt at the Obſervatory.—The Cutter of the Diſcovery ſtolen.—Meaſures taken by Captain Cook for its Recovery.—Goes on Shore, to invite the King on board.—The King being ſtopped by his Wife, and the Chiefs, a Conteſt ariſes.—News arrives of one of the Chiefs being killed, by one of our People.—Ferment on this Occaſion.—One of the Chiefs threatens Captain Cook, and is ſhot by him.—General Attack by the Natives.—Death of Captain Cook.—Account of the Captain's Services, and a Sketch of his Character.

1779. February. Thurſday 11. Friday 12.

WE were employed the whole of the 11th, and part of the 12th, in getting out the foremaſt, and ſending it, with the carpenters, on ſhore. Beſides the damage which the head of the maſt had ſuſtained, we found the heel exceedingly rotten, having a large hole up the middle of it, capable of holding four or five cocoa-nuts. It was not, however, thought neceſſary to ſhorten it; and fortunately, the logs of red toa-wood, which had been cut at Eimeo, for anchor-ſtocks, were found fit to replace the ſprung parts of the fiſhes. As theſe repairs were likely to

1779. February. take up ſeveral days, Mr. Bayly and myſelf got the aſtronomical apparatus on ſhore, and pitched our tents on the *Morai*; having with us a guard of a corporal and ſix marines. We renewed our friendly correſpondence with the prieſts, who, for the greater ſecurity of the workmen, and their tools, *tabooed* the place where the maſt lay, ſticking their wands round it, as before. The ſailmakers were alſo ſent on ſhore, to repair the damages which had taken place in their department, during the late gales. They were lodged in a houſe adjoining to the *Morai*, that was lent us by the prieſts. Such were our arrangements on ſhore. I ſhall now proceed to the account of thoſe other tranſactions with the natives, which led, by degrees, to the fatal cataſtrophe of the 14th.

Upon coming to anchor, we were ſurprized to find our reception very different from what it had been on our firſt arrival; no ſhouts, no buſtle, no confuſion; but a ſolitary bay, with only here and there a canoe ſtealing cloſe along the ſhore. The impulſe of curioſity, which had before operated to ſo great a degree, might now indeed be ſuppoſed to have ceaſed; but the hoſpitable treatment we had invariably met with, and the friendly footing on which we parted, gave us ſome reaſon to expect, that they would again have flocked about us with great joy, on our return.

We were forming various conjectures, upon the occaſion of this extraordinary appearance, when our anxiety was at length relieved by the return of a boat, which had been ſent on ſhore, and brought us word, that Terreeoboo was abſent, and had left the bay under the *taboo*. Though this account appeared very ſatisfactory to moſt of us; yet others were of opinion, or rather, perhaps, have been led, by ſubſequent events, to imagine that there was ſomething, at this

this time, very ſuſpicious in the behaviour of the natives; and that the interdiction of all intercourſe with us, on pretence of the king's abſence, was only to give him time to conſult with his Chiefs, in what manner it might be proper to treat us. Whether theſe ſuſpicions were well founded, or the account given by the natives was the truth, we were never able to aſcertain. For though it is not improbable, that our ſudden return, for which they could ſee no apparent cauſe, and the neceſſity of which we afterward found it very difficult to make them comprehend, might occaſion ſome alarm; yet the unſuſpicious conduct of Terreeoboo, who, on his ſuppoſed arrival, the next morning, came immediately to viſit Captain Cook, and the conſequent return of the natives to their former friendly intercourſe with us, are ſtrong proofs, that they neither meant, nor apprehended, any change of conduct. 1779. February.

In ſupport of this opinion, I may add the account of another accident, preciſely of the ſame kind, which happened to us on our firſt viſit, the day before the arrival of the king. A native had ſold a hog on board the Reſolution, and taken the price agreed on, when Pareea, paſſing by, adviſed the man not to part with the hog, without an advanced price. For this, he was ſharply ſpoken to, and puſhed away; and the *taboo* being ſoon after laid on the bay, we had at firſt no doubt, but that it was in conſequence of the offence given to the Chief. Both theſe accidents ſerve to ſhew, how very difficult it is to draw any certain concluſion from the actions of people, with whoſe cuſtoms, as well as language, we are ſo imperfectly acquainted; at the ſame time, ſome idea may be formed from them, of the difficulties, at the firſt view, perhaps, not very apparent, which thoſe have to encounter, who,

in

1779. February. in all their tranſactions with theſe ſtrangers, have to ſteer their courſe amidſt ſo much uncertainty, where a trifling error may be attended with even the moſt fatal conſequences. However true or falſe our conjectures may be, things went on in their uſual quiet courſe, till the afternoon of the 13th.

Saturday 13.

Toward the evening of that day, the officer who commanded the watering-party of the Diſcovery, came to inform me, that ſeveral Chiefs had aſſembled at the well near the beach, driving away the natives, whom he had hired to aſſiſt the ſailors in rolling down the caſks to the ſhore. He told me, at the ſame time, that he thought their behaviour extremely ſuſpicious, and that they meant to give him ſome farther diſturbance. At his requeſt, therefore, I ſent a marine along with him, but ſuffered him to take only his ſide-arms. In a ſhort time the officer returned, and on his acquainting me, that the iſlanders had armed themſelves with ſtones, and were grown very tumultuous, I went myſelf to the ſpot, attended by a marine, with his muſquet. Seeing us approach, they threw away their ſtones, and, on my ſpeaking to ſome of the Chiefs, the mob were driven away, and thoſe who choſe it, were ſuffered to aſſiſt in filling the caſks. Having left things quiet here, I went to meet Captain Cook, whom I ſaw coming on ſhore, in the pinnace. I related to him what had juſt paſſed; and he ordered me, in caſe of their beginning to throw ſtones, or behave inſolently, immediately to fire a ball at the offenders. I accordingly gave orders to the corporal, to have the pieces of the ſentinels loaded with ball, inſtead of ſmall ſhot.

Soon after our return to the tents, we were alarmed by a continued fire of muſquets, from the Diſcovery, which we obſerved

obſerved to be directed at a canoe, that we ſaw paddling toward the ſhore, in great haſte, purſued by one of our ſmall boats. We immediately concluded, that the firing was in conſequence of ſome theft, and Captain Cook ordered me to follow him with a marine armed, and to endeavour to ſeize the people as they came on ſhore. Accordingly we ran toward the place where we ſuppoſed the canoe would land, but were too late; the people having quitted it, and made their eſcape into the country before our arrival. 1779. February.

We were at this time ignorant, that the goods had been already reſtored; and as we thought it probable, from the circumſtances we had at firſt obſerved, that they might be of importance, were unwilling to relinquiſh our hopes of recovering them. Having therefore inquired of the natives, which way the people had fled, we followed them, till it was near dark, when judging ourſelves to be about three miles from the tents, and ſuſpecting, that the natives, who frequently encouraged us in the purſuit, were amuſing us with falſe information, we thought it in vain to continue our ſearch any longer, and returned to the beach.

During our abſence, a difference, of a more ſerious and unpleaſant nature, had happened. The officer, who had been ſent in the ſmall boat, and was returning on board, with the goods which had been reſtored, obſerving Captain Cook and me engaged in the purſuit of the offenders, thought it his duty to ſeize the canoe, which was left drawn up on the ſhore. Unfortunately, this canoe belonged to Pareea, who arriving, at the ſame moment, from on board the Diſcovery, claimed his property, with many proteſtations of his innocence. The officer refuſing to give it up,

and

1779. February. and being joined by the crew of the pinnace, which was waiting for Captain Cook, a ſcuffle enſued, in which Pareea was knocked down, by a violent blow on the head, with an oar. The natives, who were collected about the ſpot, and had hitherto been peaceable ſpectators, immediately attacked our people with ſuch a ſhower of ſtones, as forced them to retreat, with great precipitation, and ſwim off to a rock, at ſome diſtance from the ſhore. The pinnace was immediately ranſacked by the iſlanders; and, but for the timely interpoſition of Pareea, who ſeemed to have recovered from the blow, and forgot it at the ſame inſtant, would ſoon have been entirely demoliſhed. Having driven away the crowd, he made ſigns to our people, that they might come and take poſſeſſion of the pinnace, and that he would endeavour to get back the things which had been taken out of it. After their departure, he followed them in his canoe, with a midſhipman's cap, and ſome other trifling articles of the plunder, and, with much apparent concern at what had happened, aſked, if the *Orono* would kill him, and whether he would permit him to come on board the next day? On being aſſured, that he ſhould be well received, he joined noſes (as their cuſtom is) with the officers, in token of friendſhip, and paddled over to the village of Kowrowa.

When Captain Cook was informed of what had paſſed, he expreſſed much uneaſineſs at it, and as we were returning on board, "I am afraid," ſaid he, "that theſe people will oblige me to uſe ſome violent meaſures; for," he added, "they muſt not be left to imagine, that they have gained an advantage over us." However, as it was too late to take any ſteps this evening, he contented himſelf with giving orders, that every man and woman on board ſhould be immediately

immediately turned out of the ſhip. As ſoon as this order was executed, I returned on ſhore; and our former confidence in the natives being now much abated, by the events of the day, I poſted a double guard on the *Morai*, with orders to call me, if they ſaw any men lurking about the beach. At about eleven o'clock, five iſlanders were obſerved creeping round the bottom of the *Morai*; they ſeemed very cautious in approaching us, and, at laſt, finding themſelves diſcovered, retired out of ſight. About midnight, one of them venturing up cloſe to the obſervatory, the ſentinel fired over him; on which the men fled, and we paſſed the remainder of the night without farther diſturbance. 1779. February.

Next morning, at day-light, I went on board the Reſolution for the time-keeper, and, in my way, was hailed by the Diſcovery, and informed, that their cutter had been ſtolen, during the night, from the buoy where it was moored. Sunday 14.

When I arrived on board, I found the marines arming, and Captain Cook loading his double-barrelled gun. Whilſt I was relating to him what had happened to us in the night, he interrupted me, with ſome eagerneſs, and acquainted me with the loſs of the Diſcovery's cutter, and with the preparations he was making for its recovery. It had been his uſual practice, whenever any thing of conſequence was loſt, at any of the iſlands in this ocean, to get the king, or ſome of the principal *Erees*, on board, and to keep them as hoſtages, till it was reſtored. This method, which had been always attended with ſucceſs, he meant to purſue on the preſent occaſion; and, at the ſame time, had given orders to ſtop all the canoes that ſhould attempt to leave the bay, with an intention of ſeizing and deſtroying them, if he could not recover the cutter by peaceable means. Accord-

1779. February.

ingly, the boats of both ſhips, well manned and armed, were ſtationed acroſs the bay; and, before I left the ſhip, ſome great guns had been fired at two large canoes, that were attempting to make their eſcape.

It was between ſeven and eight o'clock when we quitted the ſhip together; Captain Cook in the pinnace, having Mr. Phillips, and nine marines, with him; and myſelf in the ſmall boat. The laſt orders I received from him were, to quiet the minds of the natives, on our ſide of the bay, by aſſuring them, they ſhould not be hurt; to keep my people together; and to be on my guard. We then parted; the Captain went toward Kowrowa, where the king reſided; and I proceeded to the beach. My firſt care, on going aſhore, was to give ſtrict orders to the marines to remain within the tent, to load their pieces with ball, and not to quit their arms. Afterward I took a walk to the huts of old Kaoo, and the prieſts, and explained to them, as well as I could, the object of the hoſtile preparations, which had exceedingly alarmed them. I found, that they had already heard of the cutter's being ſtolen, and I aſſured them, that though Captain Cook was reſolved to recover it, and to puniſh the authors of the theft, yet that they, and the people of the village on our ſide, need not be under the ſmalleſt apprehenſion of ſuffering any evil from us. I deſired the prieſts to explain this to the people, and to tell them not to be alarmed, but to continue peaceable and quiet. Kaoo aſked me, with great earneſtneſs, if Terreeoboo was to be hurt? I aſſured him, he was not; and both he and the reſt of his brethren ſeemed much ſatisfied with this aſſurance.

In the mean time, Captain Cook, having called off the launch, which was ſtationed at the North point of the bay, and

and taken it along with him, proceeded to Kowrowa, and landed with the Lieutenant and nine marines. He immediately marched into the village, where he was received with the uſual marks of reſpect; the people proſtrating themſelves before him, and bringing their accuſtomed offerings of ſmall hogs. Finding that there was no ſuſpicion of his deſign, his next ſtep was, to enquire for Terreeoboo, and the two boys, his ſons, who had been his conſtant gueſts on board the Reſolution. In a ſhort time, the boys returned along with the natives, who had been ſent in ſearch of them, and immediately led Captain Cook to the houſe where the king had ſlept. They found the old man juſt awoke from ſleep; and, after a ſhort converſation about the loſs of the cutter, from which Captain Cook was convinced that he was in no wiſe privy to it, he invited him to return in the boat, and ſpend the day on board the Reſolution. To this propoſal the king readily conſented, and immediately got up to accompany him. 1779. February.

Things were in this proſperous train, the two boys being already in the pinnace, and the reſt of the party having advanced near the water-ſide, when an elderly woman called Kanee-kabareea, the mother of the boys, and one of the king's favourite wives, came after him, and with many tears, and entreaties, beſought him not to go on board. At the ſame time, two Chiefs, who came along with her, laid hold of him, and, inſiſting that he ſhould go no farther, forced him to ſit down. The natives, who were collecting in prodigious numbers along the ſhore, and had probably been alarmed by the firing of the great guns, and the appearances of hoſtility in the bay, began to throng round Captain Cook and their king. In this ſituation, the Lieutenant of marines, obſerving that his men were huddled

1779. February.

cloſe together in the crowd, and thus incapable of uſing their arms, if any occaſion ſhould require it, propoſed to the Captain, to draw them up along the rocks, cloſe to the water's edge; and the crowd readily making way for them to paſs, they were drawn up in a line, at the diſtance of about thirty yards from the place where the king was ſitting.

All this time, the old king remained on the ground, with the ſtrongeſt marks of terror and dejection in his countenance; Captain Cook, not willing to abandon the object for which he had come on ſhore, continuing to urge him, in the moſt preſſing manner, to proceed; whilſt, on the other hand, whenever the king appeared inclined to follow him, the Chiefs, who ſtood round him, interpoſed, at firſt with prayers and entreaties, but afterward having recourſe to force and violence, and inſiſted on his ſtaying where he was. Captain Cook therefore finding, that the alarm had ſpread too generally, and that it was in vain to think any longer of getting him off without bloodſhed, at laſt gave up the point; obſerving to Mr. Phillips, that it would be impoſſible to compel him to go on board, without the riſk of killing a great number of the inhabitants.

Though the enterprize, which had carried Captain Cook on ſhore, had now failed, and was abandoned, yet his perſon did not appear to have been in the leaſt danger, till an accident happened, which gave a fatal turn to the affair. The boats which had been ſtationed acroſs the bay, having fired at ſome canoes, that were attempting to get out, unfortunately had killed a Chief of the firſt rank. The news of his death arrived at the village where Captain Cook was, juſt as he had left the king, and was walking ſlowly toward the ſhore. The ferment it occaſioned was very conſpicuous; the

the women and children were immediately ſent off; and the men put on their war-mats, and armed themſelves with ſpears and ſtones. One of the natives, having in his hands a ſtone, and a long iron ſpike (which they call a *pahooa)* came up to the Captain, flouriſhing his weapon, by way of defiance, and threatening to throw the ſtone. The Captain deſired him to deſiſt; but the man perſiſting in his inſolence, he was at length provoked to fire a load of ſmall-ſhot. The man having his mat on, which the ſhot were not able to penetrate, this had no other effect than to irritate and encourage them. Several ſtones were thrown at the marines; and one of the *Erees* attempted to ſtab Mr. Phillips with his *pahooa*; but failed in the attempt, and received from him a blow with the butt end of his muſquet. Captain Cook now fired his ſecond barrel, loaded with ball, and killed one of the foremoſt of the natives. A general attack with ſtones immediately followed, which was anſwered by a diſcharge of muſquetry from the marines, and the people in the boats. The iſlanders, contrary to the expectations of every one, ſtood the fire with great firmneſs; and before the marines had time to reload, they broke in upon them with dreadful ſhouts and yells. What followed was a ſcene of the utmoſt horror and confuſion.

1779. February.

Four of the marines were cut off amongſt the rocks in their retreat, and fell a ſacrifice to the fury of the enemy; three more were dangerouſly wounded; and the Lieutenant, who had received a ſtab between the ſhoulders with a *pahooa*, having fortunately reſerved his fire, ſhot the man who had wounded him juſt as he was going to repeat his blow. Our unfortunate Commander, the laſt time he was ſeen diſtinctly, was ſtanding at the water's edge, and calling out to the boats to ceaſe firing, and to pull in. If it be true, as ſome

of

1779. February.

of thoſe who were preſent have imagined, that the marines and boat-men had fired without his orders, and that he was deſirous of preventing any further bloodſhed, it is not improbable, that his humanity, on this occaſion, proved fatal to him. For it was remarked, that whilſt he faced the natives, none of them had offered him any violence, but that having turned about, to give his orders to the boats, he was ſtabbed in the back, and fell with his face into the water. On ſeeing him fall, the iſlanders ſet up a great ſhout, and his body was immediately dragged on ſhore, and ſurrounded by the enemy, who ſnatching the dagger out of each other's hands, ſhewed a ſavage eagerneſs to have a ſhare in his deſtruction.

Thus fell our great and excellent Commander! After a life of ſo much diſtinguiſhed and ſucceſsful enterprize, his death, as far as regards himſelf, cannot be reckoned premature; ſince he lived to finiſh the great work for which he ſeems to have been deſigned; and was rather removed from the enjoyment, than cut off from the acquiſition, of glory. How ſincerely his loſs was felt and lamented, by thoſe who had ſo long found their general ſecurity in his ſkill and conduct, and every conſolation, under their hardſhips, in his tenderneſs and humanity, it is neither neceſſary nor poſſible for me to deſcribe; much leſs ſhall I attempt to paint the horror with which we were ſtruck, and the univerſal dejection and diſmay which followed ſo dreadful and unexpected a calamity. The reader will not be diſpleaſed to turn from ſo ſad a ſcene, to the contemplation of his character and virtues, whilſt I am paying my laſt tribute to the memory of a dear and honoured friend, in a ſhort hiſtory of his life, and public ſervices.

Captain James Cook was born near Whitby, in Yorkſhire, on

on the 27th of October, 1728; and, at an early age, was put apprentice to a ſhopkeeper in a neighbouring village. His natural inclination not having been conſulted on this occaſion, he ſoon quitted the counter from diſguſt, and bound himſelf, for nine years, to the maſter of a veſſel in the coal trade. At the breaking out of the war in 1755, he entered into the king's ſervice, on board the Eagle, at that time commanded by Captain Hamer, and afterward by Sir Hugh Palliſer, who ſoon diſcovered his merit, and introduced him on the quarter-deck. 1779. February.

In the year 1758, we find him maſter of the Northumberland, the flag ſhip of Lord Colville, who had then the command of the ſquadron ſtationed on the coaſt of America. It was here, as I have often heard him ſay, that, during a hard winter, he firſt read Euclid, and applied himſelf to the ſtudy of mathematics and aſtronomy, without any other aſſiſtance, than what a few books, and his own induſtry, afforded him. At the ſame time, that he thus found means to cultivate and improve his mind, and to ſupply the deficiencies of an early education, he was engaged in moſt of the buſy and active ſcenes of the war in America. At the ſiege of Quebec, Sir Charles Saunders committed to his charge the execution of ſervices, of the firſt importance in the naval department. He piloted the boats to the attack of Montmorency; conducted the embarkation to the Heights of Abraham; examined the paſſage, and laid buoys for the ſecurity of the large ſhips in proceeding up the river. The courage and addreſs with which he acquitted himſelf in theſe ſervices, gained him the warm friendſhip of Sir Charles Saunders and Lord Colville, who continued to patronize him, during the reſt of their lives, with the greateſt zeal and affection. At the concluſion of the war, he was appointed,

through

1779. February. through the recommendation of Lord Colville and Sir Hugh Palliſer, to ſurvey the Gulf of St. Laurence, and the coaſts of Newfoundland. In this employment he continued till the year 1767, when he was fixed on by Sir Edward Hawke, to command an expedition to the South Seas, for the purpoſe of obſerving the tranſit of *Venus*, and proſecuting diſcoveries in that part of the globe.

From this period, as his ſervices are too well known to require a recital here, ſo his reputation has proportionably advanced to a height too great to be affected by my panegyrick. Indeed, he appears to have been moſt eminently and peculiarly qualified for this ſpecies of enterprize. The earlieſt habits of his life, the courſe of his ſervices, and the conſtant application of his mind, all conſpired to fit him for it, and gave him a degree of profeſſional knowledge, which can fall to the lot of very few.

The conſtitution of his body was robuſt, inured to labour, and capable of undergoing the ſevereſt hardſhips. His ſtomach bore, without difficulty, the coarſeſt and moſt ungrateful food. Indeed, temperance in him was ſcarcely a virtue; ſo great was the indifference with which he ſubmitted to every kind of ſelf-denial. The qualities of his mind were of the ſame hardy, vigorous kind with thoſe of his body. His underſtanding was ſtrong and perſpicacious. His judgment, in whatever related to the ſervices he was engaged in, quick and ſure. His deſigns were bold and manly; and both in the conception, and in the mode of execution, bore evident marks of a great original genius. His courage was cool and determined, and accompanied with an admirable preſence of mind in the moment of danger. His manners were plain and unaffected. His temper might perhaps have been juſtly blamed, as ſubject

to

to haſtineſs and paſſion, had not theſe been diſarmed by a diſpoſition the moſt benevolent and humane. 1779. February.

Such were the outlines of Captain Cook's character; but its moſt diſtinguiſhing feature was, that unremitting perſeverance in the purſuit of his object, which was not only ſuperior to the oppoſition of dangers, and the preſſure of hardſhips, but even exempt from the want of ordinary relaxation. During the long and tedious voyages in which he was engaged, his eagerneſs and activity were never in the leaſt abated. No incidental temptation could detain him for a moment; even thoſe intervals of recreation, which ſometimes unavoidably occurred, and were looked for by us with a longing, that perſons, who have experienced the fatigues of ſervice, will readily excuſe, were ſubmitted to by him with a certain impatience, whenever they could not be employed in making further proviſion for the more effectual proſecution of his deſigns.

It is not neceſſary, here, to enumerate the inſtances in which theſe qualities were diſplayed, during the great and important enterprizes in which he was engaged. I ſhall content myſelf with ſtating the reſult of thoſe ſervices, under the two principal heads to which they may be referred, thoſe of geography and navigation, placing each in a ſeparate and diſtinct point of view.

Perhaps no ſcience ever received greater additions from the labours of a ſingle man, than geography has done from thoſe of Captain Cook. In his firſt voyage to the South Seas, he diſcovered the Society Iſlands; determined the inſularity of New Zealand; diſcovered the ſtraits which ſeparate the two iſlands, and are called after his name; and made a complete ſurvey of both. He afterward explored the Eaſtern coaſt of New Holland, hitherto unknown; an

1779. February. extent of twenty-ſeven degrees of latitude, or upward of two thouſand miles.

In his ſecond expedition, he reſolved the great problem of a Southern continent; having traverſed that hemiſphere between the latitudes of 40° and 70°, in ſuch a manner, as not to leave a poſſibility of its exiſtence, unleſs near the pole, and out of the reach of navigation. During this voyage, he diſcovered New Caledonia, the largeſt iſland in the Southern Pacific, except New Zealand; the iſland of Georgia; and an unknown coaſt, which he named Sandwich Land, the *thule* of the Southern hemiſphere; and having twice viſited the tropical ſeas, he ſettled the ſituations of the old, and made ſeveral new diſcoveries.

But the voyage we are now relating, is diſtinguiſhed, above all the reſt, by the extent and importance of its diſcoveries. Beſides ſeveral ſmaller iſlands in the Southern Pacific, he diſcovered, to the North of the equinoctial line, the group called the Sandwich Iſlands; which, from their ſituation and productions, bid fairer for becoming an object of conſequence, in the ſyſtem of European navigation, than any other diſcovery in the South Sea. He afterward explored what had hitherto remained unknown of the Weſtern coaſt of America, from the latitude of 43° to 70° North, containing an extent of three thouſand five hundred miles; aſcertained the proximity of the two great continents of Aſia and America; paſſed the ſtraits between them, and ſurveyed the coaſt, on each ſide, to ſuch a height of Northern latitude, as to demonſtrate the impracticability of a paſſage, in that hemiſphere, from the Atlantic into the Pacific Ocean, either by an Eaſtern or a Weſtern courſe. In ſhort, if we except the ſea of Amur, and the Japaneſe Archipelago, which ſtill remain imperfectly known to Europeans,

peans, he has completed the hydrography of the habitable globe. 1779. February.

As a navigator, his ſervices were not perhaps leſs ſplendid; certainly not leſs important and meritorious. The method which he diſcovered, and ſo ſucceſsfully purſued, of preſerving the health of ſeamen, forms a new æra in navigation, and will tranſmit his name to future ages, amongſt the friends and benefactors of mankind.

Thoſe who are converſant in naval hiſtory, need not be told, at how dear a rate the advantages, which have been ſought through the medium of long voyages at ſea, have always been purchaſed. That dreadful diſorder which is peculiar to this ſervice, and whoſe ravages have marked the tracks of diſcoverers with circumſtances almoſt too ſhocking to relate, muſt, without exerciſing an unwarrantable tyranny over the lives of our ſeamen, have proved an inſuperable obſtacle to the proſecution of ſuch enterprizes. It was reſerved for Captain Cook to ſhew the world, by repeated trials, that voyages might be protracted to the unuſual length of three or even four years, in unknown regions, and under every change and rigour of climate, not only without affecting the health, but even without diminiſhing the probability of life, in the ſmalleſt degree. The method he purſued has been fully explained by himſelf, in a paper which was read before the Royal Society, in the year 1776*; and whatever improvements the experience of the preſent voyage has ſuggeſted, are mentioned in their proper places.

With reſpect to his profeſſional abilities, I ſhall leave them to the judgment of thoſe who are beſt acquainted with the nature of the ſervices in which he was engaged. They will

* Sir Godfrey Copley's gold medal was adjudged to him, on that occaſion.

1779. February. readily acknowledge, that to have conducted three expeditions of ſo much danger and difficulty, of ſo unuſual a length, and in ſuch a variety of ſituation, with uniform and invariable ſucceſs, muſt have required not only a thorough and accurate knowledge of his buſineſs, but a powerful and comprehenſive genius, fruitful in reſources, and equally ready in the application of whatever the higher and inferior calls of the ſervice required.

Having given the moſt faithful account I have been able to collect, both from my own obſervation, and the relations of others, of the death of my ever honoured friend, and alſo of his character and ſervices; I ſhall now leave his memory to the gratitude and admiration of poſterity; accepting, with a melancholy ſatisfaction, the honour, which the loſs of him hath procured me, of ſeeing my name joined with his; and of teſtifying that affection and reſpect for his memory, which, whilſt he lived, it was no leſs my inclination, than my conſtant ſtudy, to ſhew him.

CHAP.

CHAP. IV.

Tranſactions at Owhyhee, ſubſequent to the Death of Captain Cook.—Gallant Behaviour of the Lieutenant of Marines.—Dangerous Situation of the Party at the Morai.—Bravery of one of the Natives.—Conſultation reſpecting future Meaſures.—Demand of the Body of Captain Cook.—Evaſive and inſidious Conduct of Koah, and the Chiefs.—Inſolent Behaviour of the Natives.—Promotion of Officers.—Arrival of two Prieſts with Part of the Body.—Extraordinary Behaviour of two Boys.—Burning of the Village of Kakooa.—Unfortunate Deſtruction of the Dwellings of the Prieſts.—Recovery of the Bones of Captain Cook.—Departure from Karakakooa Bay.

1779. February. Sunday 14.

IT has been already related, that four of the marines, who attended Captain Cook, were killed by the iſlanders on the ſpot. The reſt, with Mr. Phillips, their Lieutenant, threw themſelves into the water, and eſcaped, under cover of a ſmart fire from the boats. On this occaſion, a remarkable inſtance of gallant behaviour, and of affection for his men, was ſhewn by that officer. For he had ſcarcely got into the boat, when, ſeeing one of the marines, who was a bad ſwimmer, ſtruggling in the water, and in danger of being taken by the enemy, he immediately jumped into the ſea to his aſſiſtance, though much wounded himſelf; and after

1779. February.

after receiving a blow on the head from a ſtone, which had nearly ſent him to the bottom, he caught the man by the hair, and brought him ſafe off *.

Our people continued for ſome time to keep up a conſtant fire from the boats (which, during the whole tranſaction, were not more than twenty yards from the land), in order to afford their unfortunate companions, if any of them ſhould ſtill remain alive, an opportunity of eſcaping. Theſe efforts, ſeconded by a few guns, that were fired at the ſame time, from the Reſolution, having forced the natives at laſt to retire, a ſmall boat, manned by five of our young midſhipmen, pulled toward the ſhore, where they ſaw the bodies, without any ſigns of life, lying on the ground; but judging it dangerous to attempt to bring them off, with ſo ſmall a force, and their ammunition being nearly expended, they returned to the ſhips, leaving them in poſſeſſion of the iſlanders, together with ten ſtands of arms.

As ſoon as the general conſternation, which the news of this calamity occaſioned throughout both crews, had a little ſubſided, their attention was called to our party at the *Morai*,

* From the annexed plate, the reader will be enabled to form a very clear and diſtinct idea of the ſituation of the ſeveral places mentioned in this and the three laſt chapters. On the fartheſt point of land, beyond the ſhips, to the left, is ſituated the village of Kowrowa, where Captain Cook was killed. The pile of ſtones, with a building on the top, at the other extremity of the plate, repreſents the *Morai*, where the obſervatories were erected. Behind the grove of cocoa-nut trees, ſtood the cloiſters of the prieſts. To the left of theſe, is part of the village of Kakooa, which was burnt down on the 17th of February; and, farther on, amongſt the rocks, at the end of the beach, is the well where we watered. The ſteep high ground, above the beach, is the hill from which the natives annoyed the waterers, by rolling down ſtones.

In the fore ground, a native is ſwimming on one of the boards, as deſcribed in the ſeventh chapter. The canoes, and the general air of the people, are repreſented with the greateſt truth and fidelity.

where

1779. February.

where the maſt and ſails were on ſhore, with a guard of only ſix marines. It is impoſſible for me to deſcribe the emotions of my own mind, during the time theſe tranſactions had been carrying on, at the other ſide of the bay. Being at the diſtance only of a ſhort mile from the village of Kowrowa, we could ſee diſtinctly an immenſe crowd collected on the ſpot where Captain Cook had juſt before landed. We heard the firing of the muſquetry, and could perceive ſome extraordinary buſtle and agitation in the multitude. We afterward ſaw the natives flying, the boats retire from the ſhore, and paſſing and repaſſing, in great ſtillneſs, between the ſhips. I muſt confeſs, that my heart ſoon miſgave me. Where a life ſo dear and valuable was concerned, it was impoſſible not to be alarmed, by appearances both new and threatening. But, beſides this, I knew, that a long and uninterrupted courſe of ſucceſs, in his tranſactions with the natives of theſe ſeas, had given the Captain a degree of confidence, that I was always fearful might, at ſome unlucky moment, put him too much off his guard; and I now ſaw all the dangers to which that confidence might lead, without receiving much conſolation from conſidering the experience that had given riſe to it.

My firſt care, on hearing the muſquets fired, was, to aſſure the people, who were aſſembled in conſiderable numbers, round the wall of our conſecrated field, and ſeemed equally at a loſs with ourſelves how to account for what they had ſeen and heard, that they ſhould not be moleſted; and that, at all events, I was deſirous of continuing on peaceable terms with them. We remained in this poſture, till the boats had returned on board, when Captain Clerke, obſerving, through his teleſcope, that we were ſurrounded by the natives,

1779. February. natives, and apprehending they meant to attack us, ordered two four-pounders to be fired at them. Fortunately theſe guns, though well aimed, did no miſchief, and yet gave the natives a convincing proof of their power. One of the balls broke a cocoa-nut tree in the middle, under which a party of them were ſitting; and the other ſhivered a rock, that ſtood in an exact line with them. As I had, juſt before, given them the ſtrongeſt aſſurances of their ſafety, I was exceedingly mortified at this act of hoſtility; and, to prevent a repetition of it, immediately diſpatched a boat to acquaint Captain Clerke, that, at preſent, I was on the moſt friendly terms with the natives; and that, if occaſion ſhould hereafter ariſe for altering my conduct toward them, I would hoiſt a jack, as a ſignal for him to afford us all the aſſiſtance in his power.

We expected the return of the boat with the utmoſt impatience; and after remaining a quarter of an hour, under the moſt torturing anxiety and ſuſpenſe, our fears were at length confirmed, by the arrival of Mr. Bligh, with orders to ſtrike the tents as quickly as poſſible, and to ſend the ſails, that were repairing, on board. Juſt at the ſame moment, our friend Kaireekeea having alſo received intelligence of the death of Captain Cook, from a native, who had arrived from the other ſide of the bay, came to me, with great ſorrow and dejection in his countenance, to inquire, if it was true?

Our ſituation was, at this time, extremely critical and important. Not only our own lives, but the event of the expedition, and the return of at leaſt one of the ſhips, being involved in the ſame common danger. We had the maſt of the Reſolution, and the greateſt part of our ſails, on ſhore, under the protection of only ſix marines: their loſs would have

have been irreparable; and though the natives had not as yet ſhewn the ſmalleſt diſpoſition to moleſt us, yet it was impoſſible to anſwer for the alteration, which the news of the tranſaction at Kowrowa might produce. I therefore thought it prudent to diſſemble my belief of the death of Captain Cook, and to deſire Kaireekeea to diſcourage the report; leſt either the fear of our reſentment, or the ſucceſsful example of their countrymen, might lead them to ſeize the favourable opportunity, which at this time offered itſelf, of giving us a ſecond blow. At the ſame time, I adviſed him to bring old Kaoo, and the reſt of the prieſts, into a large houſe that was cloſe to the *Morai*; partly out of regard to their ſafety, in caſe it ſhould have been found neceſſary to proceed to extremities; and partly to have him near us, in order to make uſe of his authority with the people, if it could be inſtrumental in preſerving peace. 1779. February.

Having placed the marines on the top of the *Morai*, which formed a ſtrong and advantageous poſt, and left the command with Mr. Bligh, giving him the moſt poſitive directions to act entirely on the defenſive, I went on board the Diſcovery, in order to repreſent to Captain Clerke the dangerous ſituation of our affairs. As ſoon as I quitted the ſpot, the natives began to annoy our people with ſtones; and I had ſcarcely reached the ſhip, before I heard the firing of the marines. I therefore returned inſtantly on ſhore, where I found things growing every moment more alarming. The natives were arming, and putting on their mats; and their numbers increaſed very faſt. I could alſo perceive ſeveral large bodies marching toward us, along the cliff which ſeparates the village of Kakooa from the North ſide of the bay, where the village of Kowrowa is ſituated.

1779. February. They began, at firſt, to attack us with ſtones, from behind the walls of their incloſures, and finding no reſiſtance on our part, they ſoon grew more daring. A few reſolute fellows, having crept along the beach, under cover of the rocks, ſuddenly made their appearance at the foot of the *Morai*, with a deſign, as it ſeemed, of ſtorming it on the ſide next the ſea, which was its only acceſſible part; and were not diſlodged, till after they had ſtood a conſiderable number of ſhot, and ſeen one of their party fall.

The bravery of one of theſe aſſailants well deſerves to be particularly mentioned. For having returned to carry off his companion, amidſt the fire of our whole party, a wound, which he received, made him quit the body and retire; but, in a few minutes, he again appeared, and being again wounded, he was obliged a ſecond time to retreat. At this moment I arrived at the *Morai*, and ſaw him return the third time, bleeding and faint; and being informed of what had happened, I forbad the ſoldiers to fire, and he was ſuffered to carry off his friend; which he was juſt able to perform, and then fell down himſelf, and expired.

About this time, a ſtrong reinforcement from both ſhips having landed, the natives retreated behind their walls; which giving me acceſs to our friendly prieſts, I ſent one of them to endeavour to bring their countrymen to ſome terms, and to propoſe to them, that if they would deſiſt from throwing ſtones, I would not permit our men to fire. This truce was agreed to, and we were ſuffered to launch the maſt, and carry off the ſails, and our aſtronomical *apparatus*, unmoleſted. As ſoon as we had quitted the *Morai*, they took poſſeſſion of it, and ſome of them threw a few ſtones; but without doing us any miſchief.

It

1779. February.

It was half an hour paſt eleven o'clock, when I got on board the Diſcovery, where I found no deciſive plan had been adopted for our future proceedings. The reſtitution of the boat, and the recovery of the body of Captain Cook, were the objects, which, on all hands, we agreed to inſiſt on; and it was my opinion, that ſome vigorous ſteps ſhould be taken, in caſe the demand of them was not immediately complied with.

Though my feelings, on the death of a beloved and honoured friend, may be ſuſpected to have had ſome ſhare in this opinion, yet there were certainly other reaſons, and thoſe of the moſt ſerious kind, that had conſiderable weight with me. The confidence which their ſucceſs in killing our Chief, and forcing us to quit the ſhore, muſt naturally have inſpired; and the advantage, however trifling, which they had obtained over us the preceding day, would, I had no doubt, encourage them to make ſome further dangerous attempts; and the more eſpecially, as they had little reaſon, from what they had hitherto ſeen, to dread the effects of our fire-arms. Indeed, contrary to the expectations of every one, this ſort of weapon had produced no ſigns of terror in them. On our ſide, ſuch was the condition of the ſhips, and the ſtate of diſcipline amongſt us, that had a vigorous attack been made on us, in the night, it would have been impoſſible to anſwer for the conſequences.

In theſe apprehenſions, I was ſupported by the opinion of moſt of the officers on board; and nothing ſeemed to me ſo likely to encourage the natives to make the attempt, as the appearance of our being inclined to an accommodation, which they could only attribute to weakneſs, or fear.

1779. February. In favour of more conciliatory meaſures, it was juſtly urged, that the miſchief was done, and irreparable; that the natives had a ſtrong claim to our regard, on account of their former friendſhip and kindneſs; and the more eſpecially, as the late melancholy accident did not appear to have ariſen from any premeditated deſign: that, on the part of Terreeoboo, his ignorance of the theft, his readineſs to accompany Captain Cook on board, and his having actually ſent his two ſons into the boat, muſt free him from the ſmalleſt degree of ſuſpicion: that the conduct of his women, and the *Erees*, might eaſily be accounted for, from the apprehenſions occaſioned by the armed force with which Captain Cook came on ſhore, and the hoſtile preparations in the bay; appearances ſo different from the terms of friendſhip and confidence, in which both parties had hitherto lived, that the arming of the natives was evidently with a deſign to reſiſt the attempt, which they had ſome reaſon to imagine would be made, to carry off their king by force, and was naturally to be expected from a people full of affection and attachment to their Chiefs.

To theſe motives of humanity, others of a prudential nature were added; that we were in want of water, and other refreſhments: that our foremaſt would require ſix or eight days work, before it could be ſtepped: that the ſpring was advancing apace; and that the ſpeedy proſecution of our next Northern expedition ought now to be our ſole object: that therefore to engage in a vindictive conteſt with the inhabitants, might not only lay us under the imputation of unneceſſary cruelty, but would occaſion an unavoidable delay in the equipment of the ſhips.

In this latter opinion Captain Clerke concurred; and though

1779. February.

though I was convinced, that an early diſplay of vigorous reſentment would more effectually have anſwered every object both of prudence and humanity, I was not ſorry, that the meaſures I had recommended were rejected. For though the contemptuous behaviour of the natives, and their ſubſequent oppoſition to our neceſſary operations on ſhore, ariſing, I have no doubt, from a miſconſtruction of our lenity, compelled us at laſt to have recourſe to violence in our own defence; yet I am not ſo ſure, that the circumſtances of the caſe would, in the opinion of the world, have juſtified the uſe of force, on our part, in the firſt inſtance. Cautionary rigour is at all times invidious, and has this additional objection to it, that the ſeverity of a preventive courſe, when it beſt ſucceeds, leaves its expediency the leaſt apparent.

During the time we were thus engaged, in concerting ſome plan for our future conduct, a prodigious concourſe of natives ſtill kept poſſeſſion of the ſhore; and ſome of them came off in canoes, and had the boldneſs to approach within piſtol-ſhot of the ſhips, and to inſult us by various marks of contempt and defiance. It was with great difficulty we could reſtrain the ſailors from the uſe of their arms, on theſe occaſions; but as pacific meaſures had been reſolved on, the canoes were ſuffered to return unmoleſted.

In purſuance of this plan, it was determined that I ſhould proceed toward the ſhore, with the boats of both ſhips, well manned and armed, with a view to bring the natives to a parley, and, if poſſible, to obtain a conference with ſome of the Chiefs.

If this attempt ſucceeded, I was to demand the dead bodies, and particularly that of Captain Cook; to threaten them

1779. February. them with our vengeance in caſe of a refuſal; but, by no means, to fire unleſs attacked; and not to land on any account whatever. Theſe orders were delivered to me before the whole party, and in the moſt poſitive manner.

I left the ſhips about four o'clock in the afternoon; and, as we approached the ſhore, I perceived every indication of a hoſtile reception. The whole crowd of natives was in motion; the women and children retiring; the men putting on their war mats, and arming themſelves with long ſpears and daggers. We alſo obſerved, that, ſince the morning, they had thrown up ſtone breaſt-works along the beach, where Captain Cook had landed; probably in expectation of an attack at that place; and, as ſoon as we were within reach, they began to throw ſtones at us with ſlings, but without doing any miſchief. Concluding, therefore, that all attempts to bring them to a parley would be in vain, unleſs I firſt gave them ſome ground for mutual confidence; I ordered the armed boats to ſtop, and went on, in the ſmall boat, alone, with a white flag in my hand, which, by a general cry of joy from the natives, I had the ſatisfaction to find was inſtantly underſtood. The women immediately returned from the ſide of the hill, whither they had retired; the men threw off their mats; and all ſat down together by the water-ſide, extending their arms, and inviting me to come on ſhore.

Though this behaviour was very expreſſive of a friendly diſpoſition, yet I could not help entertaining ſome ſuſpicions of its ſincerity. But when I ſaw Koah, with a boldneſs and aſſurance altogether unaccountable, ſwimming off toward the boat, with a white flag in his hand, I thought it neceſſary to return this mark of confidence, and therefore received him into the boat, though armed; a circumſtance

which

which did not tend to leſſen my ſuſpicions. I muſt confeſs, I had long harboured an unfavourable opinion of this man. The prieſts had always told us, that he was of a malicious diſpoſition, and no friend of ours; and the repeated detections of his fraud and treachery, had convinced us of the truth of their repreſentations. Add to all this, the ſhocking tranſaction of the morning, in which he was ſeen acting a principal part, made me feel the utmoſt horror at finding myſelf ſo near him; and as he came up to me with feigned tears, and embraced me, I was ſo diſtruſtful of his intentions, that I could not help taking hold of the point of the *pahooah*, which he held in his hand, and turning it from me. I told him, that I had come to demand the body of Captain Cook; and to declare war againſt them, unleſs it was inſtantly reſtored. He aſſured me this ſhould be done as ſoon as poſſible; and that he would go himſelf for that purpoſe; and, after begging of me a piece of iron, with much aſſurance, as if nothing extraordinary had happened, he leaped into the ſea, and ſwam aſhore, calling out to his countrymen, that we were all friends again. 1779. February.

We waited near an hour, with great anxiety, for his return; during which time, the reſt of the boats had approached ſo near the ſhore, as to enter into converſation with a party of the natives, at ſome diſtance from us; by whom they were plainly given to underſtand, that the body had been cut to pieces, and carried up the country; but of this circumſtance I was not informed, till our return to the ſhips.

I began now to expreſs ſome impatience at Koah's delay; upon which the Chiefs preſſed me exceedingly to come on ſhore; aſſuring me, that if I would go myſelf to Terreeoboo, the

1779. February. the body would certainly be reſtored to me. When they found they could not prevail on me to land, they attempted, under a pretence of wiſhing to converſe with more eaſe, to decoy our boat among ſome rocks, where they would have had it in their power to cut us off from the reſt. It was no difficult matter to ſee through theſe artifices; and I was, therefore, ſtrongly inclined to break off all further communication with them, when a Chief came to us, who was the particular friend of Captain Clerke, and of the officers of the Diſcovery, on board which ſhip he had ſailed, when we laſt left the bay, intending to take his paſſage to *Mowee*. He told us, he came from Terreeoboo to acquaint us, that the body was carried up the country; but that it ſhould be brought to us the next morning. There appeared a great deal of ſincerity in his manner; and being aſked, if he told a falſehood, he hooked his two fore-fingers together, which is underſtood amongſt theſe iſlanders as the ſign of truth; in the uſe of which they are very ſcrupulous.

As I was now at a loſs in what manner to proceed, I ſent Mr. Vancouver to acquaint Captain Clerke with all that had paſſed; that my opinion was, they meant not to keep their word with us, and were ſo far from being ſorry at what had happened, that, on the contrary, they were full of ſpirits and confidence on account of their late ſucceſs, and ſought only to gain time, till they could contrive ſome ſcheme for getting us into their power. Mr. Vancouver came back with orders for me to return on board; having firſt given the natives to underſtand, that, if the body was not brought the next morning, the town ſhould be deſtroyed.

When they ſaw that we were going off, they endeavoured to provoke us by the moſt inſulting and contemptuous geſtures.

tures. Some of our people ſaid, they could diſtinguiſh ſeveral of the natives parading about in the clothes of our unfortunate comrades; and, among them, a Chief brandiſhing Captain Cook's hanger, and a woman holding the ſcabbard. Indeed, there can be no doubt, but that our behaviour had given them a mean opinion of our courage; for they could have but little notion of the motives of humanity that directed it. 1779. February.

In conſequence of the report I made to Captain Clerke, of what I conceived to be the preſent temper and diſpoſition of the iſlanders, the moſt effectual meaſures were taken to guard againſt any attack they might make in the night. The boats were moored with top-chains; additional ſentinels were poſted on both ſhips; and guard-boats were ſtationed to row round them, in order to prevent the natives from cutting the cables. During the night we obſerved a prodigious number of lights on the hills, which made ſome of us imagine they were removing their effects back into the country, in conſequence of our threats. But I rather believe them to have been the ſacrifices that were performing on account of the war, in which they imagined themſelves about to be engaged; and moſt probably the bodies of our ſlain countrymen were, at that time, burning. We afterward ſaw fires of the ſame kind, as we paſſed the iſland of Morotoi; and which, we were told by ſome natives then on board, were made on account of the war they had declared againſt a neighbouring iſland. And this agrees with what we learned amongſt the Friendly and Society Iſles, that, previous to any expedition againſt an enemy, the Chiefs always endeavoured to animate and inflame the courage of the people by feaſts and rejoicings in the night.

1779. February. Monday 15. We remained the whole night undiſturbed, except by the howlings and lamentations which were heard on ſhore: and early the next morning, Koah came along-ſide the Reſolution, with a preſent of cloth, and a ſmall pig, which he deſired leave to preſent to me. I have mentioned before, that I was ſuppoſed, by the natives, to be the ſon of Captain Cook; and as he, in his life-time, had always ſuffered them to believe it, I was probably conſidered as the Chief, after his death. As ſoon as I came on deck, I queſtioned him about the body; and, on his returning me nothing but evaſive anſwers, I refuſed to accept his preſents; and was going to diſmiſs him, with ſome expreſſions of anger and reſentment, had not Captain Clerke, judging it beſt, at all events, to keep up the appearance of friendſhip, thought it more proper, that he ſhould be treated with the uſual reſpect.

This treacherous fellow came frequently to us, during the courſe of the forenoon, with ſome trifling preſent or other; and, as I always obſerved him eyeing every part of the ſhip with great attention, I took care he ſhould ſee we were well prepared for our defence.

He was exceedingly urgent, both with Captain Clerke and myſelf, to go on ſhore, laying all the blame of the detention of the bodies on the other Chiefs; and aſſuring us, that every thing might be ſettled to our ſatisfaction, by a perſonal interview with Terreeoboo. However, his conduct was too ſuſpicious to make it prudent to comply with this requeſt; and indeed a fact came afterward to our knowledge, which proved the entire falſehood of his pretences. For we were told, that, immediately after the action in which Captain Cook was killed, the old king had retired to a cave in the ſteep part of the mountain, that hangs over the

the bay, which was acceſſible only by the help of ropes, and where he remained for many days, having his victuals let down to him by cords. 1779. February.

When Koah returned from the ſhips, we could perceive that his countrymen, who had been collected, by break of day, in vaſt crowds on the ſhore, thronged about him with great eagerneſs; as if to learn the intelligence he had acquired, and what was to be done in conſequence of it. It is very probable, that they expected we ſhould attempt to put our threats in execution; and they ſeemed fully reſolved to ſtand their ground. During the whole morning, we heard conchs blowing in different parts of the coaſt; large parties were ſeen marching over the hills; and, in ſhort, appearances were ſo alarming, that we carried out a ſtream anchor, to enable us to haul the ſhip abreaſt of the town, in caſe of an attack; and ſtationed boats off the North point of the bay, to prevent a ſurprize from that quarter.

The breach of their engagement to reſtore the bodies of the ſlain, and the warlike poſture, in which they, at this time, appeared, occaſioned freſh debates amongſt us concerning the meaſures next to be purſued. It was, at laſt, determined, that nothing ſhould be ſuffered to interfere with the repair of the maſt, and the preparations for our departure; but that we ſhould, nevertheleſs, continue our negociations for the recovery of the bodies.

The greateſt part of the day was taken up in getting the fore-maſt into a proper ſituation on deck, for the carpenters to work upon it; and in making the neceſſary alterations in the commiſſions of the officers. The command of the expedition having devolved on Captain Clerke, he removed on board the Reſolution, appointed Lieutenant Gore to be Captain of the Diſcovery, and promoted Mr. Harvey, a mid-

1779. February.

ſhipman, who had been with Captain Cook in his two laſt voyages, to the vacant Lieutenancy. During the whole day, we met with no interruption from the natives; and, at night, the launch was again moored with a top-chain; and guard-boats ſtationed round both ſhips as before.

About eight o'clock, it being very dark, a canoe was heard paddling toward the ſhip; and as ſoon as it was ſeen, both the ſentinels on deck fired into it. There were two perſons in the canoe, and they immediately roared out "*Tinnee*," (which was the way in which they pronounced my name), and ſaid they were friends, and had ſomething for me belonging to Captain Cook. When they came on board, they threw themſelves at our feet, and appeared exceedingly frightened. Luckily neither of them was hurt, notwithſtanding the balls of both pieces had gone through the canoe. One of them was the perſon, whom I have before mentioned under the name of the *Taboo* man, who conſtantly attended Captain Cook with the circumſtances of ceremony I have already deſcribed; and who, though a man of rank in the iſland, could ſcarcely be hindered from performing for him the loweſt offices of a menial ſervant. After lamenting, with abundance of tears, the loſs of the *Orono*, he told us, that he had brought us a part of his body. He then preſented to us a ſmall bundle wrapped up in cloth, which he brought under his arm; and it is impoſſible to deſcribe the horror which ſeized us, on finding in it a piece of human fleſh, about nine or ten pounds weight. This, he ſaid, was all that remained of the body; that the reſt was cut to pieces, and burnt; but that the head and all the bones, except what belonged to the trunk, were in the poſſeſſion of Terreeoboo, and the other *Erees*; that what we ſaw had been allotted to Kaoo, the chief of the

the prieſts, to be made uſe of in ſome religious ceremony; and that he had ſent it as a proof of his innocence and attachment to us. 1779. February.

This afforded an opportunity of informing ourſelves whether they were cannibals; and we did not neglect it. We firſt tried, by many indirect queſtions, put to each of them apart, to learn in what manner the reſt of the bodies had been diſpoſed of; and finding them very conſtant in one ſtory, that, after the fleſh had been cut off, it was all burnt; we at laſt put the direct queſtion, Whether they had not eat ſome of it? They immediately ſhewed as much horror at the idea, as any European would have done; and aſked, very naturally, if that was the cuſtom amongſt us? They afterward aſked us, with great earneſtneſs and apparent apprehenſion, "When the *Orono* would come again? and what he would do to them on his return?" The ſame inquiry was frequently made afterward by others; and this idea agrees with the general tenour of their conduct toward him, which ſhewed, that they conſidered him as a being of a ſuperior nature.

We preſſed our two friendly viſiters to remain on board till morning; but in vain. They told us, that, if this tranſaction ſhould come to the knowledge of the king, or Chiefs, it might be attended with the moſt fatal conſequences to their whole ſociety; in order to prevent which, they had been obliged to come off to us in the dark; and that the ſame precaution would be neceſſary in returning on ſhore. They informed us farther, that the Chiefs were eager to revenge the death of their countrymen; and, particularly, cautioned us againſt truſting Koah, who, they ſaid, was our mortal and implacable enemy; and deſired nothing more ardently, than an opportunity of fighting us; to which the blowing

1779. February. blowing of the conchs, we had heard in the morning, was meant as a challenge.

We learned from theſe men, that ſeventeen of their countrymen were killed in the firſt action at Kowrowa, of whom five were Chiefs; and that Kaneena and his brother, our very particular friends, were unfortunately of that number. Eight, they ſaid, were killed at the obſervatory; three of whom were alſo of the firſt rank.

About eleven o'clock, our two friends left us, and took the precaution to deſire, that our guard-boat might attend them, till they had paſſed the Diſcovery, leſt they ſhould again be fired upon, which might alarm their countrymen on ſhore, and expoſe them to the danger of being diſcovered. This requeſt was complied with; and we had the ſatisfaction to find, that they got ſafe and undiſcovered to land.

During the remainder of this night, we heard the ſame loud howling and lamentations, as in the preceding one.

Tueſday 16. Early in the morning, we received another viſit from Koah. I muſt confeſs, I was a little piqued to find, that, notwithſtanding the moſt evident marks of treachery in his conduct, and the poſitive teſtimony of our friends the prieſts, he ſhould ſtill be permitted to carry on the ſame farce, and to make us at leaſt appear to be the dupes of his hypocriſy. Indeed our ſituation was become extremely awkward and unpromiſing; none of the purpoſes for which this pacific courſe of proceeding had been adopted, having hitherto been in the leaſt forwarded by it. No ſatisfactory anſwer whatever had been given to our demands; we did not ſeem to be at all advanced toward a reconciliation with the iſlanders; they ſtill kept in force on the ſhore, as if determined to reſiſt any attempts we might make to land; and yet

yet the attempt was become abſolutely neceſſary, as the completing our ſupply of water would not admit of any longer delay. 1779. February.

However it muſt be obſerved, in juſtice to the conduct of Captain Clerke, that it was very probable, from the great numbers of the natives, and from the reſolution with which they ſeemed to expect us, an attack could not have been made without ſome danger; and that the loſs of a very few men might have been ſeverely felt by us, during the remaining courſe of our voyage. Whereas the delaying the execution of our threats, though, on the one hand, it leſſened their opinion of our proweſs, had the effect of cauſing them to diſperſe, on the other. For, this day, about noon, finding us perſiſt in our inactivity, great bodies of them, after blowing their conchs, and uſing every mode of defiance, marched off, over the hills, and never appeared afterward. Thoſe, however, who remained, were not the leſs daring and inſolent. One man had the audacity to come within muſquet-ſhot, a-head of the ſhip; and, after ſlinging ſeveral ſtones at us, he waved Captain Cook's hat over his head, whilſt his countrymen on ſhore were exulting, and encouraging his boldneſs. Our people were all in a flame at this inſult, and, coming in a body on the quarter-deck, begged they might no longer be obliged to put up with theſe repeated provocations; and requeſted me to obtain permiſſion for them, from Captain Clerke, to avail themſelves of the firſt fair occaſion of revenging the death of their Commander. On my acquainting him with what was paſſing, he gave orders for ſome great guns to be fired at the natives on ſhore; and promiſed the crew, that if they ſhould meet with any moleſtation at the watering-place, the

1779. February. the next day, they ſhould then be left at liberty to chaſtiſe them.

It is ſomewhat remarkable, that, before we could bring our guns to bear, the iſlanders had ſuſpected our intentions, from the ſtir they ſaw in the ſhip, and had retired behind their houſes and walls. We were therefore obliged to fire, in ſome meaſure, at random; notwithſtanding which, our ſhot produced all the effects that could have been deſired. For, ſoon after, we ſaw Koah paddling toward us, with extreme haſte, and, on his arrival, we learned, that ſome people had been killed, and amongſt the reſt, Maiha-maiha, a principal Chief, and a near relation of the king *.

Soon after the arrival of Koah, two boys ſwam off from the *Morai* toward the ſhips, having each a long ſpear in his hand; and after they had approached pretty near, they began to chant a ſong in a very ſolemn manner; the ſubject of which, from their often mentioning the word *Orono*, and pointing to the village where Captain Cook was killed, we concluded to be the late calamitous diſaſter. Having ſung in a plaintive ſtrain for about twelve or fifteen minutes, during the whole of which time they remained in the water, they went on board the Diſcovery, and delivered their ſpears; and, after making a ſhort ſtay, returned on ſhore. Who ſent them, or what was the object of this ceremony, we were never able to learn.

At night, the uſual precautions were taken for the ſecurity of the ſhips; and as ſoon as it was dark, our two

* The word *matee*, is commonly uſed, in the language of theſe iſlands, to expreſs either killing or wounding; and we were afterward told, that this Chief had only received a ſlight blow on the face from a ſtone, which had been ſtruck by one of the balls.

friends,

friends, who had viſited us the night before, came off again. They aſſured us, that though the effects of our great guns, this afternoon, had terrified the Chiefs exceedingly, they had by no means laid aſide their hoſtile intentions, and adviſed us to be on our guard. 1779. February.

The next morning, the boats of both ſhips were ſent aſhore for water; and the Diſcovery was warped cloſe to the beach, in order to cover that ſervice. We ſoon found, that the intelligence which the prieſts had ſent us, was not without foundation; and that the natives were reſolved to take every opportunity of annoying us, when it could be done without much riſk. Wedneſ. 17.

Throughout all this group of iſlands, the villages, for the moſt part, are ſituated near the ſea; and the adjacent ground is incloſed with ſtone walls, about three feet high. Theſe, we at firſt imagined, were intended for the diviſion of property; but we now diſcovered, that they ſerved, and probably were principally deſigned, for a defence againſt invaſion. They conſiſt of looſe ſtones, and the inhabitants are very dexterous in ſhifting them, with great quickneſs, to ſuch ſituations, as the direction of the attack may require. In the ſides of the mountain, which hangs over the bay, they have alſo little holes, or caves, of conſiderable depth, the entrance of which is ſecured by a fence of the ſame kind. From behind both theſe defences the natives kept perpetually haraſſing our waterers with ſtones; nor could the ſmall force we had on ſhore, with the advantage of muſquets, compel them to retreat.

In this expoſed ſituation, our people were ſo taken up in attending to their own ſafety, that they employed the whole forenoon in filling only one ton of water. As it was therefore impoſſible to perform this ſervice, till their aſſailants

1779. February.

were driven to a greater diſtance, the Diſcovery was ordered to diſlodge them with her great guns; which being effected by a few diſcharges, the men landed without moleſtation. However, the natives ſoon after made their appearance again, in their uſual mode of attack; and it was now found abſolutely neceſſary to burn down ſome ſtraggling houſes, near the well, behind which they had taken ſhelter. In executing theſe orders, I am ſorry to add, that our people were hurried into acts of unneceſſary cruelty and devaſtation. Something ought certainly to be allowed to their reſentment of the repeated inſults, and contemptuous behaviour, of the iſlanders, and to the natural deſire of revenging the loſs of their Commander. But, at the ſame time, their conduct ſerved ſtrongly to convince me, that the utmoſt precaution is neceſſary in truſting, though but for a moment, the diſcretionary uſe of arms, in the hands of private ſeamen, or ſoldiers, on ſuch occaſions. The rigour of diſcipline, and the habits of obedience, by which their force is kept directed to its proper objects, lead them naturally enough to conceive, that whatever they have the power, they have alſo the right, to do. Actual diſobedience being almoſt the only crime for which they are accuſtomed to expect puniſhment, they learn to conſider it as the only meaſure of right and wrong; and hence are apt to conclude, that what they can do with impunity, they may do with juſtice and honour. So that the feelings of humanity, which are inſeparable from us all, and that generoſity toward an unreſiſting enemy, which, at other times, is the diſtinguiſhing mark of brave men, become but weak reſtraints to the exerciſe of violence, when oppoſed to the deſire they naturally have of ſhewing their own independence and power.

I have

1779. February.

I have already mentioned, that orders had been given to burn only a few ſtraggling huts, which afforded ſhelter to the natives. We were therefore a good deal ſurprized to ſee the whole village on fire; and before a boat, that was ſent to ſtop the progreſs of the miſchief, could reach the ſhore, the houſes of our old and conſtant friends, the prieſts, were all in flames. I cannot enough lament the illneſs, that confined me on board this day. The prieſts had always been under my protection; and, unluckily, the officers who were then on duty, having been ſeldom on ſhore at the *Morai*, were not much acquainted with the circumſtances of the place. Had I been preſent myſelf, I might probably have been the means of ſaving their little ſociety from deſtruction.

Several of the natives were ſhot, in making their eſcape from the flames; and our people cut off the heads of two of them, and brought them on board. The fate of one poor iſlander was much lamented by us all. As he was coming to the well for water, he was ſhot at by one of the marines. The ball ſtruck his calibaſh, which he immediately threw from him and fled. He was purſued into one of the caves I have before deſcribed, and no lion could have defended his den with greater courage and fierceneſs; till at laſt, after having kept two of our people at bay, for a conſiderable time, he expired, covered with wounds. It was this accident, that firſt brought us acquainted with the uſe of theſe caverns.

At this time, an elderly man was taken priſoner, bound, and ſent on board in the ſame boat with the heads of his two countrymen. I never ſaw horror ſo ſtrongly pictured, as in the face of this man, nor ſo violent a tranſition to extravagant joy, as when he was untied, and told he might

1779. February.

go away in ſafety. He ſhewed us he did not want gratitude, as he frequently afterward returned with preſents of proviſions; and alſo did us other ſervices.

Soon after the village was deſtroyed, we ſaw, coming down the hill, a man, attended by fifteen or twenty boys, holding pieces of white cloth, green boughs, plantains, *&c.* in their hands. I know not how it happened, that this peaceful embaſſy, as ſoon as they were within reach, received the fire of a party of our men. This, however, did not ſtop them. They continued their proceſſion, and the officer on duty came up, in time, to prevent a ſecond diſcharge. As they approached nearer, it was found to be our much-eſteemed friend Kaireekeea, who had fled on our firſt ſetting fire to the village, and had now returned, and deſired to be ſent on board the Reſolution.

When he arrived, we found him exceedingly grave and thoughtful. We endeavoured to make him underſtand the neceſſity we were under of ſetting fire to the village, by which his houſe, and thoſe of his brethren, were unintentionally conſumed. He expoſtulated a little with us on our want of friendſhip, and on our ingratitude. And, indeed, it was not till now, that we learnt the whole extent of the injury we had done them. He told us, that, relying on the promiſes I had made them, and on the aſſurances they had afterward received from the men, who had brought us the remains of Captain Cook, they had not removed their effects back into the country, with the reſt of the inhabitants, but had put every thing that was valuable of their own, as well as what they had collected from us, into a houſe cloſe to the *Morai*, where they had the mortification to ſee it all ſet on fire by ourſelves.

On

On coming on board, he had ſeen the heads of his countrymen lying on the deck, at which he was exceedingly ſhocked, and deſired, with great earneſtneſs, that they might be thrown over-board. This requeſt Captain Clerke inſtantly ordered to be complied with. 1779. February.

In the evening, the watering party returned on board, having met with no farther interruption. We paſſed a gloomy night; the cries and lamentations we heard on ſhore being far more dreadful than ever. Our only conſolation was, the hope that we ſhould have no occaſion, in future, for a repetition of ſuch ſeverities.

It is very extraordinary, that, amidſt all theſe diſturbances, the women of the iſland, who were on board, never offered to leave us, nor diſcovered the ſmalleſt apprehenſions either for themſelves or their friends aſhore. So entirely unconcerned did they appear, that ſome of them, who were on deck when the town was in flames, ſeemed to admire the fight, and frequently cried out, that it was *maitai*, or very fine.

The next morning, Koah came off as uſual to the ſhips. As there exiſted no longer any neceſſity for keeping terms with him, I was allowed to have my own way. When he approached toward the ſide of the ſhip, ſinging his ſong, and offering me a hog, and ſome plantains, I ordered him to keep off, cautioning him never to appear again without Captain Cook's bones, leſt his life ſhould pay the forfeit of his frequent breach of promiſe. He did not appear much mortified with this reception, but went immediately on ſhore, and joined a party of his countrymen, who were pelting the waterers with ſtones. The body of the young man, who had been killed the day before, was found this morning, lying at the entrance of the cave; and ſome of Thurſday 18.

our

1779. February. our people went, and threw a mat over it. Soon after which they ſaw ſome men carrying him off on their ſhoulders, and could hear them ſinging, as they marched, a mournful ſong.

The natives, being at laſt convinced that it was not the want of ability to puniſh them, which had hitherto made us tolerate their provocations, deſiſted from giving us any farther moleſtation; and, in the evening, a Chief called Eappo, who had ſeldom viſited us, but whom we knew to be a man of the very firſt conſequence, came with preſents from Terreeoboo to ſue for peace. Theſe preſents were received, and he was diſmiſſed with the ſame anſwer which had before been given, that, until the remains of Captain Cook ſhould be reſtored, no peace would be granted. We learned from this perſon, that the fleſh of all the bodies of our people, together with the bones of the trunks, had been burnt; that the limb bones of the marines had been divided amongſt the inferior Chiefs; and that thoſe of Captain Cook had been diſpoſed of in the following manner: the head, to a great Chief, called Kahoo-opeon; the hair to Maiha-maiha; and the legs, thighs, and arms to Terreeoboo. After it was dark, many of the inhabitants came off with roots and other vegetables; and we alſo received two large preſents of the ſame articles from Kaireekeea.

Friday 19. The 19th was chiefly taken up in ſending and receiving the meſſages which paſſed between Captain Clerke and Terreeoboo. Eappo was very preſſing, that one of our officers ſhould go on ſhore; and, in the mean time, offered to remain as an hoſtage on board. This requeſt, however, it was not thought proper to comply with; and he left us with a promiſe of bringing the bones the next day. At the

the beach, the waterers did not meet with the leaſt oppoſition from the natives; who, notwithſtanding our cautious behaviour, came amongſt us again, without the ſmalleſt appearance of diffidence or apprehenſion. 1779. February.

Early in the morning of the 20th, we had the ſatisfaction of getting the fore-maſt ſtepped. It was an operation attended with great difficulty, and ſome danger; our ropes being ſo exceedingly rotten, that the purchaſe gave way ſeveral times. Saturday 20.

Between ten and eleven o'clock, we ſaw a great number of people deſcending the hill, which is over the beach, in a kind of proceſſion, each man carrying a ſugar-cane or two on his ſhoulders, and bread-fruit, *taro*, and plantains in his hand. They were preceded by two drummers; who, when they came to the water-ſide, ſat down by a white flag, and began to beat their drums, while thoſe who had followed them, advanced, one by one; and, having depoſited the preſents they had brought, retired in the ſame order. Soon after, Eappo came in ſight, in his long feathered cloak, bearing ſomething with great ſolemnity in his hands; and having placed himſelf on a rock, he made ſigns for a boat to be ſent him.

Captain Clerke, conjecturing that he had brought the bones of Captain Cook, which proved to be the fact, went himſelf in the pinnace to receive them; and ordered me to attend him in the cutter. When we arrived at the beach, Eappo came into the pinnace, and delivered to the Captain the bones wrapped up in a large quantity of fine new cloth, and covered with a ſpotted cloak of black and white feathers. He afterward attended us to the Reſolution; but could not be prevailed upon to go on board; probably not chooſing, from a ſenſe of decency, to be preſent at the opening

1779. February. opening of the bundle. We found in it both the hands of Captain Cook entire, which were well known from a remarkable ſcar on one of them, that divided the thumb from the fore-finger, the whole length of the metacarpal bone; the ſkull, but with the ſcalp ſeparated from it, and the bones that form the face wanting; the ſcalp, with the hair upon it cut ſhort, and the ears adhering to it; the bones of both arms, with the ſkin of the fore-arms hanging to them; the thigh and leg-bones joined together, but without the feet. The ligaments of the joints were entire; and the whole bore evident marks of having been in the fire, except the hands, which had the fleſh left upon them, and were cut in ſeveral places, and crammed with ſalt, apparently with an intention of preſerving them. The ſcalp had a cut in the back part of it, but the ſkull was free from any fracture. The lower jaw and feet, which were wanting, Eappo told us, had been ſeized by different Chiefs, and that Terreeoboo was uſing every means to recover them.

Sunday 21. The next morning, Eappo, and the king's ſon, came on board, and brought with them the remaining bones of Captain Cook; the barrels of his gun, his ſhoes, and ſome other trifles that belonged to him. Eappo took great pains to convince us, that Terreeoboo, Maiha-maiha, and himſelf were moſt heartily deſirous of peace; that they had given us the moſt convincing proof of it in their power; and that they had been prevented from giving it ſooner by the other Chiefs, many of whom were ſtill our enemies. He lamented, with the greateſt ſorrow, the death of ſix Chiefs we had killed, ſome of whom, he ſaid, were amongſt our beſt friends. The cutter, he told us, was taken away by Pareea's people; very probably in revenge for the blow that had been

been given him; and that it had been broken up the next day. The arms of the marines, which we had alſo demanded, he aſſured us, had been carried off by the common people, and were irrecoverable; the bones of the Chief alone having been preſerved, as belonging to Terreeoboo and the *Erees*. 1779. February.

Nothing now remained, but to perform the laſt offices to our great and unfortunate commander. Eappo was diſmiſſed with orders to *taboo* all the bay; and, in the afternoon, the bones having been put into a coffin, and the ſervice read over them, they were committed to the deep with the uſual military honours. What our feelings were on this occaſion, I leave the world to conceive; thoſe who were preſent know, that it is not in my power to expreſs them.

During the forenoon of the 22d, not a canoe was ſeen paddling in the bay; the *taboo*, which Eappo had laid on it the day before, at our requeſt, not being yet taken off. At length Eappo came off to us. We aſſured him, that we were now entirely ſatisfied; and that, as the *Orono* was buried, all remembrance of what had paſſed was buried with him. We afterward deſired him to take off the *taboo*, and to make it known, that the people might bring their proviſions as uſual. The ſhips were ſoon ſurrounded with canoes, and many of the Chiefs came on board, expreſſing great ſorrow at what had happened, and their ſatisfaction at our reconciliation. Several of our friends, who did not viſit us, ſent preſents of large hogs, and other proviſions. Amongſt the reſt came the old treacherous Koah, but was refuſed admittance. Monday 22.

As we had now every thing ready for ſea, Captain Clerke imagining, that, if the news of our proceedings ſhould

1779. February. reach the Iſlands to leeward before us, it might have a bad effect, gave orders to unmoor. About eight in the evening we diſmiſſed all the natives; and Eappo, and the friendly Kaireekeea, took an affectionate leave of us. We immediately weighed, and ſtood out of the bay. The natives were collected on the ſhore in great numbers; and, as we paſſed along, received our laſt farewels with every mark of affection and good-will.

CHAP.

CHAP. V.

Departure from Karakakooa in Search of an Harbour on the South Eaſt Side of Mowee.—Driven to Leeward by the Eaſterly Winds and Current.—Paſs the Iſland of Tahoorowa.—Deſcription of the South Weſt Side of Mowee.—Run along the Coaſts of Ranai and Morotoi to Woahoo.—Deſcription of the North Eaſt Coaſt of Woahoo.—Unſucceſsful Attempt to water.—Paſſage to Atooi.—Anchor in Wymoa Bay.—Dangerous Situation of the Watering Party on Shore.—Civil Diſſentions in the Iſlands.—Viſit from the contending Chiefs.—Anchor off Oneeheow.—Final Departure from the Sandwich Iſlands.

1779. February.

WE got clear of the land about ten; and, hoiſting in the boats, ſtood to the Northward, with an intention of ſearching for an harbour on the South Eaſt ſide of Mowee, which we had heard frequently mentioned by the natives. The next morning we found ourſelves driven to leeward by a heavy ſwell from the North Eaſt; and a freſh gale, ſpringing up from the ſame quarter, carried us ſtill farther to the Weſtward. At midnight we tacked, and ſtood to the South for four hours, in order to keep clear of the land; and, at day-break, we found ourſelves ſtanding toward a ſmall barren iſland, called Tahoorowa, which lies ſeven or eight miles to the South Weſt of Mowee.

Monday 22. Tueſday 23. Wedneſ. 24.

1779. February.

All proſpect of examining more nearly the South Eaſt parts of Mowee being now deſtroyed, we bore away, and ran along the South Eaſt ſide of Tahoorowa. As we were ſteering cloſe round its Weſtern extremity, with an intention of fetching the Weſt ſide of Mowee, we ſuddenly ſhoaled our water, and obſerved the ſea breaking on ſome detached rocks, almoſt right a-head. This obliged us to keep away a league and a half, when we again ſteered to the Northward; and, after paſſing over a bank, with nineteen fathoms water, ſtood for a paſſage between Mowee and an iſland called Ranai. At noon, the latitude was, by obſervation, 20° 42′ North, and the longitude 203° 22′ Eaſt; the Southern extremity of Mowee bearing Eaſt South Eaſt, quarter Eaſt; the Southern extremity of Ranai Weſt North Weſt, quarter Weſt; Morotoi, North Weſt and by North; and the Weſtern extremity of Tahoorowa, South by Eaſt, ſeven miles diſtant. Our longitude was accurately deduced from obſervations made by the time-keeper before and after noon, compared with the longitude found by a great many diſtances of the moon from the ſun and ſtars, which were alſo obſerved the ſame day.

In the afternoon, the weather being calm, with light airs from the Weſt, we ſtood on to the North North Weſt; but, at ſun-ſet, obſerving a ſhoal, which appeared to ſtretch to a conſiderable diſtance from the Weſt point of Mowee, toward the middle of the paſſage, and the weather being unſettled, we tacked, and ſtood toward the South.

The South Weſt ſide of this iſland, which we now had paſſed without being able to get near the ſhore, forms the ſame diſtant view with the North Eaſt, as ſeen on our return from the North, in November 1778; the mountainous parts, which

which are connected by a low, flat isthmus, appearing at first like two separate islands. This deception continued on the South West side, till we approached within eight or ten leagues of the coast, which, bending inward, to a great depth, formed a fine capacious bay. The Westernmost point, off which the shoal we have just mentioned runs, is made remarkable by a small hillock, to the Southward of which there is a fine sandy bay, with several huts on the shore, and a number of cocoa-nut trees growing about them. 1779. February.

During the course of the day, we were visited by several of the natives, who came off to sell provisions; and we soon found, that they had heard of our late unfortunate transactions at Owhyhee. They were very curious to learn the particulars, from a woman who had concealed herself on board the Resolution, in order to take her passage to Atooi; inquiring eagerly after Pareea, and some other Chiefs, and appearing much shocked at the death of Kaneena, and his brother. We had, however, the satisfaction to find, that, in whatever light the woman might have represented this business, it had no bad effect on their behaviour, which was remarkably civil and submissive.

The weather continued variable, during the night; but in the morning of the 25th, having the wind at East, we ran along the South side of Ranai, till near noon; after which, we had calms and baffling winds till evening, when we steered, with a light Easterly breeze, for the West part of Morotoi. In the course of the day, the current, which, from the time we left Karakakooa Bay, had set from the North East, changed its direction to the South East. Thursday 25.

During the night, the wind was again variable; but early next Friday 26.

1779. February. next morning, it ſettled at Eaſt, and blew ſo freſh, as to oblige us to double-reef the top-ſails. At ſeven, on hauling round the Weſt point of Morotoi, we opened a ſmall bay, at the diſtance of about two leagues, with a fine ſandy beach; but ſeeing no appearance of freſh water, we ſtood on to the North, in order to get to the windward of Woahoo, an iſland which we had ſeen at our firſt viſit, in January 1778.

At two in the afternoon, we ſaw the land bearing Weſt by North, eight leagues diſtant; and having tacked as ſoon Saturday 27. as it was dark, we again bore away at day-light on the 27th; and at half paſt ten, were within a league of the ſhore, near the middle of the North Eaſt ſide of the iſland.

The coaſt, to the Northward, is formed of detached hills, riſing perpendicularly from the ſea, with ragged and broken ſummits; the ſides covered with wood, and the vallies between them of a fertile and well-cultivated appearance. To the Southward, we ſaw an extenſive bay, bounded by a low point of land to the South Eaſt, which was covered with cocoa-nut trees; and off it ſtood a high inſulated rock, about a mile from the ſhore. The hazineſs of the weather prevented our ſeeing diſtinctly the land to the Southward of the point; we could only perceive that it was high and broken.

As the wind continued to blow very freſh, we thought it dangerous to entangle ourſelves with a lee-ſhore; and therefore did not attempt to examine the bay, but hauled up, and ſteered to the Northward in the direction of the coaſt. At noon we were abreaſt of the North point of the iſland, about two leagues from the land, which is low and flat, and has a reef ſtretching off it to the diſtance of near a mile and a half. The latitude, by obſervation, 21° 50′ North, longitude

longitude 202° 15′ Eaſt; the extreme parts of the iſland in ſight, bearing South South Eaſt, quarter Eaſt, and South Weſt by South, three-quarters Weſt. 1779. February.

Between the North point and a diſtant head-land, which we ſaw to the South Weſt, the land bends inward conſiderably, and appeared likely to afford a good road. We therefore directed our courſe along the ſhore, at the diſtance of about a mile, carrying regular ſoundings from twenty to thirteen fathoms. At a quarter paſt two, the ſight of a fine river, running through a deep valley, induced us to come to an anchor in thirteen fathoms water, with a ſandy bottom; the extreme points of the bay bearing South Weſt by Weſt half Weſt, and North Eaſt by Eaſt three-quarters Eaſt; and the mouth of the river South Eaſt half Eaſt, one mile diſtant. In the afternoon, I attended the two Captains on ſhore, where we found but few of the natives, and thoſe moſtly women; the men, they told us, were gone to Morotoi to fight Tahyterree; but that their Chief Perreeoranee, who had ſtayed behind, would certainly viſit us, as ſoon as he heard of our arrival.

We were much diſappointed to find the water had a brackiſh taſte, for two hundred yards up the river, owing to the marſhy ground through which it empties itſelf into the ſea. Beyond this, it was perfectly freſh, and formed a fine running ſtream, along the ſide of which I walked, till I came to the conflux of two ſmall rivulets, that branched off to the right and left of a remarkably ſteep and romantic mountain. The banks of this river, and indeed the whole we ſaw of the North Weſt part of Woahoo, are well cultivated, and full of villages; and the face of the country is uncommonly beautiful and pictureſque.

As the watering at this place would have been attended with

1779. February. with great labour, I was ſent to examine the coaſt to leeward; but not being able to land, on account of a reef of coral, which ſtretched along the ſhore to the diſtance of half a mile, Captain Clerke determined, without farther loſs of time, to proceed to Atooi. At eight in the morning, we weighed, and ſtood to the Northward, till day-light on Sunday 28. the 28th, when we bore away for that iſland, which we were in ſight of by noon; and about ſunſet, were off its Eaſtern extremity, which ſhews itſelf in a fine, green, flat point.

It being too late to run for the road, on the South Weſt ſide of the iſland, where we had been the laſt year, we paſſed the night in plying on and off, and at nine the next March. Monday 1. morning, came to an anchor in twenty-five fathoms water, and moored with the beſt bower in thirty-eight fathoms, the bluff-head, on the Weſt ſide of the village, bearing North Eaſt by North three-quarters Eaſt, two miles diſtant; the extremes of the iſland, North Weſt by Weſt three-quarters Weſt, and South Eaſt by Eaſt half Eaſt; the iſland Oneeheow Weſt by South half Weſt. In running down to the road, from the South Eaſt point of the iſland, we ſaw the appearance of ſhoal water, in ſeveral places, at a conſiderable diſtance from the land; and when we were about two miles to the Eaſtward of the anchoring-place, and two or three miles from the ſhore, we got into four and half fathoms water, although our ſoundings had uſually been ſeven and eight fathoms.

We had no ſooner anchored in our old ſtation, than ſeveral canoes came along-ſide of us; but we could obſerve, that they did not welcome us with the ſame cordiality in their manner, and ſatisfaction in their countenances, as when we were here before. As ſoon as they got on board, one of the men

men began to tell us, that we had left a diſorder amongſt their women, of which ſeveral perſons of both ſexes had died. He was himſelf afflicted with the venereal diſeaſe, and gave a very full and minute account of the various ſymptoms with which it had been attended. As there was not the ſlighteſt appearance of that diſorder amongſt them on our firſt arrival, I am afraid it is not to be denied, that we were the authors of this irreparable miſchief. 1779. March.

Our principal object here was to water the ſhips with the utmoſt expedition; and I was ſent on ſhore early in the afternoon, with the pinnace and launch laden with caſks. The gunner of the Reſolution accompanied me to trade for proviſions; and we had a guard of five marines. We found a conſiderable number of people collected upon the beach, who received us at firſt with great kindneſs; but as ſoon as we had got the caſks on ſhore, began to be exceedingly troubleſome. Former experience having taught me how difficult it was to repreſs this diſpoſition, without having recourſe to the authority of their Chiefs, I was very ſorry to find, that they were all at another part of the iſland. Indeed we ſoon felt the want of their aſſiſtance; for it was with great difficulty I was able to form a circle, according to our uſual practice, for the convenience and ſecurity of the trading party; and had no ſooner done it, and poſted guards to keep off the crowd, than I ſaw a man laying hold of the bayonet of one of the ſoldiers muſquets, and endeavouring, with all his force, to wrench it out of his hand. On my coming up to them, the native let go his hold and retired; but returned in a moment, with a ſpear in one hand, and dagger in the other; and his countrymen had much ado to reſtrain him from trying his proweſs with the ſoldier. This fray was occaſioned by the latter's having given the man a

1779. March.

ſlight prick with his bayonet, in order to make him keep without the line.

I now perceived, that our ſituation required great circumſpection and management; and accordingly gave the ſtricteſt orders, that no one ſhould fire, nor have recourſe to any other act of violence, without poſitive commands. As ſoon as I had given theſe directions, I was called to the aſſiſtance of the watering party, where I found the natives equally inclined to miſchief. They had demanded from our people a large hatchet for every caſk of water; and this not being complied with, they would not ſuffer the ſailors to roll them down to the boats.

I had no ſooner joined them, than one of the natives advanced up to me, with great inſolence, and made the ſame claim. I told him, that, as a friend, I was very willing to preſent him with a hatchet, but that I ſhould certainly carry off the water, without paying any thing for it; and I immediately ordered the pinnace men to proceed in their buſineſs, and called three marines from the traders to protect them.

Though this ſhew of ſpirit ſucceeded ſo far as to make the natives deſiſt from any open attempt to interrupt us, they ſtill continued to behave in the moſt teaſing and provoking manner. Whilſt ſome of them, under pretence of aſſiſting the men in rolling down the caſks, turned them out of their courſe, and gave them a wrong direction; others were ſtealing the hats from off the ſailors heads, pulling them backward by their clothes, or tripping up their heels; the whole crowd, all this time, ſhouting and laughing, with a ſtrange mixture of childiſhneſs and malice. They afterward found means to ſteal the cooper's bucket, and took away his bag by force; but the objects they

1779. March.

they were moſt eager to poſſeſs themſelves of, were the muſquets of the marines, who were, every inſtant, complaining of their attempts to force them out of their hands. Though they continued, for the moſt part, to pay great deference and reſpect to me, yet they did not ſuffer me to eſcape without contributing my ſhare to their ſtock of plunder. One of them came up to me with a familiar air, and with great management diverted my attention, whilſt another, wrenching the hanger, which I held careleſly in my hand, from me, ran off with it like lightning.

It was in vain to think of repelling this inſolence by force; guarding therefore againſt its effects, in the beſt manner we were able, we had nothing to do but to ſubmit patiently to it. My apprehenſions were, however, a little alarmed, by the information I ſoon after received from the ſerjeant of marines, who told me, that, turning ſuddenly round, he ſaw a man behind me holding a dagger in the poſition of ſtriking. In this he might poſſibly be miſtaken; yet our ſituation was certainly alarming and critical, and the ſmalleſt error on our ſide might have been fatal to us. As our people were ſeparated into three ſmall parties, one at the lake, filling caſks; another rolling them down to the ſhore; and the third, at ſome diſtance, purchaſing proviſions; it had once occurred to me, that it might be proper to collect them all together, and to execute and protect one duty at a time. But on ſecond thoughts, I judged it more adviſeable to let them continue as they were. In caſe of a real attack, our whole force, however advantageouſly diſpoſed, could have made but a poor reſiſtance. On the other hand, I thought it of ſome conſequence to ſhew the natives, that we were under no fears; and, what was ſtill more ma-

1779. March. terial, the crowd was, by this means, kept divided, and a conſiderable part of them fully employed in bartering proviſions.

It is probable, that their dread of the effects of our arms, was the principal cauſe of their backwardneſs in attacking us; and indeed the confidence we appeared to place in this advantage, by oppoſing only five marines to their whole force, muſt have raiſed in them a very high idea of our ſuperiority. It was our buſineſs to keep up this opinion as much as poſſible; and in juſtice to the whole party, I muſt obſerve, that no men could poſſibly behave better, for the purpoſe of ſtrengthening theſe impreſſions. Whatever could be taken in jeſt, they bore with the utmoſt temper and patience; and whenever any ſerious attempt was made to interrupt them, they oppoſed it with bold looks and menaces. By this management, we ſucceeded ſo far, as to get all the caſks down to the water ſide, without any material accident.

While we were getting them into the launch, the natives, perceiving the opportunity of plundering would ſoon be over, became every moment more daring and inſolent. On this occaſion, I was indebted to the ſerjeant of marines for ſuggeſting to me, the advantage that would ariſe from ſending off his party firſt into the boats; by which means, the muſquets of the ſoldiers, which, as I have already mentioned, were the objects the iſlanders had principally in view, would be removed out of their reach; and in caſe of an attack, the marines themſelves might be employed more effectually in our defence, than if they were on ſhore.

We had now got every thing into the boats, and only Mr. Anderſon the gunner, a ſeaman of the boat's crew, and myſelf,

myſelf, remained on ſhore. As the pinnace lay beyond the ſurf, through which we were obliged to ſwim, I told them to make the beſt of their way to it, and that I ſhould follow them. With this order I was ſurprized to find them both refuſe to comply; and the conſequence was a conteſt amongſt us, who ſhould be the laſt on ſhore. It ſeems, that ſome haſty words I had juſt before uſed to the ſailor, which he thought reflected on his courage, was the cauſe of this odd fancy in him; and the old gunner, finding a point of honour ſtarted, thought he could not well avoid taking a part in it. In this ridiculous ſituation we might have remained ſome time, had not our diſpute been ſoon ſettled by the ſtones that began to fly about us, and by the cries of the people from the boats, to make haſte, as the natives were following us into the water with clubs and ſpears. I reached the ſide of the pinnace firſt, and finding Mr. Anderſon was at ſome diſtance behind, and not yet entirely out of danger, I called out to the marines, to fire one muſquet. In the hurry of executing my orders, they fired two; and when I got into the boat, I ſaw the natives running away, and one man, with a woman ſitting by him, left behind on the beach. The man made ſeveral attempts to riſe, without being able; and it was with much regret, I perceived him to be wounded in the groin. The natives ſoon after returned, and ſurrounded the wounded man, brandiſhing their ſpears and daggers at us, with an air of threatening and defiance; but before we reached the ſhips, we ſaw ſome perſons, whom we ſuppoſed to be the Chiefs, now arrived, driving them away from the ſhore.

1779. March.

During our abſence, Captain Clerke had been under the greateſt anxiety for our ſafety. And theſe apprehenſions were

1779. March. were conſiderably increaſed, from his having entirely miſtaken the drift of the converſation he had held with ſome natives who had been on board. The frequent mention of the name of Captain Cook, with other ſtrong and circumſtantial deſcriptions of death and deſtruction, made him conclude, that the knowledge of the unfortunate events at Owhyhee had reached them, and that theſe were what they alluded to; whereas all they had in view was, to make known to him the wars that had ariſen, in conſequence of the goats that Captain Cook had left at Oneeheow, and the ſlaughter of the poor goats themſelves, during the ſtruggle for the property of them. Captain Clerke, applying this earneſtneſs of converſation, and theſe terrible repreſentations, to our calamitous tranſactions at Owhyhee, and to an indication of revenge, kept his teleſcope fixed upon us, and the moment he ſaw the ſmoke of the muſquets, ordered the boats to be manned and armed, and to put off to our aſſiſtance.

Tueſday 2. The next morning, I was again ordered on ſhore, with the watering party. The riſk we had run the preceding day determined Captain Clerke to ſend a conſiderable force from both ſhips for our guard, amounting in all to forty men under arms. This precaution, however, was now unneceſſary; for we found the beach left entirely to ourſelves, and the ground between the landing-place and the lake, *tabooed* with ſmall white flags. We concluded, from this appearance, that ſome of the Chiefs had certainly viſited this quarter; and that, not being able to ſtay, they had kindly and conſiderately taken this ſtep, for our greater ſecurity and convenience. We ſaw ſeveral men armed with long ſpears and daggers, on the other ſide of the river, on our right; but they did not offer to give us the leaſt moleſtation.

leſtation. Their women came over, and ſat down on the banks cloſe by us, and at noon we prevailed on ſome of the men to bring hogs and roots for our people, and to dreſs them for us. As ſoon as we had left the beach, they came down to the ſea-ſide, and one of them threw a ſtone at us; but his conduct ſeeming to be highly diſapproved of by all the reſt, we did not think it proper to ſhew any reſentment. 1779. March.

The next day, we completed our watering, without meeting with any material difficulty. On our return to the ſhips, we found that ſeveral Chiefs had been on board, and had made excuſes for the behaviour of their countrymen, attributing their riotous conduct to the quarrels which ſubſiſted at that time amongſt the principal people of the iſland, and which had occaſioned a general want of order and ſubordination amongſt them. The government of Atooi was in diſpute between Toneoneo, who had the ſupreme power when we were here laſt year, and a boy named Teavee. They are both, by different fathers, the grandſons of Perreeorannee, king of Woahoo, who had given the government of Atooi to the former, and that of Oneeheow to the latter. The quarrel had ariſen about the goats we had left at Oneeheow the laſt year; the right of property in which was claimed by Toneoneo, on the pretence of that iſland's being a dependency of his. The friends of Teavee inſiſting on the right of poſſeſſion, both parties prepared to maintain their pretenſions by force; and, a few days before our arrival, a battle had been fought, in which Toneoneo had been worſted. The conſequence of this victory was likely to affect Toneoneo in a much deeper manner than by the mere loſs of the objects in diſpute; for the mother of Teavee, having married a ſecond huſband, who was a Chief Wedneſ. 3.

of

1779. March. of Atooi, and at the head of a powerful faction there, he thought that the preſent opportunity was not to be neglected, of driving Toneoneo entirely out of the iſland, and of advancing his ſon-in-law to the government. I have already had occaſion to mention, that the goats, which had increaſed to the number of ſix, and would, probably, in a few years, have ſtocked all theſe iſlands, were deſtroyed in the conteſt.

Thurſday 4. On the 4th, the mother and ſiſter of the young prince and his father-in-law, with many other Chiefs of that party, came on board the Reſolution, and made ſeveral curious and valuable preſents to Captain Clerke. Amongſt the former, were ſome fiſh-hooks, which they aſſured us were made of the bones of our old friend Terreeoboo's father, who had been killed in an unſucceſsful deſcent upon the iſland of Woahoo; and a fly-flap, preſented to him by the prince's ſiſter, the handle of which was a human bone, that had been given her as a trophy by her father-in-law. Young Teavee was not of the company, being engaged, as we were told, in performing ſome religious ceremonies, in conſequence of the victory he had obtained, which were to laſt twenty days.

Friday 5. Saturday 6. This, and the two following days, were employed on ſhore, in completing the Diſcovery's water; and the carpenters were buſy on board, in caulking the ſhips, and in making other preparations for our next cruiſe. The natives deſiſted from giving us any further diſturbance; and we procured from them a plentiful ſupply of pork and vegetables.

At this time, an Indian brought a piece of iron on board the Diſcovery to be faſhioned into the ſhape of a *pahooah*. It was carefully examined both by the officers and men, and

and appeared to be the bolt of ſome large ſhip timbers. They were not able to diſcover to what nation it belonged; but from the pale colour * of the iron, and its not correſponding in ſhape to our bolts, they concluded that it certainly was not Engliſh. This led them to make a ſtrict inquiry of the native, when and where he got it; and, if they comprehended him right, it had been taken out of a piece of timber, larger than the cable bit, to which he pointed. This piece of wood, they farther underſtood from him to have been driven upon their iſland, ſince we were here in January 1778. 1779. March.

On the 7th, we were ſurprized with a viſit from Toneo-neo. When he heard the dowager princeſs was in the ſhip, it was with great difficulty we could prevail on him to come on board, not from any apprehenſion that he appeared to entertain of his ſafety, but from an unwillingneſs to ſee her. Their meeting was with ſulky and lowering looks on both ſides. He ſtaid but a ſhort time, and ſeemed much dejected; but we remarked, with ſome ſurprize, that the women, both at his coming and going away, proſtrated themſelves before him; and that he was treated by all the natives on board with the reſpect uſually paid to thoſe of his rank. Indeed, it muſt appear ſomewhat extraordinary, that a perſon, who was at this time in a ſtate of actual hoſtility with Teavee's party, and was even prepared for another battle, ſhould truſt himſelf almoſt alone within the power of his enemies. It is, therefore, to be obſerved, that the civil diſſentions, which are very frequent throughout all the South Sea Iſlands, ſeem to be carried on without much acrimony or bloodſhed; and that the depoſed governor ſtill Sunday 7.

* It was evident, that the iron we found in poſſeſſion of the natives at Nootka Sound, and which was moſtly made into knives, was of a much paler ſort than ours.

1779. March. continues to enjoy the rank of an *Eree*, and is left to make uſe of ſuch means as may ariſe for the regaining his loſt conſequence. But I ſhall have occaſion to ſpeak more particularly on this ſubject in the next chapter; in which the beſt account will be given, which we were able to collect, of the political ſtate of thoſe countries.

Monday 8. On the 8th, at nine in the morning, we weighed, and ſailed toward Oneeheow; and, at three in the afternoon, anchored in twenty fathoms water, nearly on the ſame ſpot as in the year 1778. We moored with the other anchor in twenty-ſix fathoms water. The high bluff, on the South end of the iſland, bore Eaſt South Eaſt; the North point of the road, North half Eaſt; and a bluff head to the South of it, North Eaſt by North. During the night, we had a ſtrong

Tueſday 9. gale from the Eaſtward; and, in the morning of the 9th, found the ſhip had driven a whole cable's length, and brought both anchors almoſt ahead. We ſhortened in the beſt bower cable; but the wind blowing too freſh to un-

Wedneſ. 10. Thurſday 11. moor, we were obliged to remain, this and the two following days, with the anchors ſtill ahead.

Friday 12. On the 12th, the weather being moderate, the maſter was ſent to the North Weſt ſide of the iſland, to look for a more convenient place for anchoring. He returned in the evening, having found, cloſe round the Weſt point of the road where we now lay, which is alſo the Weſternmoſt point of the iſland, a fine bay, with good anchorage, in eighteen fathoms water, a clear ſandy bottom, not a mile from the beach, on which the ſurf beats, but not ſo as to hinder landing. The direction of the points of the bay were North by Eaſt, and South by Weſt; and, in that line, the ſoundings ſeven, eight, and nine fathoms. On the North ſide of the bay was a ſmall village; and a quarter of a mile to the

the Eaſtward were four ſmall wells of good water; the road to them level, and fit for rolling caſks. Mr. Bligh went afterward ſo far to the North as to ſatisfy himſelf, that Oreehoua was a ſeparate iſland from Oneeheow; and that there was a paſſage between them; which, before, we only conjectured to exiſt. 1779. March.

In the afternoon we hoiſted in all the boats, and made ready for going to ſea in the morning.

CHAP. VI.

General Account of the Sandwich Iſlands.—Their Number, Names, and Situation.—OWHYHEE.—*Its Extent, and Diviſion into Diſtricts.—Account of its Coaſts, and the adjacent Country.—Volcanic Appearances.—Snowy Mountains.—Their Height determined.—Account of a Journey into the interior Parts of the Country.*—MOWEE.—TAHOOROWA.—MOROTOI.—RANAI.—WOAHOO.—ATOOI.—ONEEHEOW. OREEHOUA.—TAHOORA.—*Climate.—Winds.—Currents.—Tides.—Animals and Vegetables.—Aſtronomical Obſervations.*

1779. March. AS we are now about to take our final leave of the Sandwich Iſlands, it will not be improper to introduce here ſome general account of their ſituation and natural hiſtory, and of the manners and cuſtoms of the inhabitants.

This ſubject has indeed been, in ſome meaſure, preoccupied by perſons far more capable of doing it juſtice, than I can pretend to be. Had Captain Cook and Mr. Anderſon lived to avail themſelves of the advantages which we enjoyed by a return to theſe iſlands, it cannot be queſtioned, that the Public would have derived much additional information from the ſkill and diligence of two ſuch accurate obſervers. The reader will therefore lament with me our common misfortune, which hath deprived him of the labours of ſuch ſuperior abilities, and impoſed on me the taſk of preſenting him with the beſt ſupplementary account the various duties of my ſtation permitted me to furniſh.

This

1779. March.

This group conſiſts of eleven iſlands, extending in latitude from 18° 54′ to 22° 15′ North; and in longitude from 199° 36′ to 205° 06′ Eaſt. They are called by the natives; 1. Owhyhee. 2. Mowee. 3. Ranai, or Oranai. 4. Morotinnee, or Morokinnee. 5. Kaĥowrowee, or Tahoorowa. 6. Morotoi, or Morokoi. 7. Woahoo, or Oahoo. 8. Atooi, Atowi, or Towi, and ſometimes Kowi *. 9. Neeheehow, or Oneeheow. 10. Oreehoua, or Reehoua; and, 11. Tahoora; and are all inhabited, excepting Morotinnee and Tahoora. Beſides the iſlands above enumerated, we were told by the Indians, that there is another called Modoopapapa †, or Komodoopapapa, lying to the Weſt South Weſt of Tahoora, which is low and ſandy, and viſited only for the purpoſe of catching turtle and ſea-fowl; and, as I could never learn that they knew of any others, it is probable that none exiſt in their neighbourhood.

They were named by Captain Cook the *Sandwich Iſlands*, in honour of the EARL of SANDWICH, under whoſe adminiſtration he had enriched geography with ſo many ſplendid and important diſcoveries; a tribute juſtly due to that noble perſon for the liberal ſupport theſe voyages derived from his power, in whatever could extend their utility, or promote their ſucceſs; for the zeal with which he ſeconded the views of that great navigator; and, if I may be allowed to add the voice of private gratitude, for the generous protection, which, ſince the death of their unfortunate commander, he has afforded all the officers that ſerved under him.

* It is to be obſerved, that, among the windward Iſlands, the *k* is uſed inſtead of the *t*, as *Morokoi* inſtead of *Morotoi*, &c.

† *Modoo* ſignifies iſland; *papapa*, flat. This iſland is called *Tammatapappa*, by Captain Cook, vol. II. p. 222.

Owhyhee,

1779. March.

Owhyhee, the Eaſternmoſt, and by much the largeſt, of theſe iſlands, is of a triangular ſhape, and nearly equilateral. The angular points make the North, Eaſt, and South extremities, of which the Northern is in latitude 20° 17′ North, longitude 204° 02′ Eaſt: the Eaſtern in latitude 19° 34′ North, longitude 205° 06′ Eaſt: and the Southern extremity in latitude 18° 54′ North, longitude 204° 15′ Eaſt. Its greateſt length, which lies in a direction nearly North and South, is 28½ leagues; its breadth is 24 leagues; and it is about 255 geographical, or 293 Engliſh, miles in circumference. The whole iſland is divided into ſix large diſtricts; Amakooa and Aheedoo, which lie on the North Eaſt ſide; Apoona and Kaoo on the South Eaſt; Akona and Koaarra on the Weſt.

The diſtricts of Amakooa and Aheedoo are ſeparated by a mountain called Mounah Kaah (or the mountain Kaah), which riſes in three peaks, perpetually covered with ſnow, and may be clearly ſeen at 40 leagues diſtance.

To the North of this mountain the coaſt conſiſts of high and abrupt cliffs, down which fall many beautiful caſcades of water. We were once flattered with the hopes of meeting with a harbour round a bluff head, in latitude 20° 10′ North, and longitude 204° 26′ Eaſt: but, on doubling the point, and ſtanding cloſe in, we found it connected, by a low valley, with another high head to the North Weſt. The country riſes inland with a gentle aſcent, is interſected by deep narrow glens, or rather chaſms, and appeared to be well cultivated and ſprinkled over with a number of villages. The ſnowy mountain is very ſteep, and the lower part of it covered with wood.

The coaſt of Aheedoo, which lies to the South of Mouna Kaah, is of a moderate height, and the interior parts appear more

more even than the country to the North Weſt, and leſs broken by ravines. Off theſe two diſtricts we cruized for almoſt a month; and, whenever our diſtance from ſhore would permit it, were ſure of being ſurrounded by canoes laden with all kinds of refreſhments. We had frequently a very heavy ſea, and great ſwell, on this ſide of the iſland, and as we had no ſoundings, and could obſerve much foul ground off the ſhore, we never approached nearer the land than two or three leagues, excepting on the occaſion already mentioned. 1779. March.

The coaſt to the North Eaſt of Apoona, which forms the Eaſtern extremity of the iſland, is low and flat; the acclivity of the inland parts is very gradual, and the whole country covered with cocoa-nut and bread-fruit trees. This, as far as we could judge, is the fineſt part of the iſland, and we were afterward told that the king had a place of reſidence here. At the South Weſt extremity the hills riſe abruptly from the ſea-ſide, leaving but a narrow border of low ground toward the beach. We were pretty near the ſhore at this part of the iſland, and found the ſides of the hills covered with a fine verdure; but the country ſeemed to be very thinly inhabited. On doubling the Eaſt point of the iſland, we came in ſight of another ſnowy mountain, called Mouna Roa (or the extenſive mountain), which continued to be a very conſpicuous object all the while we were ſailing along the South Eaſt ſide. It is flat at the top, making what is called by mariners table-land: the ſummit was conſtantly buried in ſnow, and we once ſaw its ſides alſo ſlightly covered for a conſiderable way down; but the greateſt part of this diſappeared again in a few days.

According to the tropical line of ſnow, as determined by Mr. Condamine, from obſervations taken on the Cordilleras, this

1779. March.

this mountain muſt be at leaſt 16,020 feet high, which exceeds the height of the Pico de Teyde, or Peak of Teneriffe, by 724 feet, according to Dr. Heberden's computation, or 3680, according to that of the Chevalier de Borda. The peaks of Mouna Kaah appeared to be about half a mile high; and as they are entirely covered with ſnow, the altitude of their ſummits cannot be leſs than 18,400 feet. But it is probable that both theſe mountains may be conſiderably higher. For, in inſular ſituations, the effects of the warm ſea air muſt neceſſarily remove the line of ſnow, in equal latitudes, to a greater height than where the atmoſphere is chilled on all ſides by an immenſe tract of perpetual ſnow.

The coaſt of Kaoo preſents a proſpect of the moſt horrid and dreary kind: the whole country appearing to have undergone a total change from the effects of ſome dreadful convulſion. The ground is every where covered with cinders, and interſected in many places with black ſtreaks, which ſeem to mark the courſe of a lava that has flowed, not many ages back, from the mountain Roa to the ſhore. The Southern promontory looks like the mere dregs of a volcano. The projecting head-land is compoſed of broken and craggy rocks, piled irregularly on one another, and terminating in ſharp points.

Notwithſtanding the diſmal aſpect of this part of the iſland, there are many villages ſcattered over it, and it certainly is much more populous than the verdant mountains of Apoona. Nor is this circumſtance hard to be accounted for. As theſe iſlanders have no cattle, they have conſequently no uſe for paſturage, and therefore naturally prefer ſuch ground, as either lies more convenient for fiſhing, or is beſt ſuited to the cultivation of yams and plantains. Now amidſt theſe ruins,

ruins, there are many patches of rich ſoil, which are carefully laid out in plantations, and the neighbouring ſea abounds with a variety of moſt excellent fiſh, with which, as well as with other proviſions, we were always plentifully ſupplied. Off this part of the coaſt we could find no ground, at leſs than a cable's length from the ſhore, with a hundred and ſixty fathoms of line, excepting in a ſmall bight to the Eaſtward of the South point, where we had regular ſoundings of fifty and fifty-eight fathoms over a bottom of fine ſand. Before we proceed to the Weſtern diſtricts, it may be neceſſary to remark, that the whole Eaſt ſide of the iſland, from the Northern to the Southern extremity, does not afford the ſmalleſt harbour or ſhelter for ſhipping. 1779. March.

The South Weſt parts of Akona are in the ſame ſtate with the adjoining diſtrict of Kaoo; but farther to the North, the country has been cultivated with great pains, and is extremely populous.

In this part of the iſland is ſituated Karakakooa Bay, which has been already deſcribed. Along the coaſt nothing is ſeen but large maſſes of ſlag, and the fragments of black ſcorched rocks; behind which, the ground riſes gradually for about two miles and a half, and appears to have been formerly covered with looſe burnt ſtones. Theſe the natives have taken the pains of clearing away, frequently to the depth of three feet and upward; which labour, great as it is, the fertility of the ſoil amply repays. Here, in a rich, aſhy mould, they cultivate ſweet potatoes, and the cloth-plant. The fields are incloſed with ſtone-fences, and are interſperſed with groves of cocoa-nut trees. On the riſing ground beyond theſe, the bread-fruit trees are planted, and flouriſh with the greateſt luxuriance.

Koaara extends from the Weſternmoſt point to the Nor-

1779. March.

thern extremity of the iſland; the whole coaſt between them forming an extenſive bay, called Toe-yah-yah, which is bounded to the North by two very conſpicuous hills. Toward the bottom of this bay there is foul, corally ground, extending upward of a mile from the ſhore, without which the ſoundings are regular, with good anchorage, in twenty fathoms. The country, as far as the eye could reach, ſeemed fruitful and well inhabited, the ſoil being in appearance of the ſame kind with the diſtrict of Kaoo; but no freſh water is to be got here.

I have hitherto confined myſelf to the coaſts of this iſland, and the adjacent country, which is all that I had an opportunity of being acquainted with from my own obſervation. The only account I can give of the interior parts, is from the information I obtained from a party, who ſet out, on the afternoon of the 26th of January, on an expedition up the country, with an intention of penetrating as far as they could; and principally of reaching, if poſſible, the ſnowy mountains.

Having procured two natives to ſerve them as guides, they left the village about four o'clock in the afternoon, directing their courſe a little to the Southward of the Eaſt. To the diſtance of three or four miles from the bay, they found the country as before deſcribed; the hills afterward roſe with a more ſudden aſcent, which brought them to the extenſive plantations, that terminate the view of the country, as ſeen from the ſhips.

Theſe plantations conſiſt of the * tarrow or eddy root, and the ſweet potatoe, with plants of the cloth-tree, neatly ſet

* Both the ſweet potatoes, and the tarrow, are here planted four feet from each other: the former was earthed up almoſt to the top of the ſtalk, with about half a buſhel of light

ſet out in rows. The walls that ſeparate them are made of the looſe burnt ſtones, which are got in clearing the ground; and, being entirely concealed by ſugar-canes, planted cloſe on each ſide, make the moſt beautiful fences that can be conceived. The party ſtopped for the night at the ſecond hut they found amongſt the plantations, where they judged themſelves to be about ſix or ſeven miles from the ſhips. They deſcribed the proſpect from this ſpot as very delightful; they ſaw the ſhips in the bay before them; to the left, a continued range of villages, interſperſed with groves of cocoa-nut-trees, ſpreading along the ſea-ſhore; a thick wood ſtretching out of ſight behind them; and to the right, an extent of ground laid out in regular and well-cultivated plantations, as far as the eye could reach. 1779. March.

Near this ſpot, at a diſtance from any other dwelling, the natives pointed out to them the reſidence of an hermit, who, they ſaid, had formerly been a great chief and warrior, but had long ago quitted the ſhores of the iſland, and now never ſtirred from his cottage. They proſtrated themſelves as they approached him, and afterward preſented to him a part of ſuch proviſions as they had brought with them. His behaviour was eaſy and cheerful; he ſcarce ſhewed any marks of aſtoniſhment at the ſight of our people, and though preſſed to accept ſome of our curioſities,

light mould; the latter is left bare to the root, and the mould round it is made in the form of a baſon, in order to hold the rain-water, as this root requires a certain degree of moiſture. It has been before obſerved, that the tarrow, at the Friendly and Society Iſlands, was always planted in low and moiſt ſituations, and, generally, where there was the conveniency of a rivulet to flood it. It was imagined that this mode of culture was abſolutely neceſſary; but we now found, that, with the precaution above mentioned, it ſucceeds equally well in a drier ſituation: indeed, we all remarked, that the tarrow of the Sandwich Iſlands is the beſt we had ever taſted. The plantains are not admitted in theſe plantations, but grow amongſt the bread-fruit trees.

1779. March. he declined the offer, and ſoon withdrew to his cottage. He was deſcribed as by far the oldeſt perſon any of the party had ever ſeen, and judged to be, by thoſe who computed his age at the loweſt, upward of 100 years old.

As our people had imagined the mountain not to be more than ten or twelve miles from the bay, and conſequently, that they ſhould reach it with eaſe early the next morning, an error into which its great height had probably led them, they were now much ſurprized to find the diſtance ſcarce perceptibly diminiſhed. This circumſtance, together with the uninhabited ſtate of the country they were going to enter, made it neceſſary to procure a ſupply of proviſions; and for that purpoſe they diſpatched one of their guides back to the village. Whilſt they were waiting his return, they were joined by ſome of Kaoo's ſervants, whom that benevolent old man had ſent after them, as ſoon as he heard of their journey, laden with refreſhments, and authorized, as their route lay through his grounds, to demand and take away whatever they might have occaſion for.

Our travellers were much aſtoniſhed to find the cold here ſo intenſe; but having no thermometer with them, could judge of it only by their feelings; which, from the warm atmoſphere they had left, muſt have been a very fallacious meaſure. They found it, however, ſo cold, that they could get but little ſleep, and the natives none at all; both parties being diſturbed, the whole night, by continued coughing. As they could not, at this time, be at any very conſiderable height, the diſtance from the ſea being only ſix or ſeven miles, and part of the road on a very moderate aſcent, this extraordinary degree of cold muſt be aſcribed to the eaſterly wind blowing freſh over the ſnowy mountains.

Early

Early on the 27th, they ſet out again, and filled their calibaſhes at an excellent well about half a mile from their hut. Having paſſed the plantations, they came to a thick wood, which they entered by a path made for the convenience of the natives, who go thither to fetch the wild or horſe-plantain, and to catch birds. Their progreſs now became very ſlow, and attended with much labour; the ground being either ſwampy, or covered with large ſtones; the path narrow, and frequently interrupted by trees lying acroſs it, which it was neceſſary to climb over, the thickneſs of the underwood, on both ſides, making it impoſſible to paſs round them. In theſe woods they obſerved, at ſmall diſtances, pieces of white cloth fixed on poles, which they ſuppoſed to be land-marks for the diviſion of property, as they only met with them where the wild plantains grew. The trees, which are of the ſame kind with thoſe we called the ſpice-tree at New Holland, were lofty and ſtraight, and from two to four feet in circumference. 1779. March.

After they had advanced about ten miles in the wood, they had the mortification to find themſelves, on a ſudden, within ſight of the ſea, and at no great diſtance from it; the path having turned imperceptibly to the Southward, and carried them to the right of the mountain, which it was their object to reach. Their diſappointment was greatly increaſed by the uncertainty they were now under of its true bearings, ſince they could not, at this time, get a view of it from the top of the higheſt trees. They, therefore, found themſelves obliged to walk back ſix or ſeven miles to an unoccupied hut, where they had left three of the natives, and two of their own people, with the ſmall ſtock that remained of their proviſions. Here they ſpent the ſecond night;

1779. March.

night; and the air was ſo very ſharp, and ſo little to the liking of their guides, that, by the morning, they had all departed, except one.

The want of proviſions now making it neceſſary to return to ſome of the cultivated parts of the iſland, they quitted the wood by the ſame path they had entered it; and, on their arrival at the plantations, were ſurrounded by the natives, of whom they purchaſed a freſh ſtock of neceſſaries; and prevailed upon two of them to ſupply the place of the guides that were gone away. Having obtained the beſt information in their power, with regard to the direction of their road, the party, being now nine in number, marched along the ſkirts of the wood for ſix or ſeven miles, and then entered it again by a path that bore to the Eaſtward. For the firſt three miles, they paſſed through a foreſt of lofty ſpice-trees, growing on a ſtrong rich loam; at the back of which they found an equal extent of low ſhrubby trees, with much thick underwood, on a bottom of looſe burnt ſtones. This led them to a ſecond foreſt of ſpice-trees, and the ſame rich brown ſoil, which was again ſucceeded by a barren ridge of the ſame nature with the former. This alternate ſucceſſion may, perhaps, afford matter of curious ſpeculation to naturaliſts. The only additional circumſtance I could learn relating to it was, that theſe ridges appeared, as far as they could be ſeen, to run in directions parallel to the ſea-ſhore, and to have Mouna Roa for their centre.

In paſſing through the woods, they found many canoes half-finiſhed; and, here and there, a hut; but ſaw none of the inhabitants. Having penetrated near three miles into the ſecond wood, they came to two huts, where they ſtopped, exceedingly fatigued with the day's journey, having walked

walked not leſs than twenty miles, according to their own computation. As they had met with no ſprings, from the time they left the plantation-ground, and began to ſuffer much from the violence of their thirſt, they were obliged, before the night came on, to ſeparate into parties, and go in ſearch of water; and, at laſt, found ſome, left by rain in the bottom of an unfiniſhed canoe; which, though of the colour of red wine, was to them no unwelcome diſcovery. In the night, the cold was ſtill more intenſe than they had found it before; and though they had wrapped themſelves up in mats and cloths of the country, and kept a large fire between the two huts, they could yet ſleep but very little; and were obliged to walk about the greateſt part of the night. Their elevation was now probably pretty conſiderable, as the ground on which they had travelled had been generally on the aſcent. 1779. March.

On the 29th, at day-break, they ſet out, intending to make their laſt and utmoſt effort to reach the ſnowy mountain; but their ſpirits were much depreſſed, when they found they had expended the miſerable pittance of water they had found the night before. The path, which extended no farther than where canoes had been built, was now at an end; and they were therefore obliged to make their way as well as they could; every now and then climbing up into the higheſt trees, to explore the country round. At eleven o'clock, they came to a ridge of burnt ſtones, from the top of which they ſaw the ſnowy mountain, appearing to be about twelve or fourteen miles from them.

It was here deliberated, whether they ſhould proceed any further, or reſt ſatisfied with the view they now had of Mouna Roa. The road, ever ſince the path ceaſed, had become exceedingly fatiguing; and, every ſtep they advanced,

1779. March.

advanced, was growing ſtill more ſo. The deep chinks, with which the ground was every where broken, being ſlightly covered with moſs, made them ſtumble at almoſt every ſtep; and the intermediate ſpace was a ſurface of looſe burnt ſtones, which broke under their feet like potſherds. They threw ſtones into ſeveral of theſe chinks; which, by the noiſe they made, ſeemed to fall to a conſiderable depth, and the ground ſounded hollow under their feet. Beſides theſe diſcouraging circumſtances, they found their guides ſo averſe to going on, that they believed, whatever their own determinations might have been, they could not have prevailed on them to remain out another night. They, therefore, at laſt agreed to return to the ſhips, after taking a view of the country, from the higheſt trees which the place afforded. From this elevation they ſaw themſelves ſurrounded, on all ſides, with wood; toward the ſea, they could not diſtinguiſh, in the horizon, the ſky from the water; and between them and the ſnowy mountain, was a valley about ſeven or eight miles broad, above which the mountain appeared only as a hill of a moderate ſize.

They reſted this night at a hut in the ſecond wood, and on the 30th, before noon, they had got clear of the firſt, and found themſelves about nine miles to the North Eaſt of the ſhips, toward which they directed their march through the plantations. As they paſſed along, they did not obſerve a ſingle ſpot of ground, that was capable of improvement, left unplanted; and, indeed, it appeared, from their account, hardly poſſible for the country to be cultivated to greater advantage for the purpoſes of the inhabitants, or made to yield them a larger ſupply of neceſſaries for their ſubſiſtence.

ence. They were ſurprized to meet with ſeveral fields of hay; and on inquiring to what uſes it was applied, were told, it was deſigned to cover the young tarrow grounds, in order to preſerve them from being ſcorched by the ſun. They ſaw a few ſcattered huts amongſt the plantations, which ſerved for occaſional ſhelter to the labourers; but no villages at a greater diſtance than four or five miles from the ſea. Near one of them, about four miles from the bay, they found a cave, forty fathoms long, three broad, and of the ſame height. It was open at both ends; the ſides were fluted, as if wrought with a chiſſel, and the ſurface glazed over, probably by the action of fire. 1779. March.

Having given this account of the moſt material circumſtances that occurred on the expedition to the ſnowy mountain, I ſhall now return to the other iſlands that remain to be deſcribed.

The iſland next in ſize, and neareſt in ſituation, to Owhyhee, is MOWEE; which lies at the diſtance of eight leagues North North Weſt from the former, and is 140 geographical miles in circumference. A low iſthmus divides it into two circular peninſulas, of which that to the Eaſt is called Whamadooa, and is double the ſize of the Weſtern peninſula called Owhyrookoo. The mountains in both riſe to an exceeding great height, having been ſeen by us at the diſtance of upward of thirty leagues. The Northern ſhores, like thoſe of Owhyhee, afford no ſoundings; and the country preſents the ſame appearance of verdure and fertility. To the South Eaſt, between this and the adjacent iſles, we had regular depths with a hundred and fifty fathoms, with a ſandy bottom. From the Weſt point, which is low, runs a ſhoal, ſtretching out toward Ranai, to a conſiderable diſtance; and to the Southward of

1779. March.

this, is a fine ſpacious bay, with a ſandy beach, ſhaded with cocoa-nut trees. It is probable that good anchorage might be found here, with ſhelter from the prevailing winds, and that the beach affords a convenient place for landing. The country behind preſents a moſt romantic appearance. The hills riſe almoſt perpendicularly, in a great variety of peaked forms; and their ſteep ſides, and the deep chaſms between them, are covered with trees, amongſt which thoſe of the bread-fruit were obſerved particularly to abound. The tops of theſe hills are entirely bare, and of a reddiſh brown colour. We were informed by the natives, that there is an harbour to the Southward of the Eaſt point, which they affirmed to be ſuperior to that of Karakakooa; and we were alſo told, that, on the North Weſt ſide, there was another harbour, called Keepoo-keepoo.

Tahoorowa is a ſmall iſland lying off the South Weſt part of Mowee, from which it is diſtant three leagues. This iſland is deſtitute of wood, and the ſoil ſeems to be ſandy and barren. Between Tahowrowa and Mowee lies the ſmall uninhabited iſland Morrotinnee.

Morotoi is only two leagues and a half from Mowee to the Weſt North Weſt. The South Weſtern coaſt, which was the only part near which we approached, is very low; but the land riſes backward to a conſiderable height; and, at the diſtance from which we ſaw it, appeared to be entirely without wood. Its produce, we were told, conſiſts chiefly of yams. It may, probably, have freſh water, and, on the South and Weſt ſides, the coaſt forms ſeveral bays, that promiſe good ſhelter from the trade winds.

Ranai is about three leagues diſtant from Mowee and Morotoi, and lies to the South Weſt of the paſſage between theſe

theſe iſlands. The country, to the South, is high and craggy; but the other parts of the iſland had a better aſpect, and appeared to be well inhabited. We were told that it produces very few plantains, and bread-fruit trees; but that it abounds in roots, ſuch as yams, ſweet potatoes, and tarrow. 1779. March.

Woahoo lies to the North Weſt of Morotoi, at the diſtance of about ſeven leagues. As far as we could judge, from the appearance of the North Eaſt and North Weſt parts (for we ſaw nothing of the Southern ſide), it is by far the fineſt iſland of the whole group. Nothing can exceed the verdure of the hills, the variety of wood and lawn, and rich cultivated vallies, which the whole face of the country diſplayed. Having already given a deſcription of the bay, formed by the North and Weſt extremities, in which we came to anchor, I have only to obſerve, that in the bight of the bay, to the South of the anchoring-place, we found rocky foul ground, two miles from the ſhore. Should the ground tackling of a ſhip be weak, and the wind blow ſtrong from the North, to which quarter the road is entirely open, this circumſtance might be attended with ſome danger; but with good cables there would be little riſk, as the ground from the anchoring-place, which is oppoſite to the valley through which the river runs, to the North point, is a fine ſand.

Atooi lies to the North Weſt of Woahoo, and is diſtant from it about twenty-five leagues. The face of the country, to the North Eaſt and North Weſt, is broken and ragged; but to the South it is more even; the hills riſe with a gentle ſlope from the ſea-ſide, and, at ſome diſtance back, are covered with wood. Its productions are the ſame with thoſe of the other iſlands; but the inhabitants far ſurpaſs all the

1779. March.

neighbouring iſlanders in the management of their plantations. In the low grounds, adjoining to the bay where we lay at anchor, theſe plantations were divided by deep and regular ditches; the fences were made with a neatneſs approaching to elegance, and the roads through them were thrown up and finiſhed, in a manner that would have done credit to any European engineer.

Oneeheow lies five leagues to the Weſtward of Atooi. The Eaſtern coaſt is high, and riſes abruptly from the ſea, but the reſt of the iſland conſiſts of low ground; excepting a round bluff head on the South Eaſt point. It produces abundance of yams, and of the ſweet root called *Tee*; but we got from it no other ſort of proviſions.

Oreehoua, and Tahoora, are two ſmall iſlands in the neighbourhood of Oneeheow. The former is a ſingle high hummock, joined by a reef of coral rocks to the Northern extremity of Oneeheow. The latter lies to the South Weſt, and is uninhabited.

The climate of the Sandwich Iſlands differs very little from that of the Weſt India Iſlands, which lie in the ſame latitude. Upon the whole, perhaps, it may be rather more temperate. The thermometer, on ſhore in Karakakooa Bay, never roſe higher than 88°, and that but one day; its mean height, at noon, was 83°. In Wymoa Bay, its mean height at noon was 76°, and when out at ſea, 75°. The mean height of the thermometer at noon, in Jamaica, is about 86°, at ſea 80°.

Whether they be ſubject to the ſame violent winds and hurricanes, we could not diſcover, as we were not there in any of the ſtormy months. However, as the natives gave us no poſitive teſtimony of the fact, and no traces of their effects were any where viſible, it is probable that, in this reſpect,

1779. March.

reſpect, they reſemble the Society and Friendly Iſlands, which are, in a great meaſure, free from theſe dreadful viſitations.

During the four winter months that we remained amongſt theſe iſlands, there was more rain, eſpecially in the interior parts, than uſually falls during the dry ſeaſon in the iſlands of the Weſt Indies. We generally ſaw clouds collecting round the tops of the hills, and producing rain to leeward; but after they are ſeparated from the land by the wind, they diſperſe, and are loſt, and others ſucceed in their place. This happened daily at Owhyhee: the mountainous parts being generally enveloped in a cloud; ſucceſſive ſhowers falling in the inland country; with fine weather, and a clear ſky at the ſea-ſhore.

The winds in general were, from Eaſt South Eaſt to North Eaſt; though they ſometimes varied a few points each way to the North and South; but theſe were light, and of ſhort duration. In the harbour of Karakakooa, we had a conſtant land and ſea-breeze every day and night.

The currents ſeemed very uncertain; ſometimes ſetting to windward; and, at other times, to leeward, without any regularity. They did not appear to be governed by the winds, nor any other cauſe that I can aſſign: they frequently ſet to windward againſt a freſh breeze.

The tides are very regular, flowing and ebbing ſix hours each. The flood comes from the Eaſtward; and it is high water, at the full and change of the moon, forty-five minutes paſt three, apparent time. Their greateſt riſe is two feet ſeven inches; and we always obſerved the water to be four inches higher when the moon was above the horizon, than when it was below.

The quadrupeds in theſe, as in all the other iſlands that have

1779. March.

have been diſcovered in the South ſea, are confined to three ſorts, dogs, hogs, and rats. The dogs are of the ſame ſpecies with thoſe of Otaheite, having ſhort crooked legs, long backs, and pricked ears. I did not obſerve any variety in them, except in their ſkins; ſome having long and rough hair, and others being quite ſmooth. They are about the ſize of a common turnſpit; exceedingly ſluggiſh in their nature; though perhaps this may be more owing to the manner in which they are treated, than to any natural diſpoſition in them. They are, in general, fed, and left to herd, with the hogs; and I do not recollect one inſtance in which a dog was made a companion in the manner we do in Europe. Indeed the cuſtom of eating them is an inſeparable bar to their admiſſion into ſociety; and, as there are neither beaſts of prey in the iſland, nor objects of chace, it is probable, that the ſocial qualities of the dog, its fidelity, attachment, and ſagacity, will remain unknown to the natives.

The number of dogs in theſe iſlands did not appear to be nearly equal, in proportion, to thoſe in Otaheite. But on the other hand, they abound much more in hogs; and the breed is of a larger and weightier kind. The ſupply of proviſions of this kind, which we got from them, was really aſtoniſhing. We were near four months, either cruiſing off the coaſt, or in harbour at Owhyhee. During all this time, a large allowance of freſh pork was conſtantly ſerved to both crews: ſo that our conſumption was computed at about ſixty puncheons of five hundred weight each. Beſides this, and the incredible waſte which, in the midſt of ſuch plenty, was not to be guarded againſt, ſixty puncheons more were ſalted for ſea ſtore. The greateſt part of this ſupply was drawn from the iſland of Owhyhee alone, and yet we could not

1779. March.

not perceive that it was at all drained, or even that the abundance had any way decreaſed.

The birds of theſe iſlands are as beautiful as any we have ſeen during the voyage, and are numerous, though not various. There are four, which ſeem to belong to the *trochili*, or honey-ſuckers of Linnæus; one of which is ſomething larger than a bullfinch; its colour is a fine gloſſy black, the rump, vent, and thighs a deep yellow. It is called by the natives *hoohoo*. Another is of an exceeding bright ſcarlet colour; the wings black, and edged with white; and the tail black; its native name is *eeeeve*. A third, which ſeems to be either a young bird, or a variety of the foregoing, is variegated with red, brown, and yellow. The fourth is entirely green, with a tinge of yellow, and is called *akaiearooa*. There is a ſpecies of thruſh, with a grey breaſt; and a ſmall bird of the flycatcher kind; a rail, with very ſhort wings and no tail, which, on that account, we named *rallus ecaudatus*. Ravens are found here, but they are very ſcarce; their colour is dark brown, inclining to black; and their note is different from the European. Here are two ſmall birds, both of one *genus*, that are very common; one is red, and generally ſeen about the cocoa-nut trees, particularly when they are in flower, from whence it ſeems to derive great part of its ſubſiſtence; the other is green; the tongues of both are long and ciliated, or fringed at the tip. A bird with a yellow head, which, from the ſtructure of its beak, we called a parroquet, is likewiſe very common. It, however, by no means belongs to that tribe, but greatly reſembles the *lexia flavicans*, or yellowiſh croſs-bill of Linnæus.

Here are alſo owls, plovers of two ſorts, one very like the whiſtling plover of Europe; a large white pigeon; a bird

1779. March.

bird with a long tail, whoſe colour is black, the vent and feathers under the wing (which is much longer than is uſually ſeen in the generality of birds, except the birds of paradiſe) are yellow; and the common water or darker hen.

Their vegetable productions are nearly the ſame with the reſt of the South-ſea iſlands. I have before mentioned, that the *tarrow* root is much ſuperior to any we had before taſted, and that we attributed this excellence to the dry method of cultivating it. The bread-fruit trees thrive here, not in ſuch abundance, but produce double the quantity of fruit they do on the rich plains of Otaheite. The trees are nearly of the ſame height, but the branches begin to ſtrike out from the trunk much lower, and with greater luxuriance. Their ſugar-canes are alſo of a very unuſual ſize. One of them was brought to us at Atooi, meaſuring eleven inches and a quarter in circumference; and having fourteen feet eatable.

At Oneeheow they brought us ſeveral large roots of a brown colour, ſhaped like a yam, and from ſix to ten pounds in weight. The juice, which it yields in great abundance, is very ſweet, and of a pleaſant taſte, and was found to be an excellent ſubſtitute for ſugar. The natives are very fond of it, and uſe it as an article of their common diet; and our people alſo found it very palatable and wholeſome. We could not learn to what ſpecies of plant it belonged, having never been able to procure the leaves; but it was ſuppoſed, by our botaniſts, to be the root of ſome kind of fern.

Agreeably to the practice of Captain Cook, I ſhall ſubjoin an abſtract of the aſtronomical obſervations which were made at the obſervatory in Karakakooa Bay, for determining

termining its latitude and longitude, and for finding the rate and error of the time-keeper. To theſe are ſubjoined the mean variation of the compaſs, the dip of the magnetic needle, and a table of the latitude and longitude of the Sandwich Iſlands.

1779. March.

The latitude of the obſervatory, deduced from meridian zenith diſtances of the ſun, eleven ſtars to the South, and four ſtars to the North of the zenith - - - - -	19°	28′	0″	North.
The longitude of the obſervatory, deduced from 253 ſets of lunar obſervations; each ſet conſiſting of ſix obſerved diſtances of the moon from the ſun, or ſtars; 14 of the above ſets were only taken at the obſervatory, 105 ſets being taken whilſt cruizing off Owhyhee; and 134 ſets, when at Atooi and Oneeheow; all theſe being reduced to the obſervatory, by means of the time-keeper - - - - -	204	0	0	Eaſt.
The longitude of the obſervatory, by the time-keeper, on the 19th January 1779, according to its rate, as found at Greenwich - - - - -	214	7	15	Eaſt.
The longitude of the obſervatory, by the time-keeper, on the 19th January 1779, according to its rate, corrected at different places, and laſt at Samganoodha Harbour, in Oonalaſchka -	203	37	22	Eaſt.

1779. March. The daily rate of the time-keeper loſing on mean time, was 9″, 6; and on the 2d February 1779, it was 14ʰ 41′ 1″ too ſlow for mean time.

The variation of the compaſs, by azimuths obſerved on ſhore, with four different compaſſes - - -	8°	6′	0″	Eaſt.
The variation of the compaſs, by azimuths, obſerved on board the Reſolution, with four different compaſſes -	7	32	0	Eaſt.
Dip of the North pole of the magnetic needle on ſhore, with Balanced needle	40	22	30	
Dip of the North pole of the magnetic needle on ſhore, with Unbalanced or plain needle	40	41	15	
Dip of the North pole of the magnetic needle on board, with Balanced needle	41	50	0	
Dip of the North pole of the magnetic needle on board, with Unbalanced needle	40	30	45	

A Table of the Latitude and Longitude of the Sandwich Iſlands.

		Latitude.	Longitude.
Owhyhee	The North point - -	20° 17′	204° 2′
	South point - - -	18 54	204 15
	Eaſt point - -	19 34	205 6
	Karakakooa Bay - -	19 28	204 0
Mowee	Eaſt point - - -	20 50	204 4
	South point - - -	20 34	203 48
	Weſt point - - -	20 54	203 24
Morokinnee - - - -		20 39	203 33
Tahoorowa - - - -		20 38	203 27
Ranai. South point - - -		20 46	203 8
Morotoi. Weſt point - - -		21 10	202 46

Woahoo.

	Latitude.	Longitude.	
Woahoo. Anchoring-place - -	21° 43′	202° 9′	1779. March.
Atooi. Wymoa Bay - - -	21 57	200 20	
Oneeheow. Anchoring-place - -	21 50	199 45	
Oreehoua - - - -	22 2	199 52	
Tahoora - - - -	21 43	199 36	

CHAP. VII.

General Account of the Sandwich Iſlands continued.—Of the Inhabitants.—Their Origin.—Perſons.—Pernicious Effects of the Ava.—Numbers.—Diſpoſition and Manners.—Reaſons for ſuppoſing them not Cannibals.—Dreſs and Ornaments.—Villages and Houſes.—Food.—Occupations and Amuſements.—Addicted to Gaming.—Their extraordinary Dexterity in Swimming.—Arts and Manufactures.—Curious Specimens of their Sculpture.—Kipparee, or Method of painting Cloth.—Mats.—Fiſhing Hooks.—Cordage.—Salt Pans.—Warlike Inſtruments.

1779. March.

THE inhabitants of the Sandwich Iſlands are undoubtedly of the ſame race with thoſe of New Zealand, the Society and Friendly Iſlands, Eaſter Iſland, and the Marqueſas; a race that poſſeſſes, without any intermixture, all the known lands between the latitudes of 47° South, and 20° North, and between the longitudes of 184° and 260° Eaſt. This fact, which, extraordinary as it is, might be thought ſufficiently proved by the ſtriking ſimilarity of their manners and cuſtoms, and the general reſemblance of their perſons, is eſtabliſhed, beyond all controverſy, by the abſolute identity of their language.

From what continent they originally emigrated, and by what ſteps they have ſpread through ſo vaſt a ſpace, thoſe who are curious in diſquiſitions of this nature, may perhaps

haps not find it very difficult to conjecture. It has been already obſerved, that they bear ſtrong marks of affinity to ſome of the Indian tribes, that inhabit the Ladrones and Caroline Iſlands; and the ſame affinity may again be traced amongſt the Battas and the Malays. When theſe events happened, is not ſo eaſy to aſcertain; it was probably not very lately, as they are extremely populous, and have no tradition of their own origin, but what is perfectly fabulous; whilſt, on the other hand, the unadulterated ſtate of their general language, and the ſimilarity which ſtill prevails in their cuſtoms and manners, ſeem to indicate, that it could not have been at any very diſtant period. 1779. March.

The natives of theſe iſlands are, in general, above the middle ſize, and well made; they walk very gracefully, run nimbly, and are capable of bearing great fatigue; though, upon the whole, the men are ſomewhat inferior, in point of ſtrength and activity, to the Friendly iſlanders, and the women leſs delicately limbed than thoſe of Otaheite. Their complexion is rather darker than that of the Otaheiteans, and they are not altogether ſo handſome a people *. However, many of both ſexes had fine open countenances; and the women, in particular, had good eyes and teeth, and a ſweetneſs and ſenſibility of look, which rendered them very engaging. Their hair is of a browniſh black, and neither uniformly ſtraight, like that of the Indians of America, nor uniformly curling, as amongſt the African negroes, but varying, in this reſpect, like the hair of Europeans. One ſtriking peculiarity, in the features of every part of this great nation, I do not remember to have ſeen

* The annexed print of *a man of Sandwich Iſlands*, was taken from a portrait of our friend Kaneena.

any

1779. March.

any where mentioned; which is, that, even in the handſomeſt faces, there is always a fulneſs of the noſtril, without any flatneſs or ſpreading of the noſe, that diſtinguiſhes them from Europeans. It is not improbable that this may be the effect of their uſual mode of ſalutation, which is performed by preſſing the ends of their noſes together.

The ſame ſuperiority that is obſervable in the perſons of the *Erees*, through all the other iſlands, is found alſo here. Thoſe whom we ſaw were, without exception, perfectly well formed; whereas the lower ſort, beſides their general inferiority, are ſubject to all the variety of make and figure that is ſeen in the populace of other countries. Inſtances of deformity are more frequent here, than in any of the other iſlands. Whilſt we were cruiſing off Owhyhee, two dwarfs came on board, one an old man, four feet two inches high, but exactly proportioned, and the other a woman, nearly of the ſame height. We afterward ſaw three natives who were hump-backed, and a young man, born without hands or feet. Squinting is alſo very common amongſt them; and a man, who, they ſaid, had been born blind, was brought to us to be cured. Beſides theſe particular imperfections, they are, in general, very ſubject to boils and ulcers, which we attributed to the great quantity of ſalt they eat with their fleſh and fiſh. The *Erees* are very free from theſe complaints; but many of them ſuffer ſtill more dreadful effects from the immoderate uſe of the *ava*. Thoſe who were the moſt affected by it, had their bodies covered with a white ſcurf, their eyes red and inflamed, their limbs emaciated, the whole frame trembling and paralytic, accompanied with a diſability to raiſe the head. Though this drug does not appear univerſally to ſhorten life, as was evident

evident from the caſes of Terreeoboo, Kaoo, and ſome other Chiefs, who were very old men; yet it invariably brings on an early and decrepid old age. It is fortunate, that the uſe of it is made one of the peculiar privileges of the Chiefs. The young ſon of Terreeoboo, who was about twelve years old, uſed to boaſt of his being admitted to drink *ava*, and ſhewed us, with great triumph, a ſmall ſpot in his ſide that was growing ſcaly. 1779. March.

There is ſomething very ſingular in the hiſtory of this pernicious drug. When Captain Cook firſt viſited the Society Iſlands, it was very little known among them. On his ſecond voyage, he found the uſe of it very prevalent at Ulietea; but it had ſtill gained very little ground at Otaheite. When we were laſt there, the dreadful havock it had made was beyond belief, inſomuch that the Captain ſcarce knew many of his old acquaintances. At the Friendly Iſlands, it is alſo conſtantly drunk by the Chiefs, but ſo much diluted with water, that it does not appear to produce any bad effects. At Atooi, alſo, it is uſed with great moderation, and the Chiefs are, in conſequence, a much finer ſet of men there, than in any of the neighbouring iſlands. We remarked, that, by diſcontinuing the uſe of this root, the noxious effects of it ſoon wore off. Our good friends, Kaireekeea and old Kaoo, were perſuaded by us to refrain from it; and they recovered amazingly during the ſhort time we afterward remained in the iſland.

It may be thought extremely difficult to form any probable conjectures reſpecting the population of iſlands, with many parts of which we are but imperfectly acquainted. There are, however, two circumſtances, that take away much

1779. March.

much of this objection; the firſt is, that the interior parts of the country are entirely uninhabited; ſo that, if the number of the inhabitants along the coaſt be known, the whole will be pretty accurately determined. The other is, that there are no towns of any conſiderable ſize, the habitations of the natives being pretty equally diſperſed in ſmall villages round all their coaſts. It is on this ground that I ſhall venture at a rough calculation of the number of perſons in this group of iſlands.

The bay of Karakakooa, in Owhyhee, is three miles in extent, and contains four villages of about eighty houſes each, upon an average; in all three hundred and twenty; beſides a number of ſtraggling houſes; which may make the whole amount to three hundred and fifty. From the frequent opportunities I had of informing myſelf on this head, I am convinced, that ſix perſons to a houſe is a very moderate allowance; ſo that, on this calculation, the country about the bay contains two thouſand one hundred ſouls. To theſe may be added fifty families, or three hundred perſons, which I conceive to be nearly the number employed in the interior parts of the country amongſt their plantations; making in all two thouſand four hundred. If, therefore, this number be applied to the whole extent of coaſt round the iſland, deducting a quarter for the uninhabited parts, it will be found to contain one hundred and fifty thouſand. By the ſame mode of calculation, the reſt of the iſlands will be found to contain the following numbers:

Owhyhee,

		1779. March.
Owhyhee, - - -	150,000	
Mowee, - - -	65,400	
Woahoo, - - -	60,200	
Atooi, - - -	54,000	
Morotoi, - - -	36,000	
Oneeheow, - - -	10,000	
Ranai, - - -	20,400	
Oreehoua, - - -	4,000	
Total of inhabitants, - -	400,000	

I am pretty confident, that, in this calculation, I have not exceeded the truth in the total amount. If we compare the numbers ſuppoſed to be in Owhyhee, with the population of Otaheite, as ſettled by Dr. Forſter, this computation will be found very low. The proportion of coaſt, in the latter iſland, is, to that of Owhyhee, only as one to three: the number of inhabitants in Otaheite he ſtates to be one hundred and twenty-one thouſand five hundred; though, according to his own principles, it ſhould be double that amount. Again, if we compare it with the medium population of the countries in Europe, the proportion will be in favour of the latter nearly as two to one.

Notwithſtanding the irreparable loſs we ſuffered from the ſudden reſentment and violence of theſe people, yet, in juſtice to their general conduct, it muſt be acknowledged, that they are of the moſt mild and affectionate diſpoſition; equally remote from the extreme levity and fickleneſs of the Otaheiteans, and the diſtant gravity and reſerve of the inhabitants of the Friendly Iſlands. They appear to live in the utmoſt harmony and friendſhip with one another. The women, who had children, were re-

1779. March.

markable for their tender and conſtant attention to them; and the men would often lend their aſſiſtance in thoſe domeſtic offices, with a willingneſs that does credit to their feelings.

It muſt, however, be obſerved, that they fall very ſhort of the other iſlanders, in that beſt teſt of civilization, the reſpect paid to the women. Here they are not only deprived of the privilege of eating with the men, but the beſt ſorts of food are *tabooed*, or forbidden them. They are not allowed to eat pork, turtle, ſeveral kinds of fiſh, and ſome ſpecies of the plantains; and we were told that a poor girl got a terrible beating, for having eaten, on board our ſhip, one of theſe interdicted articles. In their domeſtic life, they appear to live almoſt entirely by themſelves, and though we did not obſerve any inſtances of perſonal ill-treatment, yet it was evident they had little regard or attention paid them.

The great hoſpitality and kindneſs, with which we were received by them, have been already frequently remarked; and indeed they make the principal part of our tranſactions with them. Whenever we came on ſhore, there was a conſtant ſtruggle who ſhould be moſt forward in making us little preſents, bringing refreſhments, or ſhewing ſome other mark of their reſpect. The old people never failed of receiving us with tears of joy; ſeemed highly gratified with being allowed to touch us, and were conſtantly making compariſons between themſelves and us, with the ſtrongeſt marks of humility. The young women were not leſs kind and engaging, and, till they found, notwithſtanding our utmoſt endeavours to prevent it, that they had reaſon to repent of our acquaintance, attached themſelves to us without the leaſt reſerve.

In juſtice, however, to the ſex, it muſt be obſerved, that theſe

theſe ladies were probably all of the lower claſs of the people; for I am ſtrongly inclined to believe, that, excepting the few, whoſe names are mentioned in the courſe of our narrative, we did not ſee any woman of rank during our ſtay amongſt them. 1779. March.

Their natural capacity ſeems, in no reſpect, below the common ſtandard of mankind. Their improvements in agriculture, and the perfection of their manufactures, are certainly adequate to the circumſtances of their ſituation, and the natural advantages they enjoy. The eager curioſity, with which they attended the armourer's forge, and the many expedients they had invented, even before we left the iſlands, for working the iron they had procured from us, into ſuch forms as were beſt adapted to their purpoſes, were ſtrong proofs of docility and ingenuity.

Our unfortunate friend, Kaneena, poſſeſſed a degree of judicious curioſity, and a quickneſs of conception, which was rarely met with amongſt theſe people. He was very inquiſitive after our cuſtoms and manners; aſked after our King; the nature of our government; our numbers; the method of building our ſhips; our houſes; the produce of our country; whether we had wars; with whom; and on what occaſions; and in what manner they were carried on; who was our God; and many other queſtions of the ſame nature, which indicated an underſtanding of great comprehenſion.

We met with two inſtances of perſons diſordered in their minds, the one a man at Owhyhee, the other a woman at Oneeheow. It appeared, from the particular attention and reſpect paid to them, that the opinion of their being inſpired by the Divinity, which obtains among moſt of the nations of the Eaſt, is alſo received here.

1779. March.

Though the cuſtom of eating the bodies of their enemies, be not known, by poſitive evidence, to exiſt in any of the South Sea Iſlands, except New Zealand, yet it is extremely probable, that it was originally prevalent in them all. The ſacrificing human victims, which ſeems evidently to be a relick of this horrid practice, ſtill obtains univerſally amongſt theſe iſlanders; and it is eaſy to conceive, why the New Zealanders ſhould retain the repaſt, which was probably the laſt act of theſe ſhocking rites, longer than the reſt of their tribe, who were ſituated in more mild and fruitful climates. As the inhabitants of the Sandwich Iſlands certainly bear a nearer reſemblance to thoſe of New Zealand, both in their perſons and diſpoſition, than to any other people of this family, ſo it was ſtrongly ſuſpected, by Mr. Anderſon, that, like them, they ſtill continue to feaſt on human fleſh. The evidence, on which he founds this opinion, has been ſtated very fully in the tenth chapter of the third book *; but, as I always entertained great doubts of the juſtice of his concluſions, it may not be improper to take this occaſion of mentioning the grounds on which I venture to differ from him. With reſpect to the information derived from the natives themſelves, I ſhall only obſerve, that great pains were taken, by almoſt every officer on board, to come at the knowledge of ſo curious a circumſtance; and that, except in the two inſtances mentioned by Mr. Anderſon, we found them invariably denying the exiſtence of any ſuch cuſtom amongſt them. It muſt be allowed, that Mr. Anderſon's knowledge of their language, which was ſuperior to that of any other perſon in either ſhip, ought certainly to give his opinion great weight; at the ſame time, I muſt beg leave to re-

* See Vol. II. p. 209, 210—214.

mark,

mark, that, being preſent when he examined the man who had the ſmall piece of ſalted fleſh wrapped in cloth, it ſtruck me very forcibly, that the ſigns he made uſe of meant nothing more, than that it was intended to be eat, and that it was very pleaſant or wholeſome to the ſtomach. In this opinion I was confirmed, by a circumſtance which came to our knowledge, after the death of my worthy and ingenious friend, *viz.* that almoſt every native of theſe iſlands carried about with him, either in his calibaſh, or wrapped up in a piece of cloth, and tied about his waiſt, a ſmall piece of raw pork, highly ſalted, which they conſidered as a great delicacy, and uſed now and then to taſte of. With reſpect to the confuſion the young lad was in (for he was not more than ſixteen or eighteen years of age), no one could have been ſurprized at it, who had ſeen the eager and earneſt manner in which Mr. Anderſon queſtioned him. 1779. March.

The argument drawn from the inſtrument made with ſhark's teeth, and which is nearly of the ſame form with thoſe uſed at New Zealand for cutting up the bodies of their enemies, is much more difficult to controvert. I believe it to be an undoubted fact, that this knife, if it may be ſo called, is never uſed by them in cutting the fleſh of other animals. However, as the cuſtom of offering human ſacrifices, and of burning the bodies of the ſlain, is ſtill prevalent here, it is not improbable, that the uſe of this inſtrument is retained in thoſe ceremonies. Upon the whole, I am ſtrongly inclined to think, and particularly from this laſt circumſtance, that the horrid practice, in queſtion, has but lately ceaſed amongſt theſe and other iſlands of the South Sea. Omai, when preſſed on this ſubject, confeſſed, that, in the rage and fury of revenge, they would ſometimes

1779. March.

times tear the fleſh of their enemies, that were ſlain, with their teeth; but poſitively denied that they ever eat it. This was certainly approaching as near the fact as could be; but, on the other hand, the denial is a ſtrong proof that the practice has actually ceaſed; ſince in New Zealand, where it ſtill exiſts, the inhabitants never made the ſmalleſt ſcruple of confeſſing it.

The inhabitants of theſe iſlands differ from thoſe of the Friendly Iſles, in ſuffering, almoſt univerſally, their beards to grow. There were, indeed, a few, amongſt whom was the old king, that cut it off entirely; and others that wore it only upon the upper lip. The ſame variety, in the manner of wearing the hair, is alſo obſervable here, as among the other iſlanders of the South Sea; beſides which, they have a faſhion, as far as we know, peculiar to themſelves. They cut it cloſe on each ſide the head, down to the ears, leaving a ridge, of about a ſmall hand's breadth, running from the forehead to the neck; which, when the hair is thick and curling, has the form of the creſt of the ancient helmet. Others wear large quantities of falſe hair, flowing down their backs in long ringlets, like the figure of the inhabitants of Horn Iſland, as ſeen in Dalrymple's Voyages; and others, again, tie it into a ſingle round bunch on the top of the head, almoſt as large as the head itſelf; and ſome into five or ſix diſtinct bunches. They daub their hair with a grey clay, mixed with powdered ſhells, which they keep in balls, and chew into a kind of ſoft paſte, when they have occaſion to make uſe of it. This keeps the hair ſmooth; and, in time, changes it to a pale yellow colour.

Both ſexes wear necklaces, made of ſtrings of ſmall variegated ſhells; and an ornament, in the form of the handle of

1779. March.

of a cup, about two inches long, and half an inch broad, made of wood, ſtone, or ivory, finely poliſhed, which is hung about the neck, by fine threads of twiſted hair, doubled ſometimes an hundred fold. Inſtead of this ornament, ſome of them wear, on their breaſt, a ſmall human figure, made of bone, ſuſpended in the ſame manner.

The fan, or fly-flap, is alſo an ornament uſed by both ſexes. The moſt ordinary kind are made of the fibres of the cocoa-nut, tied looſe, in bunches, to the top of a ſmooth poliſhed handle. The tail-feathers of the cock, and of the tropic-bird, are alſo uſed in the ſame manner; but the moſt valuable are thoſe which have the handle made of the arm or leg bones of an enemy ſlain in battle, and which are preſerved with great care, and handed down, from father to ſon, as trophies of ineſtimable value.

The cuſtom of *tattowing* the body, they have in common with the reſt of the natives of the South Sea Iſlands; but it is only at New Zealand, and the Sandwich Iſlands, that they *tattow* the face. There is alſo this difference between the two laſt, that, in the former, it is done in elegant ſpiral volutes, and in the latter, in ſtraight lines, croſſing each other at right angles. The hands and arms of the women are alſo very neatly marked, and they have a ſingular cuſtom amongſt them, the meaning of which we could never learn, that of *tattowing* the tip of the tongues of the females.

From ſome information we received, relative to the cuſtom of *tattowing*, we were inclined to think, that it is frequently intended as a ſign of mourning on the death of a Chief, or any other calamitous event. For we were often told, that ſuch a particular mark was in memory of ſuch a Chief;

1779. March.

Chief; and ſo of the reſt. It may be here, too, obſerved, that the loweſt claſs are often *tattowed* with a mark, that diſtinguiſhes them as the property of the ſeveral Chiefs to whom they belong.

The dreſs of the men generally conſiſts only of a piece of thick cloth called the *maro*, about ten or twelve inches broad, which they paſs between the legs, and tie round the waiſt. This is the common dreſs of all ranks of people. Their mats, ſome of which are beautifully manufactured, are of various ſizes, but moſtly about five feet long, and four broad. Theſe they throw over their ſhoulders, and bring forward before; but they are ſeldom uſed, except in time of war, for which purpoſe they ſeem better adapted than for ordinary uſe, being of a thick and cumberſome texture, and capable of breaking the blow of a ſtone, or any blunt weapon. Their feet are generally bare, except when they have occaſion to travel over the burnt ſtones, when they ſecure them with a ſort of ſandal, made of cords, twiſted from the fibres of the cocoa-nut. Such is the ordinary dreſs of theſe iſlanders; but they have another, appropriated to their Chiefs, and uſed on ceremonious occaſions, conſiſting of a feathered cloak and helmet, which, in point of beauty and magnificence, is perhaps nearly equal to that of any nation in the world. As this dreſs has been already deſcribed with great accuracy and minuteneſs, I have only to add, that theſe cloaks are made of different lengths, in proportion to the rank of the wearer, ſome of them reaching no lower than the middle, others trailing on the ground. The inferior Chiefs have alſo a ſhort cloak, reſembling the former, made of the long tail-feathers of the cock, the tropic and man of war birds, with a broad border of the ſmall red and yellow feathers, and a collar of the ſame. Others again

are

1779. March.

are made of feathers entirely white, with variegated borders. The helmet has a ſtrong lining of wicker-work, capable of breaking the blow of any warlike inſtrument, and ſeems evidently deſigned for that purpoſe.

Theſe feathered dreſſes ſeemed to be exceedingly ſcarce, appropriated to perſons of the higheſt rank, and worn by the men only. During the whole time we lay in Karakakooa Bay, we never ſaw them uſed but on three occaſions: in the curious ceremony of Terreeoboo's firſt viſit to the ſhips; by ſome Chiefs, who were ſeen among the crowd on ſhore, when Captain Cook was killed; and, afterward, when Eappo brought his bones to us.

The exact reſemblance between this habit, and the cloak and helmet formerly worn by the Spaniards, was too ſtriking not to excite our curioſity to inquire, whether there were any probable grounds for ſuppoſing it to have been borrowed from them. After exerting every means in our power, of obtaining information on this ſubject, we found that they had no immediate knowledge of any other nation whatever; nor any tradition remaining among them of theſe iſlands having been ever viſited before by ſuch ſhips as ours. But, notwithſtanding the reſult of theſe inquiries, the uncommon form of this habit appears to me a ſufficient proof of its European origin; eſpecially when added to another circumſtance, that it is a ſingular deviation from the general reſemblance in dreſs, which prevails amongſt all the branches of this tribe, diſperſed through the South Sea. We were driven indeed, by this concluſion, to a ſuppoſition of the ſhipwreck of ſome Buccaneer, or Spaniſh ſhip, in the neighbourhood of theſe iſlands. But when it is recollected, that the courſe of the Spaniſh trade from Acapulco to the Manillas, is but a few degrees to the Southward of

1779. March.

the Sandwich Iſlands, in their paſſage out, and to the Northward, on their return, this ſuppoſition will not appear in the leaſt improbable.

The common dreſs of the women bears a cloſe reſemblance to that of the men. They wrap round the waiſt a piece of cloth, that reaches half way down the thighs; and ſometimes, in the cool of the evening, they appeared with looſe pieces of fine cloth thrown over their ſhoulders, like the women of Otaheite. The *pau* is another dreſs very frequently worn by the younger part of the ſex. It is made of the thinneſt and fineſt ſort of cloth, wrapt ſeveral times round the waiſt, and deſcending to the leg; ſo as to have exactly the appearance of a full ſhort petticoat. Their hair is cut ſhort behind, and turned up before, as is the faſhion among the Otaheiteans and New Zealanders; all of whom differ, in this reſpect, from the women of the Friendly Iſlands, who wear their hair long. We ſaw, indeed, one woman in Karakakooa Bay, whoſe hair was arranged in a very ſingular manner; it was turned up behind, and brought over the forehead, and then doubled back, ſo as to form a ſort of ſhade to the face, like a ſmall bonnet.

Their necklaces are made of ſhells, or of a hard, ſhining, red berry. Beſides which, they wear wreaths of dried flowers of the Indian mallow; and another beautiful ornament, called *eraie*, which is generally put about the neck, but is ſometimes tied like a garland round the hair, and ſometimes worn in both theſe ways at once, as may be ſeen in the print of the *woman of the Sandwich Iſlands*. It is a ruff of the thickneſs of a finger, made, in a curious manner, of exceedingly ſmall feathers, woven ſo cloſe together as to form a ſurface as ſmooth as that of the richeſt velvet. The ground was generally of a red colour, with alternate circles of green, yellow,

yellow, and black. Their bracelets, which were alſo of great variety, and very peculiar kinds, have been already deſcribed. 1779. March.

At Atooi, ſome of the women wore little figures of the turtle, neatly formed of wood or ivory, tied on their fingers in the manner we wear rings. Why this animal is thus particularly diſtinguiſhed, I leave to the conjectures of the curious. There is alſo an ornament made of ſhells, faſtened in rows on a ground of ſtrong netting, ſo as to ſtrike each other when in motion; which both men and women, when they dance, tie either round the arm or the ankle, or below the knee. Inſtead of ſhells, they ſometimes make uſe of dogs teeth, and a hard red berry, reſembling that of the holly.

There remains to be mentioned another ornament (if ſuch it may be called), the figure of which may be better conceived from the annexed print, than any written deſcription. It is a kind of maſk, made of a large gourd, with holes cut in it for the eyes and noſe. The top was ſtuck full of ſmall green twigs, which, at a diſtance, had the appearance of an elegant waving plume; and from the lower part hung narrow ſtripes of cloth, reſembling a beard. We never ſaw theſe maſks worn but twice, and both times by a number of people together in a canoe, who came to the ſide of the ſhip, laughing and drolling, with an air of maſquerading. Whether they may not likewiſe be uſed as a defence for the head againſt ſtones, for which they ſeem beſt deſigned, or in ſome of their public games, or be merely intended for the purpoſes of mummery, we could never inform ourſelves.

It has already been remarked, in a few inſtances, that the natives of the Sandwich Iſlands approach nearer to the

1779. March.

New Zealanders, in their manners and cuſtoms, than to either of their leſs diſtant neighbours of the Society or Friendly Iſlands. This is in nothing more obſervable, than in their method of living together in ſmall towns or villages, containing from about one hundred to two hundred houſes, built pretty cloſe together, without any order, and having a winding path leading through them. They are generally flanked, toward the ſea, with looſe detached walls, which probably are meant both for the purpoſes of ſhelter and defence. The figure of their houſes has been already deſcribed. They are of different ſizes, from eighteen feet by twelve, to forty-five by twenty-four. There are ſome of a larger kind; being fifty feet long and thirty broad, and quite open at one end. Theſe, they told us, were deſigned for travellers or ſtrangers, who were only making a ſhort ſtay.

In addition to the furniture of their houſes, which has been accurately deſcribed by Captain Cook, I have only to add, that at one end are mats on which they ſleep, with wooden pillows, or ſleeping ſtools, exactly like thoſe of the Chineſe. Some of the better ſort of houſes have a court-yard before them, neatly railed in, with ſmaller houſes built round it, for their ſervants. In this *area* they generally eat, and ſit during the day-time. In the ſides of the hills, and among the ſteep rocks, we alſo obſerved ſeveral holes or caves, which appeared to be inhabited; but as the entrance was defended with wicker-work, and we alſo found, in the only one that was viſited, a ſtone fence running acroſs it within, we imagine they are principally deſigned for places of retreat, in caſe of an attack from an enemy.

The food of the lower claſs of people conſiſts principally of fiſh, and vegetables; ſuch as yams, ſweet-potatoes, tarrow,

row, plantains, ſugar-canes, and bread-fruit. To theſe, the people of a higher rank add the fleſh of hogs and dogs, dreſſed in the ſame manner as at the Society Iſlands. They alſo eat fowls of the ſame domeſtic kind with ours; but they are neither plentiful, nor much eſteemed by them. It is remarked by Captain Cook, that the bread-fruit and yams appeared ſcarce amongſt them, and were reckoned great rarities. We found this not to be the caſe on our ſecond viſit; and it is therefore moſt probable, that, as theſe vegetables were generally planted in the interior parts of the country, the natives had not had time to bring them down to us, during the ſhort ſtay we made in Wymoa Bay. Their fiſh they ſalt, and preſerve in gourd-ſhells; not, as we at firſt imagined, for the purpoſe of providing againſt any temporary ſcarcity, but from the preference they give to ſalted meats. For we alſo found, that the *Erees* uſed to pickle pieces of pork in the ſame manner, and eſteemed it a great delicacy. 1779. March.

Their cookery is exactly of the ſame ſort with that already deſcribed, in the accounts that have been publiſhed of the other South Sea iſlands; and though Captain Cook complains of the ſourneſs of their tarrow puddings, yet, in juſtice to the many excellent meals they afforded us in Karakakooa Bay, I muſt be permitted to reſcue them from this general cenſure, and to declare, that I never eat better even in the Friendly Iſlands. It is however remarkable, that they had not got the art of preſerving the bread-fruit, and making the ſour paſte of it called *Maihee*, as at the Society Iſlands; and it was ſome ſatisfaction to us, in return for their great kindneſs and hoſpitality, to have it in our power to teach them this uſeful ſecret. They are exceedingly cleanly at their meals; and their mode of dreſſing both

1779. March.

both their animal and vegetable food, was univerſally allowed to be greatly ſuperior to ours. The Chiefs conſtantly begin their meal with a doſe of the extract of pepper-root, brewed after the uſual manner. The women eat apart from the men, and are *tabooed*, or forbidden, as has been already mentioned, the uſe of pork, turtle, and particular kinds of plantains. However, they would eat pork with us in private; but we could never prevail upon them to touch the two laſt articles.

The way of ſpending their time appears to be very ſimple, and to admit of little variety. They riſe with the ſun; and, after enjoying the cool of the evening, retire to reſt a few hours after ſun-ſet. The making of canoes and mats forms the occupations of the *Erees*; the women are employed in manufacturing cloth; and the *Towtows* are principally engaged in the plantations and fiſhing. Their idle hours are filled up with various amuſements. Their young men and women are fond of dancing; and, on more ſolemn occaſions, they have boxing and wreſtling matches, after the manner of the Friendly Iſlands; though, in all theſe reſpects, they are much inferior to the latter.

Their dances have a much nearer reſemblance to thoſe of the New Zealanders, than of the Otaheiteans or Friendly Iſlanders. They are prefaced with a ſlow, ſolemn ſong, in which all the party join, moving their legs, and gently ſtriking their breaſts, in a manner, and with attitudes, that are perfectly eaſy and graceful; and ſo far they are the ſame with the dances of the Society Iſlands. When this has laſted about ten minutes, both the tune and the motions gradually quicken, and end only by their inability to ſupport the fatigue; which part of the performance is the exact counterpart of that of the New Zealanders; and (as

(as it is among them) the perſon who uſes the moſt violent action, and holds out the longeſt, is applauded as the beſt dancer. It is to be obſerved, that, in this dance, the women only take a part, and that the dancing of the men is nearly of the ſame kind with what we ſaw of the ſmall parties at the Friendly Iſlands; and which may, perhaps, with more propriety, be called the accompaniment of ſongs, with correſponding and graceful motions of the whole body. Yet, as we were ſpectators of boxing exhibitions, of the ſame kind with thoſe we were entertained with at the Friendly Iſlands, it is probable that they had likewiſe their grand ceremonious dances, in which numbers of both ſexes aſſiſted. 1779. March.

Their muſic is alſo of a ruder kind, having neither flutes nor reeds, nor inſtruments of any other ſort, that we ſaw, exept drums of various ſizes. But their ſongs, which they ſung in parts *, and accompany with a gentle motion of the arms,

* As this circumſtance, of their *ſinging in parts*, has been much doubted by perſons eminently ſkilled in muſic, and would be exceedingly curious if it was clearly aſcertained, it is to be lamented that it cannot be more poſitively authenticated.

Captain Burney, and Captain Phillips of the Marines, who both have a tolerable knowledge of muſic, have given it as their opinion, that they did ſing in parts; that is to ſay, that they ſung together in different notes, which formed a pleaſing harmony.

Theſe gentlemen have fully teſtified that the Friendly Iſlanders undoubtedly ſtudied their performances before they were exhibited in public; that they had an idea of different notes being uſeful in harmony; and alſo, that they rehearſed their compoſitions in private, and threw out the inferior voices, before they ventured to appear before thoſe who were ſuppoſed to be judges of their ſkill in muſic.

In their regular concerts, each man had a bamboo, which was of a different length, and gave a different tone: theſe they beat againſt the ground, and each performer, aſſiſted by the note given by this inſtrument, repeated the ſame note, accompanying it by words, by which means it was rendered ſometimes ſhort, and ſometimes long. In this manner, they ſung in chorus, and not only produced octaves to each other, according to their different ſpecies of voice, but fell on concords, ſuch as were not diſagreeable to the ear.

Now,

1779. March.

arms, in the ſame manner as the Friendly Iſlanders, had a very pleaſing effect.

It is very remarkable, that the people of theſe iſlands are great gamblers. They have a game very much like our draughts; but, if one may judge from the number of ſquares, it is much more intricate. The board is about two feet long, and is divided into two hundred and thirty-eight ſquares, of which there are fourteen in a row; and they make uſe of black and white pebbles, which they move from ſquare to ſquare.

There is another game, which conſiſts in hiding a ſtone under a piece of cloth, which one of the parties ſpreads out, and rumples in ſuch a manner, that the place where the ſtone lies is difficult to be diſtinguiſhed. The antagoniſt, with a ſtick, then ſtrikes the part of the cloth where he ima-

Now, to overturn this fact, by the reaſoning of perſons who did not hear theſe performances, is rather an arduous taſk. And, yet, there is great improbability that any uncivilized people ſhould, by accident, arrive at this degree of perfection in the art of muſic, which we imagine can only be attained by dint of ſtudy, and knowledge of the ſyſtem and theory upon which muſical compoſition is founded. Such miſerable jargon as our country Pſalm-ſingers practiſe, which may be juſtly deemed the loweſt claſs of counterpoint, or ſinging in ſeveral parts, cannot be acquired, in the coarſe manner in which it is performed in the churches, without conſiderable time and practice. It is, therefore, ſcarcely credible, that a people, ſemi-barbarous, ſhould naturally arrive at any perfection in that art, which it is much doubted whether the Greeks and Romans, with all their refinements in muſic, ever attained, and which the Chineſe, who have been longer civilized than any people on the globe, have not yet found out.

If Captain Burney (who, by the teſtimony of his father, perhaps the greateſt muſical theoriſt of this or any other age, was able to have done it) had written down, in European notes, the concords that theſe people ſung; and if theſe concords had been ſuch as European ears could tolerate, there would have been no longer doubt of the fact: but, as it is, it would, in my opinion, be a raſh judgment to venture to affirm that they did or did not underſtand counterpoint; and therefore I fear that this curious matter muſt be conſidered as ſtill remaining undecided.

gines

gines the ſtone to be; and as the chances are, upon the whole, conſiderably againſt his hitting it, odds, of all degrees, varying with the opinion of the ſkill of the parties, are laid on the ſide of him who hides. 1779. March.

Beſides theſe games, they frequently amuſe themſelves with racing-matches between the boys and girls; and here again they wager with great ſpirit. I ſaw a man in a moſt violent rage, tearing his hair, and beating his breaſt, after loſing three hatchets at one of theſe races, which he had juſt before purchaſed from us, with half his ſubſtance.

Swimming is not only a neceſſary art, in which both their men and women are more expert than any people we had hitherto ſeen, but a favourite diverſion amongſt them. One particular mode, in which they ſometimes amuſed themſelves with this exerciſe, in Karakakooa Bay, appeared to us moſt perilous and extraordinary, and well deſerving a diſtinct relation.

The ſurf, which breaks on the coaſt round the bay, extends to the diſtance of about one hundred and fifty yards from the ſhore, within which ſpace, the ſurges of the ſea, accumulating from the ſhallowneſs of the water, are daſhed againſt the beach with prodigious violence. Whenever, from ſtormy weather, or any extraordinary ſwell at ſea, the impetuoſity of the ſurf is increaſed to its utmoſt height, they chooſe that time for this amuſement, which is performed in the following manner: Twenty or thirty of the natives, taking each a long narrow board, rounded at the ends, ſet out together from the ſhore. The firſt wave they meet, they plunge under, and ſuffering it to roll over them, riſe again beyond it, and make the beſt of their way, by ſwimming, out into the ſea. The ſecond wave is encountered in the

1779. March.

ſame manner with the firſt; the great difficulty conſiſting in ſeizing the proper moment of diving under it, which, if miſſed, the perſon is caught by the ſurf, and driven back again with great violence; and all his dexterity is then required to prevent himſelf from being daſhed againſt the rocks. As ſoon as they have gained, by theſe repeated efforts, the ſmooth water beyond the ſurf, they lay themſelves at length on their board, and prepare for their return. As the ſurf conſiſts of a number of waves, of which every third is remarked to be always much larger than the others, and to flow higher on the ſhore, the reſt breaking in the intermediate ſpace, their firſt object is to place themſelves on the ſummit of the largeſt ſurge, by which they are driven along with amazing rapidity toward the ſhore. If by miſtake they ſhould place themſelves on one of the ſmaller waves, which breaks before they reach the land, or ſhould not be able to keep their plank in a proper direction on the top of the ſwell, they are left expoſed to the fury of the next, and, to avoid it, are obliged again to dive, and regain the place from which they ſet out. Thoſe who ſucceed in their object of reaching the ſhore, have ſtill the greateſt danger to encounter. The coaſt being guarded by a chain of rocks, with, here and there, a ſmall opening between them, they are obliged to ſteer their board through one of theſe, or, in caſe of failure, to quit it, before they reach the rocks, and, plunging under the wave, make the beſt of their way back again. This is reckoned very diſgraceful, and is alſo attended with the loſs of the board, which I have often ſeen, with great terror, daſhed to pieces, at the very moment the iſlander quitted it. The boldneſs and addreſs, with which we ſaw them perform theſe difficult and dangerous

dangerous manœuvres, was altogether aſtoniſhing, and is ſcarcely to be credited *. 1779. March.

An accident, of which I was a near ſpectator, ſhews at how early a period they are ſo far familiarized to the water, as both to loſe all fears of it, and to ſet its dangers at defiance. A canoe being overſet, in which was a woman with her children, one of them an infant, who, I am convinced, was not more than four years old, ſeemed highly delighted with what had happened, ſwimming about at its eaſe, and playing a hundred tricks, till the canoe was put to rights again.

Beſides the amuſements I have already mentioned, the young children have one, which was much played at, and ſhewed no ſmall degree of dexterity. They take a ſhort ſtick, with a peg ſharpened at both ends, running through one extremity of it, and extending about an inch on each ſide; and throwing up a ball made of green leaves moulded together, and ſecured with twine, they catch it on the point of the peg; and immediately throwing it up again from the peg, they turn the ſtick round, and thus keep catching it on each peg alternately, without miſſing it, for a conſiderable time. They are not leſs expert at another game of the ſame nature, toſſing up in the air, and catching, in their turns, a number of theſe balls; ſo that we frequently ſaw little children thus keep in motion five at a time. With this latter play the young people likewiſe divert themſelves at the Friendly Iſlands.

The great reſemblance which prevails in the mode of agriculture and navigation, amongſt all the inhabitants of the South Sea iſlands, leaves me very little to add on thoſe

* An amuſement, ſomewhat ſimilar to this, at Otaheite, has been deſcribed, Vol. II. p. 150.

1779. March.

heads. Captain Cook has already deſcribed the figure of the canoes we ſaw at Atooi. Thoſe of the other iſlands were preciſely the ſame; and the largeſt we ſaw was a double canoe belonging to Terreeoboo, which meaſured ſeventy feet in length, three and a half in depth, and twelve in breadth; and each was hollowed out of one tree.

The progreſs they have made in ſculpture, their ſkill in painting cloth, and their manufacturing of mats, have been all particularly deſcribed. The moſt curious ſpecimens of the former, which we ſaw during our ſecond viſit, are the bowls, in which the Chiefs drink *ava*. Theſe are uſually about eight or ten inches in diameter, perfectly round, and beautifully poliſhed. They are ſupported by three, and ſometimes four, ſmall human figures, in various attitudes. Some of them reſt on the hands of their ſupporters, extended over the head; others on the head and hands: and ſome on the ſhoulders. The figures, I am told, are accurately proportioned, and neatly finiſhed, and even the anatomy of the muſcles, in ſupporting the weight, well expreſſed.

Their cloth is made of the ſame materials, and in the ſame manner, as at the Friendly and Society Iſlands. That which is deſigned to be painted, is of a thick and ſtrong texture, ſeveral folds being beat and incorporated together; after which it is cut in breadths, about two or three feet wide, and is painted in a variety of patterns, with a comprehenſiveneſs and regularity of deſign, that beſpeaks infinite taſte and fancy. The exactneſs with which the moſt intricate patterns are continued, is the more ſurprizing, when we conſider, that they have no ſtamps, and that the whole is done by the eye, with pieces of bamboo cane dipped in paint; the hand being ſupported by another piece of the cane,

cane, in the manner practiſed by our painters. Their colours are extracted from the ſame berries, and other vegetable ſubſtances, as at Otaheite, which have been already deſcribed by former voyagers. 1779. March.

The buſineſs of painting belongs entirely to the women, and is called *kipparee*; and it is remarkable, that they always gave the ſame name to our writing. The young women would often take the pen out of our hands, and ſhew us, that they knew the uſe of it as well as we did; at the ſame time telling us, that our pens were not ſo good as theirs. They looked upon a ſheet of written paper, as a piece of cloth ſtriped after the faſhion of our country; and it was not without the utmoſt difficulty, that we could make them underſtand, that our figures had a meaning in them which theirs had not.

Their mats are made of the leaves of the *pandanus*; and, as well as their cloths, are beautifully worked in a variety of patterns, and ſtained of different colours. Some have a ground of pale green, ſpotted with ſquares, or romboids, of red; others are of a ſtraw colour, ſpotted with green; and others are worked with beautiful ſtripes, either in ſtraight or waving lines of red and brown. In this article of manufacture, whether we regard the ſtrength, fineneſs, or beauty, they certainly excel the whole world.

Their fiſhing-hooks are made of mother-of-pearl, bone, or wood, pointed and barbed with ſmall bones, or tortoiſe-ſhell. They are of various ſizes and forms; but the moſt common are about two or three inches long, and made in the ſhape of a ſmall fiſh, which ſerves as a bait, having a bunch of feathers tied to the head or tail. Thoſe with which they fiſh for ſharks, are of a very large ſize, being generally ſix or eight inches long. Conſidering the materials of which

1779. March.

which theſe hooks are made, their ſtrength and neatneſs are really aſtoniſhing; and in fact we found them, upon trial, much ſuperior to our own.

The line which they uſe for fiſhing, for making nets, and for other domeſtic purpoſes, is of different degrees of fineneſs, and is made of the bark of the *touta*, or cloth tree, neatly and evenly twiſted, in the ſame manner as our common twine; and may be continued to any length. They have a finer ſort, made of the bark of a ſmall ſhrub called *areemah*; and the fineſt is made of human hair; but this laſt is chiefly uſed for things of ornament. They alſo make cordage of a ſtronger kind, for the rigging of their canoes, from the fibrous coatings of the cocoa-nuts. Some of this we purchaſed for our own uſe, and found it well adapted to the ſmaller kinds of running rigging. They likewiſe make another ſort of cordage, which is flat, and exceedingly ſtrong, and uſed principally in laſhing the roofing of their houſes, or whatever they wiſh to faſten tight together. This laſt is not twiſted like the former ſorts, but is made of the fibrous ſtrings of the cocoa-nut's coat, plaited with the fingers, in the manner our ſailors make their points for the reefing of ſails.

The gourds, which grow to ſo enormous a ſize, that ſome of them are capable of containing from ten to twelve gallons, are applied to all manner of domeſtic purpoſes; and in order to fit them the better to their reſpective uſes, they have the ingenuity to give them different forms, by tying bandages round them during their growth. Thus, ſome of them are of a long, cylindrical form, as beſt adapted to contain their fiſhing-tackle; others are of a diſh form, and theſe ſerve to hold their ſalt, and ſalted proviſions, their puddings, vegetables, &c.; which two ſorts have neat cloſe covers,

covers, made likewiſe of the gourd; others again are exactly the ſhape of a bottle with a long neck, and in theſe they keep their water. They have likewiſe a method of ſcoring them with a heated inſtrument, ſo as to give them the appearance of being painted, in a variety of neat and elegant deſigns. 1779. March.

Amongſt their arts, we muſt not forget that of making ſalt, with which we were amply ſupplied, during our ſtay at theſe iſlands, and which was perfectly good of its kind. Their ſalt-pans are made of earth, lined with clay; being generally ſix or eight feet ſquare, and about eight inches deep. They are raiſed upon a bank of ſtones near the high water mark, from whence the ſalt water is conducted to the foot of them, in ſmall trenches, out of which they are filled, and the ſun quickly performs the neceſſary proceſs of evaporation. The ſalt we procured at Atooi and Oneeheow, on our firſt viſit, was of a brown and dirty ſort; but that which we afterward got in Karakakooa Bay, was white, and of a moſt excellent quality, and in great abundance. Beſides the quantity we uſed in ſalting pork, we filled all our empty caſks, amounting to ſixteen puncheons, in the Reſolution only.

Their inſtruments of war are ſpears; daggers, called *pahooas*; clubs; and ſlings. The ſpears are of two ſorts, and made of a hard ſolid wood, which has much the appearance of mahogany. One ſort is from ſix to eight feet in length, finely poliſhed, and gradually increaſing in thickneſs from the extremity till within about half a foot of the point, which tapers ſuddenly, and is furniſhed with four or ſix rows of barbs. It is not improbable, that theſe might be uſed in the way of darts. The other ſort, with which we ſaw the warriors at Owhyhee and Atooi moſtly armed, are twelve

1779. March. twelve or fifteen feet long, and, inſtead of being barbed, terminate toward the point, like their daggers.

The dagger, or *pahooa*, is made of heavy black wood, reſembling ebony. Its length is from one to two feet, with a ſtring paſſing through the handle, for the purpoſe of ſuſpending it to the arm. For its ſhape, I muſt refer the reader to figure 6, in Plate LXVII.

The clubs are made indifferently of ſeveral ſorts of wood. They are of rude workmanſhip, and of a variety of ſhapes and ſizes.

The ſlings have nothing ſingular about them; and in no reſpect differ from our common ſlings, except that the ſtone is lodged on a piece of matting inſtead of leather.

CHAP.

CHAP. VIII.

General Account of the Sandwich Iſlands continued.—Government.—People divided into three Claſſes.—Power of Eree-taboo.—Genealogy of the Kings of Owhyhee and Mowee.—Power of the Chiefs.—State of the inferior Claſs.—Puniſhment of Crimes.—Religion.—Society of Prieſts.—The Orono.—Their Idols.—Songs chanted by the Chiefs, before they drink Ava.—Human Sacrifices.—Cuſtom of knocking out the Fore-teeth.—Notions with regard to a future State.—Marriages.—Remarkable Inſtance of Jealouſy.—Funeral Rites.

1779. March.

THE people of theſe iſlands are manifeſtly divided into three claſſes. The firſt are the *Erees*, or Chiefs, of each diſtrict; one of whom is ſuperior to the reſt, and is called at Owhyhee *Eree-taboo*, and *Eree-moee*. By the firſt of theſe words they expreſs his abſolute authority; and by the latter, that all are obliged to proſtrate themſelves (or put themſelves to ſleep, as the word ſignifies) in his preſence. The ſecond claſs are thoſe who appear to enjoy a right of property, without authority. The third are the *towtows*, or ſervants, who have neither rank nor property.

It is not poſſible to give any thing like a ſyſtematical account of the ſubordination of theſe claſſes to each other, without departing from that ſtrict veracity, which, in works of this nature, is more ſatisfactory than conjectures, however ingenious. I will, therefore, content myſelf with re-

1779. March.

lating ſuch facts, as we were witneſſes to ourſelves, and ſuch accounts as we thought could be depended upon; and ſhall leave the reader to form, from them, his own ideas of the nature of their government.

The great power and high rank of Terreeoboo, the *Eree-taboo* of Owhyhee, was very evident, from the manner in which he was received at Karakakooa, on his firſt arrival. All the natives were ſeen proſtrated at the entrance of their houſes; and the canoes, for two days before, were *tabooed*, or forbidden to go out, till he took off the reſtraint. He was, at this time, juſt returned from Mowee, for the poſſeſſion of which he was contending in favour of his ſon Teewarro, who had married the daughter and only child of the late king of that iſland, againſt Taheeterree, his ſurviving brother. He was attended, in this expedition, by many of his warriors; but whether their ſervice was voluntary, or the condition on which they hold their rank and property, we could not learn.

That he collects tribute from the ſubordinate Chiefs, we had a very ſtriking proof in the inſtance of Kaoo, which has been already related in our tranſactions of the 2d and 3d of February.

I have before mentioned, that the two moſt powerful Chiefs of theſe iſlands are Terreeoboo of Owhyhee, and Perreeorannee of Woahoo; the reſt of the ſmaller iſles being ſubject to one or other of theſe; Mowee, and its dependencies, being, at this time, claimed, as we have juſt obſerved, by Terreeoboo, for Teewarro his ſon and intended ſucceſſor; Atooi and Oneeheow being governed by the grandſons of Perreeorannee.

The following genealogy of the Owhyhee and Mowee kings, which I collected from the prieſts, during our reſi-

dence

dence at the *Morai* in Karakakooa Bay, contains all the information I could procure relative to the political hiſtory of theſe iſlands. 1779. March.

This account reaches to four Chiefs, predeceſſors of the preſent; all of whom they repreſent to have lived to an old age. Their names and ſucceſſions are as follow:

Firſt, Poorahoo Awhykaia was king of Owhyhee, and had an only ſon, called Neerooagooa. At this time Mowee was governed by Mokoakea; who had alſo an only ſon, named Papikaneeou.

Secondly, Neerooagooa had three ſons, the eldeſt named Kahavee; and Papikaneeou, of the Mowee race, had an only ſon, named Kaowreeka.

Thirdly, Kahavee had an only ſon, Kayenewee a mummow; and Kaowreeka, the Mowee king, had two ſons, Maiha-maiha, and Taheeterree; the latter of whom is now, by one party, acknowledged Chief of Mowee.

Fourthly, Kayenewee a mummow had two ſons, Terreeoboo and Kaihooa; and Maiha-maiha, king of Mowee, had no ſon, but left a daughter, called Roaho.

Fifthly, Terreeoboo, the preſent king of Owhyhee, had a ſon named Teewarro, by Rora-rora, the widow of Maiha-maiha, late king of Mowee; and this ſon has married Roaho, his half ſiſter, in whoſe right he claims Mowee and its appendages.

Taheeterree, the brother of the late king, ſupported by a conſiderable party, who were not willing that the poſſeſſions ſhould go into another family, took up arms, and oppoſed the rights of his niece.

When we were firſt off Mowee, Terreeoboo was there with his warriors to ſupport the claims of his wife, his ſon, and daughter-in-law, and had fought a battle with the op-

1779. March.

poſite party, in which Taheeterree was worſted. We afterward underſtood that matters had been compromiſed, and that Taheeterree is to have the poſſeſſion of the three neighbouring iſlands during his life; that Teewarro is acknowledged the Chief of Mowee, and will alſo ſucceed to the kingdom of Owhyhee on the death of Terreeoboo; and alſo to the ſovereignty of the three iſlands, contiguous to Mowee, on the death of Taheeterree. Teewarro has been lately married to his half ſiſter; and, ſhould he die without iſſue, the government of theſe iſlands deſcends to Maihamaiha, whom we have often had occaſion to mention, he being the ſon of Kaihooa, the deceaſed brother of Terreeoboo. Should he alſo die without iſſue, they could not tell who would ſucceed; for the two youngeſt ſons of Terreeoboo, one of whom he appears to be exceedingly fond of, being born of a woman of no rank, would, from this circumſtance, be debarred all right of ſucceſſion. We had not an opportunity of ſeeing queen Rora-rora, whom Terreeoboo had left behind at Mowee; but we have already had occaſion to take notice, that he was accompanied by Kanee-kabareea, the mother of the two youths, to whom he was very much attached.

From this account of the genealogy of the Owhyhee and Mowee monarchs, it is pretty clear that the government is hereditary; which alſo makes it very probable, that the inferior titles, and property itſelf, deſcend in the ſame courſe. With regard to Perreeorannee, we could only learn, that he is an *Eree-taboo*; that he was invading the poſſeſſion of Taheeterree, but on what pretence we were not informed; and that his grandſons governed the iſlands to leeward.

The power of the *Erees* over the inferior claſſes of people appears

appears to be very abſolute. Many inſtances of this occurred daily during our ſtay amongſt them, and have been already related. The people, on the other hand, pay them the moſt implicit obedience; and this ſtate of ſervility has manifeſtly had a great effect in debaſing both their minds and bodies. It is, however, remarkable, that the Chiefs were never guilty, as far at leaſt as came within my knowledge, of any acts of cruelty or injuſtice, or even of inſolent behaviour toward them; though, at the ſame time, they exerciſed their power over one another in the moſt haughty and oppreſſive manner. Of this I ſhall give two inſtances. A Chief of the lower order had behaved with great civility to the maſter of the ſhip, when he went to examine Karakakooa bay, the day before the ſhip firſt arrived there; and, in return, I afterward carried him on board, and introduced him to Captain Cook, who invited him to dine with us. While we were at table, Pareea entered, whoſe face but too plainly manifeſted his indignation, at ſeeing our gueſt in ſo honourable a ſituation. He immediately ſeized him by the hair of the head, and was proceeding to drag him out of the cabin, when the Captain interfered; and, after a great deal of altercation, all the indulgence we could obtain, without coming to a quarrel with Pareea, was, that our gueſt ſhould be ſuffered to remain, being ſeated upon the floor, whilſt Pareea filled his place at the table. At another time, when Terreeoboo firſt came on board the Reſolution, Maihamaiha, who attended him, finding Pareea on deck, turned him out of the ſhip in the moſt ignominious manner; and yet Pareea, we certainly knew, to be a man of the firſt conſequence.

1779. March.

How far the property of the lower claſs is ſecured againſt the rapacity and deſpotiſm of the great Chiefs, I cannot ſay; but

1779. March.

but it ſhould ſeem, that it is ſufficiently protected againſt private theft, or mutual depredation. For not only their plantations, which are ſpread over the whole country, but alſo their houſes, their hogs, and their cloth, were left unguarded, without the ſmalleſt apprehenſions. I have already remarked, that they not only ſeparate their poſſeſſions by walls in the plain country, but that, in the woods likewiſe, wherever the horſe-plantains grow, they make uſe of ſmall white flags, in the ſame manner, and for the ſame purpoſe of diſcriminating property, as they do bunches of leaves at Otaheite. All which circumſtances, if they do not amount to proofs, are ſtrong indications that the power of the Chiefs, where property is concerned, is not arbitrary; but, at leaſt, ſo far circumſcribed and aſcertained, as to make it worth the while for the inferior orders to cultivate the ſoil, and to occupy their poſſeſſions diſtinct from each other.

With reſpect to the adminiſtration of juſtice, all the information we could collect was very imperfect and confined. Whenever any of the loweſt claſs of people had a quarrel amongſt themſelves, the matter in diſpute was referred to the deciſion of ſome Chief, probably the Chief of the diſtrict, or the perſon to whom they appertained. If an inferior Chief had given cauſe of offence to one of a higher rank, the feelings of the latter at the moment ſeemed the only meaſure of his puniſhment. If he had the good fortune to eſcape the firſt tranſports of his ſuperior's rage, he generally found means, through the mediation of ſome third perſon, to compound for his crime by a part or the whole of his property and effects. Theſe were the only facts that came to our knowledge on this head.

The religion of theſe people reſembles, in moſt of its principal

principal features, that of the Society and Friendly Iſlands. Their *Morais*, their *Whattas*, their idols, their ſacrifices, and their ſacred ſongs, all of which they have in common with each other, are convincing proofs, that their religious notions are derived from the ſame ſource. In the length and number of their ceremonies, this branch indeed far exceeds the reſt; and, though in all theſe countries there is a certain claſs of men, to whoſe care the performance of their religious rites is committed; yet we had never met with a regular ſociety of prieſts, till we diſcovered the cloiſters of Kakooa in Karakakooa Bay. The head of this order was called *Orono*; a title which we imagined to imply ſomething highly ſacred, and which, in the perſon of Omeeah, was honoured almoſt to adoration. It is probable, that the privilege of entering into this order (at leaſt as to the principal offices in it), is limited to certain families. Omeeah, the *Orono*, was the ſon of Kaoo, and the uncle of Kaireekeea; which laſt preſided, during the abſence of his grandfather, in all religious ceremonies at the *Morai*. It was alſo remarked, that the child of Omeeah, an only ſon, about five years old, was never ſuffered to appear without a number of attendants, and ſuch other marks of care and ſolicitude, as we ſaw no other like inſtance of. This ſeemed to indicate, that his life was an object of the greateſt moment, and that he was deſtined to ſucceed to the high rank of his father. 1779. March.

It has been mentioned, that the title of *Orono*, with all its honours, was given to Captain Cook; and it is alſo certain, that they regarded us, generally, as a race of people ſuperior to themſelves; and uſed often to ſay, that great *Eatooa* dwelled in our country. The little image, which we have before deſcribed, as the favourite idol on the *Morai*

in

1779. March.

in Karakakooa Bay, they call *Koonooraekaiee*, and ſaid it was Terreeoboo's God; and that he alſo reſided amongſt us.

There are found an infinite variety of theſe images, both on the *Morais*, and within and without their houſes, to which they give different names; but it ſoon became obvious to us in how little eſtimation they were held, from their frequent expreſſions of contempt of them, and from their even offering them to ſale for trifles. At the ſame time, there ſeldom failed to be ſome one particular figure in favour, to which, whilſt this preference laſted, all their adoration was addreſſed. This conſiſted in arraying it in red cloth; beating their drums, and ſinging hymns before it; laying bunches of red feathers, and different ſorts of vegetables, at its feet; and expoſing a pig, or a dog, to rot on the *whatta* that ſtood near it.

In a bay to the Southward of Karakakooa, a party of our gentlemen were conducted to a large houſe, in which they found the black figure of a man, reſting on his fingers and toes, with his head inclined backward; the limbs well formed and exactly proportioned, and the whole beautifully poliſhed. This figure the natives called *Maee*; and round it were placed thirteen others of rude and diſtorted ſhapes, which they ſaid were the *Eatooas* of ſeveral deceaſed Chiefs, whoſe names they recounted. The place was full of *whattas*, on which lay the remains of their offerings. They likewiſe give a place in their houſes to many ludicrous and ſome obſcene idols, like the Priapus of the ancients.

It hath been remarked, by former voyagers, that both among the Society and Friendly Iſlanders, an adoration is paid to particular birds; and I am led to believe, that the ſame cuſtom prevails here; and that, probably, the raven is the

the object of it, from ſeeing two of theſe birds tame at the village of Kakooa, which they told me were *Eatooas*; and, refuſing every thing I offered for them, cautioned me, at the ſame time, not to hurt or offend them. 1779. March.

Amongſt their religious ceremonies, may be reckoned the prayers and offerings made by the prieſts before their meals. Whilſt the *ava* is chewing, of which they always drink before they begin their repaſt, the perſon of the higheſt rank takes the lead in a ſort of hymn, in which he is preſently joined by one, two, or more of the company; the reſt moving their bodies, and ſtriking their hands gently together, in concert with the ſingers. When the *ava* is ready, cups of it are handed about to thoſe who do not join in the ſong, which they keep in their hands till it is ended; when, uniting in one loud reſponſe, they drink off their cup. The performers of the hymn are then ſerved with *ava*, who drink it after a repetition of the ſame ceremony; and, if there be preſent one of a very ſuperior rank, a cup is, laſt of all, preſented to him, which, after chanting ſome time alone, and being anſwered by the reſt, and pouring a little out on the ground, he drinks off. A piece of the fleſh that is dreſſed, is next cut off, without any ſelection of the part of the animal; which, together with ſome of the vegetables, being depoſited at the foot of the image of the *Eatooa*, and a hymn chanted, their meal commences. A ceremony of much the ſame kind is alſo performed by the Chiefs, whenever they drink *ava*, between their meals.

Human ſacrifices are more frequent here, according to the account of the natives themſelves, than in any other iſlands we viſited. Theſe horrid rites are not only had recourſe to upon the commencement of war, and preceding

1779. March.

great battles, and other ſignal enterprizes; but the death of any conſiderable Chief calls for a ſacrifice of one or more *Towtows*, according to his rank; and we were told, that ten men were deſtined to ſuffer on the death of Terreeoboo. What may (if any thing poſſibly can) leſſen, in ſome ſmall degree, the horror of this practice, is, that the unhappy victims have not the moſt diſtant intimation of their fate. Thoſe who are fixed upon to fall, are ſet upon with clubs wherever they happen to be; and, after being diſpatched, are brought dead to the place, where the remainder of the rites are completed. The reader will here call to his remembrance the ſkulls of the captives, that had been ſacrificed at the death of ſome great Chief, and which were fixed on the rails round the top of the *Morai* at Kakooa. We got a farther piece of intelligence upon this ſubject at the village of Kowrowa; where, on our inquiring into the uſe of a ſmall piece of ground, incloſed with a ſtone fence, we were told that it was an *Here-eere*, or burying-ground of a Chief; and there, added our informer, pointing to one of the corners, lie the *tangata* and *waheene taboo*, or the man and woman who were ſacrificed at his funeral.

To this claſs of their cuſtoms may alſo be referred that of knocking out their fore-teeth. Scarce any of the lower people, and very few of the Chiefs, were ſeen, who had not loſt one or more of them; and we always underſtood that this voluntary puniſhment, like the cutting off the joints of the finger at the Friendly Iſlands, was not inflicted on themſelves from the violence of grief, on the death of their friends, but was deſigned as a propitiatory ſacrifice to the *Eatooa*, to avert any danger or miſchief to which they might be expoſed.

We

1779. March.

We were able to learn but little of their notions with regard to a future ſtate. Whenever we aſked them, whither the dead were gone? we were always anſwered, that the breath, which they appeared to conſider as the ſoul, or immortal part, was gone to the *Eatooa*; and on puſhing our inquiries farther, they ſeemed to deſcribe ſome particular place, where they imagined the abode of the deceaſed to be; but we could not perceive, that they thought, in this ſtate, either rewards or puniſhments awaited them.

Having promiſed the Reader, in the firſt Chapter, an explanation of what was meant by the word *taboo*, I ſhall, in this place, lay before him the particular inſtances that fell under our obſervation, of its application and effects. On our inquiring into the reaſons of the interdiction of all intercourſe between us and the natives, the day preceding the arrival of Terreeoboo, we were told, that the Bay was *tabooed*. The ſame reſtriction took place, at our requeſt, the day we interred the bones of Captain Cook. In theſe two inſtances the natives paid the moſt implicit and ſcrupulous obedience; but whether on any religious principle, or merely in deference to the civil authority of their Chiefs, I cannot determine. When the ground near our obſervatories, and the place where our maſts lay, were *tabooed*, by ſticking ſmall wands round them, this operated in a manner not leſs efficacious. But though this mode of conſecration was performed by the prieſts only, yet ſtill, as the men ventured to come within the ſpace, when invited by us, it ſhould ſeem, that they were under no religious apprehenſions; and that their obedience was limited to our refuſal only. The women could, by no means, be induced to come near us; but this was probably on account of the *Morai* adjoining; which they are prohibited, at all times, and in all the

1779. March.

iſlands of thoſe ſeas, from approaching. Mention hath been already made, that women are always *tabooed*, or forbidden to eat certain kind of meats. We alſo frequently ſaw ſeveral at their meals, who had the meat put into their mouths by others; and on our aſking the reaſon of this ſingularity, were told, that they were *tabooed*, or forbidden, to feed themſelves. This prohibition, we underſtood, was always laid on them, after they had aſſiſted at any funeral, or touched a dead body, and alſo on other occaſions. It is neceſſary to obſerve, that, on theſe occaſions, they apply the word *taboo* indifferently both to perſons and things. Thus they ſay, the natives were *tabooed*, or the bay was *tabooed*, and ſo of the reſt. This word is alſo uſed to expreſs any thing ſacred, or eminent, or devoted. Thus the king of Owhyhee was called *Eree-taboo*; a human victim, *tangata-taboo*; and, in the ſame manner, among the Friendly Iſlanders, Tonga, the iſland where the king reſides, is named *Tonga-taboo*

Concerning their marriages, I can afford the reader little farther ſatisfaction, than informing him, that ſuch a relation or compact exiſts amongſt them. I have already had occaſion to mention, that at the time Terreeoboo had left his queen Rora-rora at Mowee, he was attended by another woman, by whom he had children, and to whom he was very much attached; but how far polygamy, properly ſpeaking, is allowed, or how far it is mixed with concubinage, either with reſpect to the king, the Chiefs, or among the inferior orders, too few facts came to our knowledge to juſtify any concluſions. It hath alſo been obſerved, that, except Kaneekabareea, and the wife of the Orono, with three women whom I ſhall have occaſion hereafter to mention, we never ſaw any female of high rank. From what I had an opportunity

tunity of obſerving of the domeſtic concerns of the loweſt claſs, the houſe ſeemed to be under the direction of one man and woman, and the children in the like ſtate of ſubordination as in civilized countries. 1779. March.

It will not be improper, in this place, to take notice, that we were eye-witneſſes of a fact, which, as it was the only inſtance we ſaw of any thing like jealouſy among them, ſhews, at the ſame time, that not only fidelity, but a degree of reſerve, is required from the married women of conſequence. At one of the entertainments of boxing, Omeeah was obſerved to riſe from his place two or three times, and to go up to his wife with ſtrong marks of diſpleaſure, ordering her, as it appeared to us from his manner, to withdraw. Whether it was, that being very handſome, he thought ſhe drew too much of our attention, or without being able to determine what other reaſon he might have for his conduct, it is but juſtice to ſay, that there exiſted no real cauſe of jealouſy. However, ſhe kept her place; and when the entertainment was over, joined our party, and ſoliciting ſome trifling preſents, was given to underſtand, that we had none about us; but that if ſhe would accompany us toward our tent, ſhe ſhould return with ſuch as ſhe liked beſt. She was accordingly walking along with us; which Omeeah obſerving, followed in a violent rage, and ſeizing her by the hair, began to inflict, with his fiſts, a ſevere corporal puniſhment. This ſight, eſpecially as we had innocently been the cauſe of it, gave us much concern; and yet we were told, that it would be highly improper to interfere between man and wife of ſuch high rank. We were, however, not left without the conſolation of ſeeing the natives at laſt interpoſe; and had the farther ſatisfaction of meeting them together the next day, in perfect good-

1779. March. good-humour with each other; and what is ſtill more ſingular, the lady would not ſuffer us to remonſtrate with her huſband on his treatment of her, which we were much inclined to do, and plainly told us, that he had done no more than he ought.

Whilſt I was aſhore at the obſervatory at Karakakooa Bay, I had twice an opportunity of ſeeing a conſiderable part of their funeral rites. Intelligence was brought me of the death of an old Chief in a houſe near our obſervatories, ſoon after the event happened. On going to the place, I found a number of people aſſembled, and ſeated round a ſquare *area*, fronting the houſe in which the deceaſed lay, whilſt a man, in a red feathered cap, advanced from an interior part of the houſe to the door, and, putting out his head, at almoſt every moment uttered a moſt lamentable howl, accompanied with the moſt ſingular grimaces, and violent diſtortions of his face, that can be conceived. After this had paſſed a ſhort time, a large mat was ſpread upon the *area*, and two men and thirteen women came out of the houſe and ſate themſelves down upon it, in three equal rows; the two men, and three of the women, being in front. The necks and hands of the women were decorated with feathered ruffs; and broad green leaves, curiouſly ſcolloped, were ſpread over their ſhoulders. At one corner of this *area*, near a ſmall hut, were half a dozen boys waving ſmall white banners, and the tufted wands, or *taboo* ſticks, which have been often mentioned in the former chapters, who would not permit us to approach them. This led me to imagine, that the dead body might be depoſited in this little hut; but I afterward underſtood, that it was in the houſe where the man in the red cap opened the rites, by playing his tricks at the door. The company juſt mentioned,

tioned, being ſeated on the mat, began to ſing a melancholy tune, accompanied with a ſlow and gentle motion of the body and arms. When this had continued ſome time, they raiſed themſelves on their knees, and, in a poſture between kneeling and ſitting, began by degrees to move their arms and their bodies with great rapidity, the tune always keeping pace with their motions. As theſe laſt exertions were too violent to continue long, they reſumed, at intervals, their ſlower movements; and, after this performance had laſted an hour, more mats were brought and ſpread upon the *area*, and four or five elderly women, amongſt whom, I was told, was the dead Chief's wife, advanced ſlowly out of the houſe, and ſeating themſelves in the front of the firſt company, began to cry and wail moſt bitterly; the women in the three rows behind joining them, whilſt the two men inclined their heads over them in a very melancholy and penſive attitude. At this period of the rites, I was obliged to leave them to attend at the obſervatory; but returning within half an hour, found them in the ſame ſituation. I continued with them till late in the evening, and left them proceeding, with little variation, as juſt deſcribed; reſolving, however, to attend early in the morning, to ſee the remainder of the ceremony. On my arrival at the houſe, as ſoon as it was day, I found, to my mortification, the crowd diſperſed, and every thing quiet; and was given to underſtand, that the corpſe was removed; nor could I learn in what manner it was diſpoſed of. I was interrupted in making farther inquiries for this purpoſe, by the approach of three women of rank, who, whilſt their attendants ſtood near them with their fly-flaps, ſat down by us, and, entering into converſation, ſoon made me comprehend, that our preſence was a hindrance to the performance of ſome neceſſary rites.

1779. March.

I had

1779. March. I had hardly got out of ſight, before I heard their cries and lamentations; and meeting them a few hours afterward, I found they had painted the lower part of their faces perfect black.

The other opportunity I had of obſerving theſe ceremonies, was in the caſe of an ordinary perſon; when, on hearing ſome mournful female cries iſſue from a miſerable looking hut, I ventured into it, and found an old woman with her daughter, weeping over the body of an elderly man, who had but juſt expired, being ſtill warm. The firſt ſtep they took, was to cover the body with cloth, after which, lying down by it, they drew the cloth over themſelves, and then began a mournful kind of ſong, frequently repeating, *Aweh medoaah! Aweh tanee!* Oh my father! Oh my huſband! A younger daughter was alſo at the ſame time lying proſtrate, in a corner of the houſe, covered over with black cloth, repeating the ſame words. On leaving this melancholy ſcene, I found at the door a number of their neighbours collected together, and liſtening to their cries with profound ſilence. I was reſolved not to miſs this opportunity of ſeeing in what manner they diſpoſe of the body; and therefore, after ſatisfying myſelf, before I went to bed, that it was not then removed, I gave orders, that the ſentries ſhould walk backward and forward before the houſe, and, in caſe they ſuſpected any meaſures were taking for the removal of the body, to give me immediate notice. However, the ſentries had not kept a good look-out, for in the morning I found the body was gone. On inquiring, what they had done with it? They pointed toward the ſea; indicating, moſt probably, thereby, that it had been committed to the deep, or perhaps that it had been carried beyond the bay, to ſome burying-ground in another

another part of the country. The Chiefs are interred in the *Morais*, or *Heree-erees*, with the men ſacrificed on the occaſion, by the ſide of them; and we obſerved, that the *Morai*, where the Chief had been buried, who, as I have already mentioned, was killed in the cave, after ſo ſtout a reſiſtance, was hung round with red cloth.

1779. March.

A

VOYAGE

TO THE

PACIFIC OCEAN.

BOOK VI.

TRANSACTIONS DURING THE SECOND EXPEDITION TO THE NORTH, BY THE WAY OF KAMTSCHATKA; AND ON THE RETURN HOME, BY THE WAY OF CANTON, AND THE CAPE OF GOOD HOPE.

CHAP. I.

Departure from Oneeheow.—Fruitleſs Attempt to diſcover Modoopapappa.—Courſe ſteered for Awatſka Bay.—Occurrences during that Paſſage.—Sudden Change from Heat to Cold.—Diſtreſs occaſioned by the leaking of the Reſolution.—View of the Coaſt of Kamtſchatka.—Extreme Rigour of the Climate.—Loſe Sight of the Diſcovery.—The Reſolution enters the Bay of Awatſka.—Proſpect of the Town of Saint Peter and Saint Paul.—Party ſent aſhore.—Their Reception by the Commanding Officer of the Port.—Meſſage diſpatched to the Commander at Bolcheretſk.—Arrival of the

Diſcovery. — Return of the Meſſengers, from the Commander.—Extraordinary Mode of travelling.—Viſit from a Merchant, and a German Servant belonging to the Commander.

1779. March. Monday 15. ON the 15th of March, at ſeven in the morning, we weighed anchor, and paſſing to the North of Tahoora, ſtood on to the South Weſt, in hopes of falling in with the iſland of Modoopapappa, which, we were told by the natives, lay in that direction, about five hours ſail from Tahoora. At four in the afternoon, we were overtaken by a ſtout canoe, with ten men, who were going from Oneeheow to Tahoora, to kill tropic and man-of-war birds, with which that place was ſaid to abound. It has been mentioned before, that the feathers of theſe birds are in great requeſt, being much uſed in making their cloaks, and other ornamental parts of their dreſs.

At eight, having ſeen nothing of the iſland, we hauled the wind to the Northward, till midnight, and then tacked, and ſtood on a wind to the South Eaſt, till day-light next
Tueſday 16. morning, at which time Tahoora bore Eaſt North Eaſt, five or ſix leagues diſtant. We afterward ſteered Weſt South Weſt, and made the Diſcovery's ſignal to ſpread four miles upon our ſtarboard beam. At noon, our latitude was 21° 27′, and our longitude 198° 42′; and having ſtood on till five, in the ſame direction, we made the Diſcovery's ſignal to come under our ſtern, and gave over all hopes of ſeeing Modoopapappa. We conceived, that it might probably lie in a more Southerly direction from Tahoora, than that in which we had ſteered; though, after all, it is poſſible, that we might have paſſed it in the night, as the iſlanders deſcribed it

it to be very ſmall, and almoſt even with the ſurface of the ſea. 1779. March.

The next day, we ſteered Weſt; it being Captain Clerke's intention to keep as near as poſſible in the ſame parallel of latitude, till we ſhould make the longitude of Awatſka Bay, and afterward to ſteer due North for the harbour of Saint Peter and Saint Paul in that bay; which was alſo appointed for our rendezvous, in caſe of ſeparation. This track was choſen on account of its being, as far as we knew, unexplored; and we were not without hopes of falling in with ſome new iſlands on our paſſage. Wedneſ. 17.

We had ſcarcely ſeen a bird, ſince our loſing ſight of Tahoora, till the 18th in the afternoon, when, being in the latitude of 21° 12′, and the longitude of 194° 45′, the appearance of a great many boobies, and ſome man-of-war birds, made us keep a ſharp look-out for land. Toward evening, the wind leſſened, and the North Eaſt ſwell, which, on the 16th and 17th, had been ſo heavy as to make the ſhips labour exceedingly, was much abated. The next day, we ſaw no appearance of land; and at noon, we ſteered a point more to the Southward, viz. Weſt by South, in the hopes of finding the trade winds (which blew almoſt invariably from the Eaſt by North) freſher as we advanced within the tropic. It is ſomewhat ſingular, that though we ſaw no birds in the forenoon, yet toward evening we had again a number of boobies and man-of-war birds about us. This ſeemed to indicate, that we had paſſed the land from whence the former flights had come, and that we were approaching ſome other low iſland. Thurſday 18. Friday 19.

The wind continued very moderate, with fine weather, till the 23d, when it freſhened from the North Eaſt by Eaſt, and increaſed to a ſtrong gale, which ſplit ſome of our old ſails, Tueſday 23.

1779. March. Thurſday 25. ſails, and made the running rigging very frequently give way. This gale laſted twelve hours; it then became more moderate, and continued ſo till the 25th at noon, when we entirely loſt it, and had only a very light air.

Friday 26. On the 26th in the morning, we thought we ſaw land to the Weſt South Weſt, but, after running about ſixteen leagues in that direction, we found our miſtake; and night coming on, we again ſteered Weſt. Our latitude, at this time, was 19° 45′, which was the greateſt Southing we made in this run; our longitude was 183°, and variation 12° 45′ Eaſt. We continued in this courſe, with little Monday 29. alteration in the wind, till the 29th, when it ſhifted to the South Eaſt and South South Eaſt, and, for a few hours in the night, it was in the Weſt; the weather being dark and cloudy, with much rain. We had met, for ſome days paſt, ſeveral turtles, one of which was the ſmalleſt I ever ſaw, not exceeding three inches in length. We were alſo accompanied by man-of-war birds, and boobies of an unuſual kind, being quite white (except the tip of the wing, which was black), and eaſily miſtaken, at firſt ſight, for gannets.

The light winds which we had met with for ſome time paſt, with the preſent unſettled ſtate of the weather, and the little appearance of any change for the better, induced Captain Clerke to alter his plan of keeping within the tropical latitudes; and accordingly, at ſix this evening, we began to ſteer North Weſt by North, at which time our latitude was 20° 23′, and our longitude 180° 40′. During the continuance of the light winds, which prevailed almoſt conſtantly ever ſince our departure from the Sandwich Iſlands, the weather was very cloſe, and the air hot and ſultry; the thermometer being generally at 80°, and ſometimes at 83°.

All

All this time, we had a conſiderable ſwell from the North Eaſt; and in no period of the voyage did the ſhips roll and ſtrain ſo violently. 1779. March.

In the morning of the 1ſt of April, the wind changed from the South Eaſt to the North Eaſt by Eaſt, and blew a freſh breeze, till the morning of the 4th, when it altered two points more to the Eaſt, and by noon increaſed to a ſtrong gale, which laſted till the afternoon of the 5th, attended with hazy weather. It then again altered its direction to the South Eaſt, became more moderate, and was accompanied by heavy ſhowers of rain. During all this time, we kept ſteering to the North Weſt, againſt a ſlow but regular current from that quarter, which cauſed a conſtant variation from our reckoning by the log, of fifteen miles a day. On the 4th, being then in the latitude 26° 17′, and longitude 173° 30′, we paſſed prodigious quantities of what ſailors call Portugueſe men-of-war *(holothuria phyſalis)*, and were alſo accompanied with a great number of ſea birds, amongſt which we obſerved, for the firſt time, the albatroſs and ſheerwater. April. Thurſday 1. Sunday 4. Monday 5.

On the 6th, at noon, we loſt the trade wind, and were ſuddenly taken a-back, with the wind from the North North Weſt. At this time, our latitude was 29° 50′, and our longitude 170° 1′. As the old running ropes were conſtantly breaking in the late gales, we reeved what new ones we had left, and made ſuch other preparations, as were neceſſary for the very different climate with which we were now ſhortly to encounter. The fine weather we met with between the tropics, had not been idly ſpent. The carpenters found ſufficient employment in repairing the boats. The beſt bower cable had been ſo much damaged by the foul ground in Karakakooa Bay, and whilſt we were at anchor Tueſday 6.

1779. April.

chor off Oneeheow, that we were obliged to cut forty fathoms from it; in converting of which, with other old cordage, into ſpun-yard, and applying it to different uſes, a conſiderable part of the people were kept conſtantly employed by the boatſwain. The airing of ſails and other ſtores, which, from the leakineſs of the decks and ſides of the ſhips, were perpetually ſubject to be wet, had now become a frequent as well as a laborious and troubleſome part of our duty.

Beſides theſe cares, which had regard only to the ſhips themſelves, there were others, which had for their object the preſervation of the health of the crews, that furniſhed a conſtant occupation to a great number of our hands. The ſtanding orders, eſtabliſhed by Captain Cook, of airing the bedding, placing fires between decks, waſhing them with vinegar, and ſmoking them with gunpowder, were obſerved without any intermiſſion. For ſome time paſt, even the operation of mending the ſailors old jackets had riſen into a duty both of difficulty and importance. It may be neceſſary to inform thoſe who are unacquainted with the diſpoſition and habits of ſeamen, that they are ſo accuſtomed in ſhips of war to be directed in the care of themſelves by their officers, that they loſe the very idea of foreſight, and contract the thoughtleſſneſs of infants. I am ſure, that if our people had been left to their own diſcretion alone, we ſhould have had the whole crew naked, before the voyage had been half finiſhed. It was natural to expect, that their experience, during our voyage to the North laſt year, would have made them ſenſible of the neceſſity of paying ſome attention to theſe matters; but if ſuch reflections ever occurred to them, their impreſſion was ſo tranſitory, that, upon our return to the tropical climates, their

their fur jackets, and the reſt of their cold country clothes, were kicked about the decks as things of no value; though it was generally known, in both ſhips, that we were to make another voyage toward the pole. They were, of courſe, picked up by the officers; and, being put into caſks, reſtored about this time to the owners. 1779. April.

In the afternoon, we obſerved ſome of the ſheathing floating by the ſhip; and, on examination, found that twelve or fourteen feet had been waſhed off from under the larboard-bow, where we ſuppoſed the leak to have been; which, ever ſince our leaving Sandwich Iſlands, had kept the people almoſt conſtantly at the pumps, making twelve inches water an hour. This day we ſaw a number of ſmall crabs, of a pale blue colour; and had again, in company, a few albatroſſes and ſheerwaters. The thermometer, in the night-time, ſunk eleven degrees; and although it ſtill remained as high as 59°, yet we ſuffered much from the cold; our feelings being, as yet, by no means reconciled to that degree of temperature.

The wind continued blowing freſh from the North, till the eighth, in the morning, when it became more moderate, with fair weather, and gradually changed its direction to the Eaſt, and afterward to the South. Thurſday 8.

On the ninth, at noon, our latitude was 32° 16′; our longitude 166° 40′; and the variation 8° 30′ Eaſt. And on the tenth, having croſſed the track of the Spaniſh galleons from the Manillas to Acapulco, we expected to have fallen in with the Iſland of Rica de Plata, which, according to De Liſle's chart, in which the route of thoſe ſhips is laid down, ought to have been in ſight; its latitude, as there given, being 33° 30′ North, and its longitude 166° Eaſt. Notwithſtanding we were ſo far advanced to the North- Friday 9. Saturday 10.

1779. April. ward, we ſaw this day a tropic bird, and alſo ſeveral other kinds of ſea-birds; ſuch as puffins, ſea-parrots, ſheerwaters, and albatroſſes.

Sunday 11. On the eleventh, at noon, we were in latitude 35° 30′, longitude 165° 45′; and during the courſe of the day, had ſea-birds, as before, and paſſed ſeveral bunches of ſea-weed. About the ſame time, the Diſcovery paſſed a log of wood; but no other ſigns of land were ſeen.

Monday 12. The next day the wind came gradually round to the Eaſt, and increaſed to ſo ſtrong a gale, as obliged us to ſtrike our top-gallant yards, and brought us under the lower ſails, and the main top-ſail cloſe reefed. Unfortunately we were upon that tack, which was the moſt diſadvantageous for our leak. But, as we had always been able to keep it under with the hand pumps, it gave us no great uneaſineſs, till Tueſday 13. the 13th, about ſix in the afternoon, when we were greatly alarmed by a ſudden inundation, that deluged the whole ſpace between decks. The water, which had lodged in the coal-hole, not finding a ſufficient vent into the well, had forced up the platforms over it, and in a moment ſet every thing afloat. Our ſituation was indeed exceedingly diſtreſſing; nor did we immediately ſee any means of relieving ourſelves. A pump, through the upper decks into the coal-hole, could anſwer no end, as it would very ſoon have been choaked up by the ſmall coals; and, to bale the water out with buckets, was become impracticable, from the number of bulky materials that were waſhed out of the gunner's ſtore-room into it, and which, by the ſhip's motion, were toſſed violently from ſide to ſide. No other method was therefore left, but to cut a hole through the bulk-head (or partition) that ſeparated the coal-hole from the fore-hold, and by that means to make a paſſage for the body of water into

into the well. However, before that could be done, it was neceſſary to get the caſks of dry proviſions out of the fore-hold, which kept us employed the greateſt part of the night; ſo that the carpenters could not get at the partition till the next morning. As ſoon as the paſſage was made, the greateſt part of the water emptied itſelf into the well, and enabled us to get out the reſt with buckets. But the leak was now ſo much increaſed, that we were obliged to keep one half of the people conſtantly pumping and baleing, till the noon of the 15th. Our men bore, with great cheerfulneſs, this exceſſive fatigue, which was much increaſed by their having no dry place to ſleep in; and, on this account, we began to ſerve their full allowance of grog. 1779. April. Wedneſ. 14. Thurſday 15.

The weather now becoming more moderate, and the ſwell leſs heavy, we were enabled to clear away the reſt of the caſks from the fore-hold, and to open a ſufficient paſſage for the water to the pumps. This day we ſaw a greeniſh piece of drift-wood, and fancying the water coloured, we ſounded, but got no bottom with a hundred and ſixty fathoms of line. Our latitude, at noon this day, was 41° 52′, longitude 161° 15′; variation 6° 30′ Eaſt; and the wind ſoon after veering to the Northward, we altered our courſe three points to the Weſt.

On the 16th, at noon, we were in the latitude of 42° 12′, and in the longitude of 160° 5′; and as we were now approaching the place where a great extent of land is ſaid to have been ſeen by De Gama, we were glad of the opportunity which the courſe we were ſteering gave, of contributing to remove the doubts, if any ſhould be ſtill entertained, reſpecting the falſehood of this pretended diſcovery. For it is to be obſerved, that no one has ever yet been able to find who John de Gama was, Friday 16.

1779. April. when he lived, or what year this pretended diſcovery was made.

According to Mr. Muller, the firſt account of it given to the Public was in a chart publiſhed by Texeira, a Portugueze geographer, in 1649, who places it ten or twelve degrees to the North Eaſt of Japan, between the latitudes of 44° and 45°; and announces it to be *land ſeen by John de Gama, the Indian, in a voyage from China to New Spain*. On what grounds the French geographers have ſince removed it five degrees to the Eaſtward, does not appear; except we ſuppoſe it to have been done in order to make room for another diſcovery made by the Dutch, called *Company's Land*; of which we ſhall have occaſion to ſpeak hereafter.

During the whole day, the wind was exceedingly unſettled, being ſeldom ſteady to two or three points; and blowing in freſh guſts, which were ſucceeded by dead calms. Theſe were not unpromiſing appearances; but, after ſtanding off and on, the whole of this day, without ſeeing any thing of the land, we again ſteered to the Northward, not thinking it worth our while to loſe time in ſearch of an object, the opinion of whoſe exiſtence had been already pretty generally exploded. Our people were employed the whole of the 16th, in getting their wet things dry, and in airing the ſhips below.

We now began to feel very ſharply the increaſing inclemency of the Northern climate. In the morning of
Sunday 18. the 18th, our latitude being 45° 40′, and our longitude 160° 25′, we had ſnow and ſleet, accompanied with ſtrong gales from the South Weſt. This circumſtance will appear very remarkable, if we conſider the ſeaſon of the year, and the quarter from which the wind blew. On the

19th,

19th, the thermometer, in the day-time, remained at the freezing point, and at four in the morning fell to 29°. If the reader will take the trouble to compare the degree of heat, during the hot ſultry weather we had at the beginning of this month, with the extreme cold which we now endured, he will conceive how ſeverely ſo rapid a change muſt have been felt by us. 1779. April. Monday 19.

In the gale of the 18th, we had ſplit almoſt all the ſails we had bent, which being our ſecond beſt ſuit, we were now reduced to make uſe of our laſt and beſt ſet. To add to Captain Clerke's difficulties, the ſea was in general ſo rough, and the ſhips ſo leaky, that the ſail-makers had no place to repair the ſails in, except his apartments, which, in his declining ſtate of health, was a ſerious inconvenience to him.

On the 20th, at noon, being in latitude 49° 45′ North, and longitude 161° 15′ Eaſt; and eagerly expecting to fall in with the coaſt of Aſia, the wind ſhifted ſuddenly to the North, and continued in the ſame quarter the following day. However, although it retarded our progreſs, yet the fair weather it brought was no ſmall refreſhment to us. Tueſday 20.

In the forenoon of the 21ſt, we ſaw a whale, and a land-bird; and, in the afternoon, the water looking muddy, we ſounded, but got no ground with an hundred and forty fathoms of line. During the three preceding days, we ſaw large flocks of wild-fowl, of a ſpecies reſembling ducks. This is uſually conſidered as a proof of the vicinity of land; but we had no other ſigns of it, ſince the 16th; in which time we had run upward of an hundred and fifty leagues. Wedneſ. 21.

On the 22d, the wind ſhifted to the North Eaſt, attended with miſty weather. The cold was exceedingly ſevere, and Thurſday 22.

the

1779. April. the ropes were ſo frozen, that it was with difficulty we could force them through the blocks. At noon, the latitude, by account, was 51° 38′, longitude 160° 7′; and on comparing our preſent poſition with that given to the Southern parts of Kamtſchatka, in the Ruſſian charts, Captain Clerke did not think it prudent to run on toward the land all night. We therefore tacked at ten; and, having ſounded, had ground agreeably to our conjectures, with ſeventy fathoms of line.

Friday 23. On the 23d, at ſix in the morning, being in latitude 52° 09′, and longitude 160° 07′, on the fog clearing away, the land appeared in mountains covered with ſnow; and extending from North three quarters Eaſt, to South Weſt, a high conical rock, bearing South Weſt, three quarters Weſt, at three or four leagues diſtance. We had no ſooner taken this imperfect view, than we were again covered with a thick fog. Being now, according to our maps, only eight leagues from the entrance of Awatſka Bay, as ſoon as the weather cleared up, we ſtood in to take a nearer view of the land; and a more diſmal and dreary proſpect I never beheld. The coaſt appears ſtraight and uniform, having no inlets or bays; the ground, from the ſhore, riſes in hills of a moderate elevation, behind which are ranges of mountains, whoſe ſummits were loſt in the clouds. The whole ſcene was entirely covered with ſnow, except the ſides of ſome of the cliffs, which roſe too abruptly from the ſea for the ſnow to lie upon them.

Saturday 24. The wind continued blowing very ſtrong from the North Eaſt, with thick hazy weather and ſleet, from the 24th till the 28th. During the whole time, the thermometer was never higher than 30½°. The ſhip appeared to be a complete maſs of ice; the ſhrowds were ſo incruſted with it, as

to

to meaſure in circumference more than double their uſual ſize; and, in ſhort, the experience of the oldeſt ſeaman among us, had never met with any thing like the continued ſhowers of ſleet, and the extreme cold, which we now encountered. Indeed the ſeverity of the weather, added to the great difficulty of working the ſhips, and the labour of keeping the pumps conſtantly going, rendered the ſervice too hard for many of the crew, ſome of whom were froſt-bitten, and others laid up with bad colds. We continued all this time ſtanding four hours on each tack, having generally ſoundings of ſixty fathoms, when about three leagues from the land; but none at twice that diſtance. On the 25th, we had a tranſient view of the entrance of Awatſka Bay; but, in the preſent ſtate of the weather, we were afraid of venturing into it. Upon our ſtanding off again, we loſt ſight of the Diſcovery; but, as we were now ſo near the place of rendezvous, this gave us no great uneaſineſs. 1779. April. Sunday 25.

On the 28th, in the morning, the weather at laſt cleared, and the wind fell to a light breeze from the ſame quarter as before. We had a fine warm day; and, as we now began to expect a thaw, the men were employed in breaking the ice from off the rigging, maſts, and ſails, in order to prevent its falling on our heads. At noon, being in the latitude of 52° 44′, and the longitude of 159°, the entrance of Awatſka Bay bore North Weſt, diſtant three or four leagues; and, about three in the afternoon, a fair wind ſprung up from the Southward, with which we ſtood in, having regular ſoundings, from twenty-two to ſeven fathoms. Wedneſ. 28.

The mouth of the bay opens in a North North Weſt direction. The land, on the South ſide, is of a moderate height;

1779. April.

height; to the Northward, it riſes into a bluff head, which is the higheſt part of the coaſt. In the channel between them, near the North Eaſt ſide, lie three remarkable rocks; and, farther in, near the oppoſite coaſt, a ſingle detached rock of a conſiderable ſize. On the North head there is a look-out houſe, which, when the Ruſſians expect any of their ſhips upon the coaſt, is uſed as a light-houſe. There was a flag-ſtaff on it; but we ſaw no ſign of any perſon being there.

Having paſſed the mouth of the bay, which is about four miles long, we opened a large circular baſon of twenty-five miles in circumference; and, at half paſt four, came to an anchor in ſix fathoms water, being afraid of running foul on a ſhoal, or ſome ſunk rocks, which are ſaid by Muller* to lie in the channel of the harbour of St. Peter and St. Paul. The middle of the bay was full of looſe ice, drifting with the tide; but the ſhores were ſtill entirely blocked up with it. Great flocks of wild-fowl were ſeen of various ſpecies; likewiſe ravens, eagles, and large flights of Greenland pigeons. We examined every corner of the bay, with our glaſſes, in ſearch of the town of St. Peter and St. Paul; which, according to the accounts given us at Oonalaſhka, we had conceived to be a place of ſome ſtrength and conſideration. At length we diſcovered, on a narrow point of land to the North North Eaſt, a few miſerable log-houſes, and ſome conical huts, raiſed on poles, amounting in all to about thirty; which, from their ſituation, notwithſtanding all the reſpect we wiſhed to entertain for a Ruſſian *oſtrog*, we were under the neceſſity of concluding to be Petropaulowſka. However, in juſtice to the generous and hoſ-

* Voyages made by the Ruſſians from Aſia to America, &c. tranſlated from the German; by T. Jefferys, p. 37.

pitable

PLAN of the HARBOUR
off
S.T PETER and S.T PAUL,
Surveyed by
William Bligh.
Master of the Resolution.

h. m.
High Water at 4.38. on Full and Change; The Tide rises 5 or 6 feet.

Hospital

Town of S.t Peter & S.t Paul.

Watering Place

Scale of 1760 yards or one English Mile
330 440 880 1320 1760

PLAN of the BAY of AWATSKA on the EAST COAST of KAMTSCHATKA

Awatska River

Paratoonka

S.t Peter and S.t Paul's Harbour

Lat.: 53°. 0'. 38". N.
Long.: 158°. 43'. 0". E.
Var.n 6°. 19' E.
1779.

Rakowerska Harbour

Tareinska Harbour

Nautic Miles.
5 10 15

pitable treatment we found here, I ſhall beg leave to anticipate the reader's curioſity, by aſſuring him, that our diſappointment proved to be more of a laughable than a ſerious nature. For, in this wretched extremity of the earth, ſituated beyond every thing that we conceived to be moſt barbarous and inhoſpitable, and, as it were, out of the very reach of civilization, barricaded with ice, and covered with ſummer ſnow, in a poor miſerable port, far inferior to the meaneſt of our fiſhing towns, we met with feelings of humanity, joined to a greatneſs of mind, and elevation of ſentiment, which would have done honour to any nation or climate. 1779. April.

During the night, much ice drifted by us with the tide, and at day-light I was ſent with the boats to examine the bay, and deliver the letters we had brought from Oonalaſhka to the Ruſſian Commander. We directed our courſe toward the village I have juſt mentioned, and having proceeded as far as we were able with the boats, we got upon the ice, which extended near half a mile from the ſhore. Mr. Webber, and two of the ſeamen, accompanied me, whilſt the Maſter took the pinnace and cutter to finiſh the ſurvey, leaving the jolly-boat behind to carry us back. Thurſday 29.

I believe the inhabitants had not yet ſeen either the ſhip or the boats; for even after we had got on the ice, we could not perceive any ſigns of a living creature in the town. By the time we had advanced a little way on the ice, we obſerved a few men hurrying backward and forward, and preſently after, a ſledge, drawn by dogs, with one of the inhabitants in it, came down to the ſea-ſide, oppoſite to us. Whilſt we were gazing at this unuſual ſight, and admiring the great civility of this ſtranger, which we imagined had

1779. April. brought him to our aſſiſtance, the man, after viewing us for ſome time very attentively, turned ſhort round, and went off, with great ſpeed, toward the *oſtrog*. We were not leſs chagrined than diſappointed at his abrupt departure, as we began to find our journey over the ice attended not only with great difficulty, but even with danger. We ſunk at every ſtep almoſt knee deep in the ſnow, and, though we found tolerable footing at the bottom, yet the weak parts of the ice not being diſcoverable, we were conſtantly expoſed to the riſk of breaking through it. This accident at laſt actually happened to myſelf; for, ſtepping on quickly over a ſuſpicious ſpot, in order to preſs with leſs weight upon it, I came upon a ſecond, before I could ſtop myſelf, which broke under me, and in I fell. Luckily, I roſe clear of the ice, and a man that was a little way behind with a boat-hook, throwing it to me, I laid it acroſs ſome looſe pieces near me, and, by that means, was enabled to get upon firm ice again.

As we approached the ſhore, we found the ice, contrary to our expectations, more broken than it had been before. We were, however, again comforted by the ſight of another ſledge coming toward us, but inſtead of proceeding to our relief, the driver ſtopt ſhort, and began to call out to us. I immediately held up to him Iſmyloff's letters; upon which he turned about, and ſet off back again full ſpeed; followed, I believe, not with the prayers of any of our party. Being at a great loſs what concluſions to draw from this unaccountable behaviour, we continued our march toward the *oſtrog*, with great circumſpection, and when we had arrived within a quarter of a mile of it, we perceived a body of armed men marching toward us. That we might give them as little alarm, and have as peaceable an appearance as poſſible,

poſſible, the two men who had boat-hooks in their hands, were ordered into the rear, and Mr. Webber and myſelf marched in front. The Ruſſian party, conſiſting of about thirty ſoldiers, was headed by a decent-looking perſon, with a cane in his hand. He halted within a few yards of us, and drew up his men in a martial and good order. I delivered to him Iſmyloff's letters, and endeavoured to make him underſtand, as well as I could (though I afterward found in vain), that we were Engliſh, and had brought the papers from Oonalaſhka. After having examined us attentively, he began to conduct us toward the village, in great ſilence and ſolemnity, frequently halting his men, to form them in different manners, and make them perform ſeveral parts of their manual exerciſe, probably with a view to ſhew us, that if we had the temerity to offer any violence, we ſhould have to deal with men who were not ignorant of their buſineſs. 1779. April.

Though I was all this time in my wet clothes, ſhivering with cold, and ſufficiently inclined to the moſt unconditional ſubmiſſion, without having my fears violently alarmed; yet it was impoſſible not to be diverted with this military parade, notwithſtanding it was attended with the moſt unſeaſonable delay. At length, we arrived at the houſe of the Commanding Officer of the party, into which we were uſhered; and, after no ſmall ſtir in giving orders, and diſpoſing of the military without doors, our hoſt made his appearance, accompanied by another perſon, whom we underſtood to be the Secretary of the port. One of Iſmyloff's letters was now opened, and the other ſent off, by a ſpecial meſſenger, to Bolcheretſk, a town on the Weſt ſide of the peninſula of Kamtſchatka, where the Ruſſian Commander of this province uſually reſides.

1779. April.

It is very remarkable, that they had not ſeen the ſhip the preceding day, when we came to anchor in the bay, nor indeed this morning, till our boats were pretty near the ice. The panic with which the diſcovery had ſtruck them, we found, had been very conſiderable. The garriſon was immediately put under arms. Two ſmall field-pieces were placed at the entrance of the Commander's houſe, and pointed toward our boats; and ſhot, powder, and lighted matches were all ready at hand.

The officer, in whoſe houſe we were at preſent entertained, was a Serjeant, and the Commander of the *oſtrog*. Nothing could exceed the kindneſs and hoſpitality of his behaviour, after he recovered from the alarm occaſioned by our arrival. We found the houſe inſufferably hot, but exceedingly neat and clean. After I had changed my clothes, which the Serjeant's civility enabled me to do, by furniſhing me with a complete ſuit of his own, we were invited to ſit down to dinner, which I have no doubt was the beſt he could procure; and, conſidering the ſhortneſs of time he had to provide it, was managed with ſome ingenuity. As there was not time to prepare ſoup and *bouilli*, we had, in their ſtead, ſome cold beef ſliced, with hot water poured over it. We had next a large bird roaſted, of a ſpecies with which I was unacquainted, but of a very excellent taſte. After having eaten a part of this, it was taken off, and we were ſerved with fiſh dreſſed two different ways; and, ſoon after, the bird again made its appearance, in ſavory and ſweet *pates*. Our liquor, of which I ſhall have to ſpeak hereafter, was of the kind called by the Ruſſians *quaſs*, and was much the worſt part of the entertainment. The Serjeant's wife brought in ſeveral of the diſhes herſelf, and was not permitted to ſit down at table. Having finiſhed our repaſt,

paſt, during which it is hardly neceſſary to remark, that our converſation was confined to a few bows, and other ſigns of mutual reſpect, we endeavoured to open to our hoſt the cauſe and objects of our viſit to this port. As Iſmyloff had probably written to them on the ſame ſubject, in the letters we had before delivered, he appeared very readily to conceive our meaning; but as there was unfortunately no one in the place that could talk any other language except Ruſſian or Kamtſchadale, we found the utmoſt difficulty in comprehending the information he meant to convey to us. After ſome time ſpent in theſe endeavours to underſtand one another, we conceived the ſum of the intelligence we had procured to be, that though no ſupply, either of proviſions or naval ſtores, was to be had at this place, yet that theſe articles were in great plenty at Bolcheretſk. That the Commander would, moſt probably, be very willing to give us what we wanted; but that, till the Serjeant had received orders from him, neither he nor his people, nor the natives, could even venture to go on board the ſhip. 1779. April.

It was now time for us to take our leave; and, as my clothes were ſtill too wet to put on, I was obliged to have recourſe again to the Serjeant's benevolence, for his leave to carry thoſe I had borrowed of him on board. This requeſt was complied with very cheerfully, and a ſledge, drawn by five dogs, with a driver, was immediately provided for each of our party. The ſailors were highly delighted with this mode of conveyance; and what diverted them ſtill more was, that the two boat-hooks had alſo a ſledge appropriated to themſelves. Theſe ſledges are ſo light, and their conſtruction ſo well adapted to the purpoſes for which they are intended, that they went with great expedition, and perfect

1779. April. perfect ſafety, over the ice, which it would have been impoſſible for us, with all our caution, to have paſſed on foot.

On our return, we found the boats towing the ſhip toward the village; and at ſeven we got cloſe to the ice, and moored with the ſmall bower to the North Eaſt, and beſt bower to the South Weſt; the entrance of the bay bearing South by Eaſt, and South three quarters Eaſt; and the *oſtrog* North, one quarter Eaſt, diſtant one mile and a half. The Friday 30. next morning, the caſks and cables were got upon the quarter-deck, in order to lighten the ſhip forward; and the carpenters were ſet to work to ſtop the leak, which had given us ſo much trouble during our laſt run. It was found to have been occaſioned by the falling of ſome ſheathing from the larboard-bow, and the oakum between the planks having been waſhed out. The warm weather we had in the middle of the day, began to make the ice break away very faſt, which, drifting with the tide, had almoſt filled up the entrance of the bay. Several of our gentlemen paid their viſits to the Serjeant, by whom they were received with great civility; and Captain Clerke ſent him two bottles of rum, which he underſtood would be the moſt acceptable preſent he could make him, and received in return ſome fine fowls of the grouſe kind, and twenty trouts. Our ſportſmen met with but bad ſucceſs; for though the bay ſwarmed with flocks of ducks of various kinds, and Greenland pigeons, yet they were ſo ſhy, that they could not come within ſhot of them.

May. Saturday 1. In the morning of the 1ſt of May, ſeeing the Diſcovery ſtanding into the bay, a boat was immediately ſent to her aſſiſtance; and in the afternoon, ſhe moored cloſe by us. They told us, that after the weather cleared up on the 28th, they

they found themſelves to leeward of the bay, and that, when they got abreaſt of it the following day, and ſaw the entrance choaked up with ice, they ſtood off, after firing guns, concluding we could not be here; but finding afterward it was only looſe drift-ice, they had ventured in. The next day, the weather was ſo very unſettled, attended with heavy ſhowers of ſnow, that the carpenters were not able to proceed in their work. The thermometer ſtood at 28° in the evening, and the froſt was exceedingly ſevere in the night. 1779. May. Sunday 2.

The following morning, on our obſerving two ſledges drive into the village, Captain Clerke ſent me on ſhore, to inquire whether any meſſage was arrived from the Commander of Kamtſchatka, which, according to the Serjeant's account, might now be expected, in conſequence of the intelligence that had been ſent of our arrival. Bolcheretſk, by the uſual route, is about one hundred and thirty-five Engliſh miles from Saint Peter and Saint Paul's. Our diſpatches were ſent off in a ſledge drawn by dogs, on the 29th, about noon. And the anſwer arrived, as we afterward found, early this morning; ſo that they were only a little more than three days and a half in performing a journey of two hundred and ſeventy miles. Monday 3.

The return of the Commander's anſwer was, however, concealed from us for the preſent; and I was told, on my arrival at the Serjeant's, that we ſhould hear from him the next day. Whilſt I was on ſhore, the boat, which had brought me, together with another belonging to the Diſcovery, were ſet faſt in the ice, which a Southerly wind had driven from the other ſide of the bay. On ſeeing them entangled, the Diſcovery's launch had been ſent to their aſſiſtance, but ſoon ſhared the ſame fate; and, in a ſhort time,

1779. May. time, the ice had ſurrounded them near a quarter of a mile deep. This obliged us to ſtay on ſhore till evening, when finding no proſpect of getting the boats off, ſome of us went in ſledges to the edge of the ice, and were taken off by boats ſent from the ſhip, and the reſt ſtaid on ſhore all night.

It continued to freeze hard during the night; but, before Tueſday 4. morning, on the 4th, a change of wind drifted away the floating ice, and ſet the boats at liberty, without their having ſuſtained the ſmalleſt damage.

About ten o'clock in the forenoon, we ſaw ſeveral ſledges driving down to the edge of the ice, and ſent a boat to conduct the perſons who were in them on board. One of theſe was a Ruſſian merchant from Bolcheretſk, named Fedoſitſch, and the other a German, called Port, who had brought a letter from Major Behm, the Commander of Kamtſchatka, to Captain Clerke. When they got to the edge of the ice, and ſaw diſtinctly the ſize of the ſhips, which lay within about two hundred yards from them, they appeared to be exceedingly alarmed; and, before they would venture to embark, deſired two of our boat's crew might be left on ſhore as hoſtages for their ſafety. We afterward found that Iſmyloff, in his letter to the Commander, had miſrepreſented us, for what reaſons we could not conceive, as two ſmall trading boats, and that the Serjeant, who had only ſeen the ſhips at a diſtance, had not, in his diſpatches, rectified the miſtake.

When they arrived on board, we ſtill found, from their cautious and timorous behaviour, that they were under ſome unaccountable apprehenſions; and an uncommon degree of ſatisfaction was viſible in their countenances, on the German's finding a perſon amongſt us, with whom he could converſe.

converſe. This was Mr. Webber, who ſpoke that language perfectly well; and at laſt, though with ſome difficulty, convinced them, that we were Engliſhmen, and friends. Mr. Port being introduced to Captain Clerke, delivered to him the Commander's letter, which was written in German, and was merely complimental, inviting him and his officers to Bolcheretſk, to which place the people, who brought it, were to conduct us. Mr. Port, at the ſame time, acquainted him, that the Major had conceived a very wrong idea of the ſize of the ſhips, and of the ſervice we were engaged in; Iſmyloff, in his letter, having repreſented us as two ſmall Engliſh pacquet boats, and cautioned him to be on his guard; inſinuating, that he ſuſpected us to be no better than pirates. In conſequence of this letter, he ſaid, there had been various conjectures formed about us at Bolcheretſk: that the Major thought it moſt probable we were on a trading ſcheme, and for that reaſon had ſent down a merchant to us; but that the officer, who was ſecond in command, was of opinion we were French, and come with ſome hoſtile intention, and was for taking meaſures accordingly. It had required, he added, all the Major's authority to keep the inhabitants from leaving the town, and retiring up into the country; to ſo extraordinary a pitch had their fears riſen, from their perſuaſion that we were French. 1779. May.

Their extreme apprehenſions of that nation were principally occaſioned by ſome circumſtances attending an inſurrection that had happened at Bolcheretſk, a few years before, in which the Commander had loſt his life. We were informed, that an exiled Poliſh officer, named Beniowſki, taking advantage of the confuſion into which the town was thrown, had ſeized upon a galliot, then lying at the entrance of the Bolchoireka, and had forced on board a number of

1779. May. Ruſſian ſailors, ſufficient to navigate her: that he had put on ſhore a part of the crew at the Kourile Iſlands; and, among the reſt, Iſmyloff, who, as the reader will recollect, had puzzled us exceedingly, at Oonalaſhka, with the hiſtory of this tranſaction; though, for want of underſtanding his language, we could not then make out all the circumſtances attending it: that he paſſed in ſight of Japan; made Luconia; and was there directed how to ſteer to Canton: that, arriving there, he had applied to the French, and had got a paſſage in one of their India ſhips to France: and that moſt of the Ruſſians had likewiſe returned to Europe in French ſhips; and had afterward found their way to Peterſburg. We met with three of Beniowſki's crew in the harbour of Saint Peter and Saint Paul; and from them we learnt the circumſtances of the above ſtory.

On our arrival at Canton, we received a farther corroboration of the facts, from the gentlemen of the Engliſh factory, who told us, that a perſon had arrived there in a Ruſſian galliot, who ſaid he came from Kamtſchatka; and that he had been furniſhed by the French factory with a paſſage to Europe *.

We could not help being much diverted with the fears and apprehenſions of theſe good people, and particularly with the account Mr. Port gave us of the Serjeant's wary proceedings the day before. On ſeeing me come on ſhore, in company with ſome other gentlemen, he had made him and the merchant, who arrived in the ſledges we had ſeen come in the morning, hide themſelves in his kitchen, and liſten to our converſation with one another, in hopes, that

* It hath ſince appeared, from the account of Kerguelen's Voyage, that this extraordinary perſon, who had entered into the French ſervice, was commander of a new ſettlement at Madagaſcar, when Kerguelen touched there in 1774.

by

by this means they might diſcover whether we were really Engliſh or not. 1779. May.

As we concluded, from the commiſſion and dreſs of Mr. Port, that he might probably be the Commander's ſecretary, he was received as ſuch, and invited, with his companion, the merchant, to dine with Captain Clerke: and though we ſoon began to ſuſpect, from the behaviour of the latter toward him, that he was only a common ſervant, yet, this being no time to ſacrifice our little comforts to our pride, we prevented an explanation, by not ſuffering the queſtion to be put to him; and, in return for the ſatisfaction we reaped from his abilities as a linguiſt, we continued to let him live on a footing of equality with us.

CHAP. II.

Scarcity of Proviſions and Stores at the Harbour of Saint Peter and Saint Paul.— A Party ſet out to viſit the Commander at Bolcheretſk.—Paſſage up the river Awatſka.—Account of their Reception by the Toion of Karatchin.—Deſcription of a Kamtſchadale Dreſs.—Journey on Sledges.— Deſcription of this Mode of Travelling.— Arrival at Natcheekin.—Account of hot Springs.—Embark on the Bolchoireka.— Reception at the Capital.— Generous and hoſpitable Conduct of the Commander and the Garriſon.—Deſcription of Bolcheretſk.—Preſents from the Commander.—Ruſſian and Kamtſchadale Dancing.— Affecting Departure from Bolcheretſk.— Return to Saint Peter and Saint Paul's, accompanied by Major Behm, who viſits the Ships.—Generoſity of the Sailors.—Diſpatches ſent by Major Behm to Peterſburg.—His Departure and Character.

1779. May. Tueſday 4. BEING now enabled to converſe with the Ruſſians, by the aid of our interpreter, with tolerable facility, our firſt inquiries were directed to the means of procuring a ſupply of freſh proviſions, and naval ſtores; from the want of which latter article, in particular, we had been for ſome time in great diſtreſs. On inquiry, it appeared, that the whole ſtock of live cattle, which the country about the bay could furniſh, amounted only to two heifers; and theſe the

Serjeant

Serjeant very readily promiſed to procure us. Our applications were next made to the merchant, but we found the terms, upon which he offered to ſerve us, ſo exorbitant, that Captain Clerke thought it neceſſary to ſend an officer to viſit the Commander at Bolcheretſk, and to inquire into the price of ſtores at that place. As ſoon as this determination was communicated to Mr. Port, he diſpatched an expreſs to the Commander, to inform him of our intentions, and, at the ſame time, to clear us from the ſuſpicions that were entertained with reſpect to the deſignation and purpoſes of our voyage. 1779. May.

Captain Clerke having thought proper to fix on me for this ſervice, I received orders, together with Mr. Webber, who was to accompany me as interpreter, to be ready to ſet out the next day. It proved, however, too ſtormy, as did alſo the 6th, for beginning a journey through ſo wild and deſolate a country; but, on the 7th, the weather appearing more favourable, we ſet out early in the morning in the ſhip's boats, with a view to reach the entrance of the Awatſka at high water, on account of the ſhoals with which the mouth of that river abounds: here the country boats were to meet us, and carry us up the ſtream. Wedneſ. 5. Thurſday 6. Friday 7.

Captain Gore was now added to our party, and we were attended by Meſſrs. Port and Fedoſitſch, with two coſſacks, and were provided, by our conductors, with warm furred clothing; a precaution which we ſoon found very neceſſary, as it began to ſnow briſkly juſt after we ſet out. At eight o'clock, being ſtopped by ſhoal water, about a mile from the mouth of the river, ſome ſmall canoes, belonging to the Kamtſchadales, took up us and our baggage, and carried us over a ſpit of ſand, which is thrown up by the rapidity of the river, and which, they told us, was continually

1779. May.

tinually ſhifting. When we had croſſed this ſhoal, the water again deepened; and here we found a commodious boat, built and ſhaped like a Norway yawl, ready to convey us up the river, together with canoes for our baggage.

The mouth of the Awatſka is about a quarter of a mile broad; and as we advanced, it narrowed very gradually. After we had proceeded a few miles, we paſſed ſeveral branches, which, we were told, emptied themſelves into other parts of the bay; and that ſome of thoſe on the left hand, flowed into the Paratounca river. Its general direction from the bay, for the firſt ten miles, is to the North, after which it turns to the Weſtward: this bend excepted, it preſerves, for the moſt part, a ſtraight courſe; and the country, through which it flows, to the diſtance of near thirty miles from the ſea, is low and flat, and ſubject to frequent inundations. We were puſhed forward by ſix men, with long poles, three at each end of the boat; two of whom were Coſſacks, the others Kamtſchadales; and advanced againſt a ſtrong ſtream, at the rate, as well as I could judge, of about three miles an hour. Our Kamtſchadales bore this ſevere labour, with great ſtoutneſs, for ten hours; during which we ſtopped only once, and that for a ſhort time, whilſt they took ſome little refreſhment. As we had been told, at our firſt ſetting out in the morning, that we ſhould eaſily reach an *oſtrog*, called Karatchin, the ſame night, we were much diſappointed to find ourſelves, at ſun-ſet, fifteen miles from that place. This we attributed to the delay occaſioned in paſſing the ſhoals we had met with, both at the entrance of the river, and in ſeveral other places, as we proceeded up it: for our boat being the firſt that had paſſed up the river, the guides were not acquainted

acquainted with the ſituation of the ſhifting ſand-banks, and unfortunately the ſnow not having yet begun to melt, the ſhallowneſs of the river was at its extreme. 1779. May.

The fatigue our men had already undergone, and the difficulty of navigating the river, which would have been much increaſed by the darkneſs of the night, obliged us to give up all thoughts of continuing our journey that evening. Having therefore found a place tolerably ſheltered, and cleared it of the ſnow, we erected a ſmall *marquiſe*, which we had brought with us; and, by the aſſiſtance of a briſk fire, and ſome good punch, paſſed the night not very unpleaſantly. The only inconvenience we laboured under was, the being obliged to make the fire at ſome diſtance from us. For, although the ground was, to all appearance, dry enough before, yet when the fire was lighted, it ſoon thawed all the parts round it into an abſolute puddle. We admired much the alertneſs and expedition with which the Kamtſchadales erected our *marquiſe*, and cooked our proviſions; but what was moſt unexpected, we found they had brought with them their tea-kettles, conſidering it as the greateſt of hardſhips not to drink tea two or three times a day.

We ſet out as ſoon as it was light, in the morning, and had not advanced far, before we were met by the *Toion*, or Chief of Karatchin, who had been apprized of our coming, and had provided canoes that were lighter, and better contrived for navigating the higher parts of the river. A commodious veſſel, conſiſting of two canoes, laſhed cloſe together with croſs ſpars, lined with bear-ſkins, and furniſhed with fur cloaks, was alſo provided for us. We now went on very rapidly, the *Toion*'s people being both ſtout and freſh, and remarkable for their expertneſs in this buſineſs. Saturday 8.

1779. May.

ſineſs. At ten we got to the *oſtrog*, the ſeat of his command, where we were received at the water-ſide by the Kamtſchadale men and women, and ſome Ruſſian ſervants belonging to Fedoſitſch, who were employed in making canoes. They were all dreſſed out in their beſt clothes. Thoſe of the women were pretty and gay, conſiſting of a full looſe robe, of white nankeen, gathered cloſe round the neck, and faſtened with a collar of coloured ſilk. Over this they wore a ſhort jacket, without ſleeves, made of different-coloured nankeens, and petticoats of a ſlight Chineſe ſilk. Their ſhifts, which had ſleeves down to the wriſts, were alſo of ſilk; and coloured ſilk handkerchiefs were bound round their heads, concealing entirely the hair of the married women, whilſt thoſe who were unmarried, brought the handkerchief under the hair, and ſuffered it to flow looſe behind.

This *oſtrog* was pleaſantly ſituated by the ſide of the river; and conſiſted of three log-houſes; three *jourts*, or houſes made under ground; and nineteen *balagans*, or ſummer habitations. We were conducted to the dwelling of the *Toion*, who was a plain decent man, born of a Ruſſian woman, by a Kamtſchadale father. His houſe, like all the reſt in this country, was divided into two apartments. A long narrow table, with a bench round it, was all the furniture we ſaw in the outer; and the houſhold ſtuff of the inner, which was the kitchen, was not leſs ſimple and ſcanty. But the kind attention of our hoſt, and the hearty welcome we received, more than compenſated for the poverty of his lodgings.

His wife proved an excellent cook; and ſerved us with fiſh and game of different ſorts, and various kinds of heath-berries,

berries, that had been kept ſince the laſt year. Whilſt we were at dinner in this miſerable hut, the gueſts of a people, with whoſe exiſtence we had before been ſcarce acquainted, and at the extremity of the habitable globe, a ſolitary, half-worn pewter ſpoon, whoſe ſhape was familiar to us, attracted our attention; and, on examination, we found it ſtamped on the back with the word *London*. I cannot paſs over this circumſtance in ſilence, out of gratitude for the many pleaſant thoughts, the anxious hopes, and tender remembrances it excited in us. Thoſe, who have experienced the effects that long abſence and extreme diſtance from their native country produce on the mind, will readily conceive the pleaſure ſuch trifling incidents can give. To the philoſopher and the politician they may perhaps ſuggeſt reflections of a different nature. 1779. May.

We were now to quit the river, and perform the next part of our journey on ſledges; but the thaw had been too powerful in the day-time, to allow us to ſet out, till the cold of the evening had again made the ſurface of the ſnow hard and firm. This gave us an opportunity of walking about the village, which was the only place we had yet ſeen free from ſnow ſince we landed in this country. It ſtood upon a well-wooded flat, about a mile and a half in circumference. The leaves were juſt budding, and the verdure of the whole ſcene was ſtrongly contraſted with the ſides of the ſurrounding hills, which were ſtill covered with ſnow. As the ſoil appeared to me very capable of producing all the common ſorts of garden vegetables, I was greatly ſurprized not to find the ſmalleſt ſpot any where cultivated. If to this we add, that none of the inhabitants were poſſeſſed of cattle of any ſort, nothing

1779. May. can be well conceived more wretched than their ſituation muſt be during the winter months. They were at this time removing from their *jourts* into their *balagans*, which afforded us an opportunity of examining both theſe ſorts of habitations; and they will be hereafter more particularly deſcribed. The people invited us into their houſes with great good-humour; a general air of cheerfulneſs and content was every where viſible, to which the approaching change of ſeaſon might probably not a little contribute.

On our return to the *Toion*'s, we found ſupper prepared for us, which differed in nothing from our former repaſt; and concluded with our treating the *Toion* and his wife with ſome of the ſpirits, we had brought with us, made into punch. Captain Gore, who had great generoſity on all occaſions, having afterward made them ſome valuable preſents, they retired to the kitchen, leaving us in poſſeſſion of the outward room, where, ſpreading our bear-ſkins on the benches, we were glad to get a little repoſe, having ſettled with our conductors to reſume our journey, as ſoon as the ground ſhould be judged fit for travelling.

About nine o'clock, the ſame evening, we were awakened by the melancholy howlings of the dogs, which continued all the time our baggage was laſhing upon the ſledges; but, as ſoon as they were yoked, and we were all prepared to ſet out, this changed into a light cheerful yelping, which entirely ceaſed the inſtant they marched off. But, before we ſet out, the Reader may expect to be made more particularly acquainted with this curious mode of travelling.

The figure of the ſledges will be beſt conceived by the annexed engraving, which was taken from one I brought over with me, that is now in the poſſeſſion of Sir Aſhton Lever.

1779. May.

Lever. The body is about four feet and a half long, and a foot wide, made in the form of a creſcent, of light tough wood, ſtrongly bound together with wicker-work; which, in thoſe belonging to the better ſort of people, is elegantly ſtained of a red and blue colour, and the ſeat covered with bear-ſkins, or other furs. It is ſupported by four legs, about two feet high, which reſt on two long flat pieces of wood, five or ſix inches broad, extending a foot at each end beyond the body of the ſledge. Theſe are turned up before in the manner of a ſkate, and ſhod with the bone of ſome ſea-animal. The fore-part of the carriage is ornamented with thongs of leather and taſſels of coloured cloth; and from the croſs-bar, to which the harneſs is joined, are hung links of iron, or ſmall bells, the jingling of which they conceive to be encouraging to the dogs. They are ſeldom uſed to carry more than one perſon at a time, who ſits aſide, reſting his feet on the lower part of the ſledge, and carrying his proviſions and other neceſſaries, wrapped up in a bundle, behind him. The dogs are uſually five in number, yoked two and two, with a leader. The reins, not being faſtened to the head of the dogs, but to the collar, have little power over them, and are therefore generally hung upon the ſledge, whilſt the driver depends entirely on their obedience to his voice for the direction of them. With this view, the leader is always trained up with a particular degree of care and attention; ſome of them riſing to a moſt extraordinary value on account of their docility and ſteadineſs; inſomuch, that for one of theſe, I am well aſſured, forty roubles (or ten pounds) was no unuſual price. The driver is alſo provided with a crooked ſtick, which anſwers the purpoſe both of whip and reins; as by ſtriking it into the ſnow, he is enabled to moderate the ſpeed of the dogs, or even to ſtop them entirely; and when

1779. May.

they are lazy, or otherwiſe inattentive to his voice, he chaſtiſes them by throwing it at them. Upon theſe occaſions, their dexterity in picking it up again is very remarkable, and forms the principal difficulty of their art. But it is indeed not ſurprizing, that they ſhould labour to be ſkilful in a practice upon which their ſafety ſo materially depends. For they ſay, that if the driver ſhould happen to loſe his ſtick, the dogs will inſtantly perceive it; and unleſs their leader be of the moſt ſober and reſolute kind, they will immediately run a-head full ſpeed, and never ſtop till they are quite ſpent. But as that will not be the caſe ſoon, it generally happens, that either the carriage is overturned, and daſhed to pieces againſt the trees, or they hurry down ſome precipice, and are all buried in the ſnow. The accounts that were given us of the ſpeed of theſe dogs, and of their extraordinary patience of hunger and fatigue, were ſcarcely credible, if they had not been ſupported by the beſt authority. We were indeed ourſelves witneſſes of the great expedition with which the meſſenger, who had been diſpatched to Bolcheretſk with the news of our arrival, returned to the harbour of St. Peter and St. Paul, though the ſnow was, at this time, exceedingly ſoft. But I was informed, by the Commander of Kamtſchatka, that this journey was generally performed in two days and a half; and that he had once received an expreſs from the latter place in twenty-three hours.

The dogs are fed, during the winter, on the offals of dried and ſtinking fiſh; but are always deprived of this miſerable food, a day before they ſet out on a journey, and never ſuffered to eat before they reach the end of it. We were alſo told, that it was not unuſual for them to continue thus faſting two entire days, in which time they would perform

form a journey of one hundred and twenty miles *. Theſe dogs are, in ſhape, ſomewhat like the Pomeranian breed, but conſiderably larger. 1779. May.

As we did not chooſe to truſt to our own ſkill, we had each of us a man to drive and guide the ſledge, which, from the ſtate the roads were now in, proved a very laborious buſineſs. For, as the thaw had advanced very conſiderably in the vallies, through which our road lay, we were under the neceſſity of keeping along the ſides of the hills; and this obliged our guides, who were provided with ſnow-ſhoes for that purpoſe, to ſupport the ſledges, on the lower ſide, with their ſhoulders, for ſeveral miles together. I had a very good-humoured Coſſack to attend me, who was, however, ſo very unſkilful in his buſineſs, that we were overturned almoſt every minute, to the great entertainment of the reſt of the company. Our party conſiſted, in all, of ten ſledges. That in which Captain Gore was carried, was made of two laſhed together, and abundantly provided with furs and bear-ſkins; it had ten dogs, yoked four abreaſt; as had alſo ſome of thoſe that were heavy laden with baggage.

When we had proceeded about four miles, it began to rain; which, added to the darkneſs of the night, threw us

* Extraordinary as this may appear, Kraſcheninikoff, whoſe account of Kamtſchatka, from every thing that I ſaw, and had an opportunity of comparing it with, ſeems to me to deſerve entire credit; and whoſe authority *I ſhall*, therefore, frequently have recourſe to; relates inſtances of this kind, that are much more ſurprizing. "Travelling parties," ſays he, "are often overtaken with dreadful ſtorms of ſnow, on the approach of which, "they drive, *with the utmoſt precipitation*, *into the neareſt wood*, and there are obliged to "ſtay, till the tempeſt, which frequently laſts ſix or ſeven days, is over; the dogs re-"maining all this while quiet and inoffenſive; except that, ſometimes, when preſt by "hunger, they will devour their reins, and the other leathern parts of the harneſs." *Hiſtory and Deſcription of Kamtſchatka, by Kraſcheninikoff.*

all

1779. May. all into confuſion. It was at laſt agreed, that we ſhould remain, where we were, till day-light; and accordingly we came to anchor in the ſnow (for I cannot better expreſs the manner in which the ſledges were ſecured), and wrapping ourſelves up in our furs, waited patiently for the morn-
Sunday 9. ing. About three o'clock we were called on to ſet out, our guides being apprehenſive, that if we waited longer, we might be ſtopped by the thaw, and neither be able to proceed, nor to return. After encountering many difficulties, which were principally occaſioned by the bad condition of the road, at two in the afternoon we got ſafe to an *oſtrog*, called Natcheekin, ſituated on the ſide of a ſmall ſtream, which falls into the Bolchoireka, a little way below the town. The diſtance between Karatchin and Natcheekin is thirty-eight werſts (or twenty-five miles); and, had the hard froſt continued, we ſhould not, by their account, have been more than four hours in performing it; but the ſnow was ſo ſoft, that the dogs, almoſt at every ſtep, ſunk up to their bellies; and I was indeed much ſurprized at their being at all able to overcome the difficulties of ſo fatiguing a journey.

Natcheekin is a very inconſiderable *oſtrog*, having only one log-houſe, the reſidence of the *Toion*; five *balagans*, and one *jourt*. We were received here with the ſame formalities, and in the ſame hoſpitable manner, as at Karatchin; and in the afternoon we went to viſit a remarkable hot-ſpring, which is near this village. We ſaw, at ſome diſtance, the ſteam riſing from it, as from a boiling caldron; and as we approached, perceived the air had a ſtrong ſulphureous ſmell. The main ſpring forms a baſon of about three feet in diameter; beſides which, there are a number of leſſer ſprings, of the ſame degree of heat, in the adjacent ground;

ſo

1779. May.

ſo that the whole ſpot, to the extent of near an acre, was ſo hot, that we could not ſtand two minutes in the ſame place. The water flowing from theſe ſprings is collected in a ſmall bathing pond, and afterward forms a little rivulet; which, at the diſtance of about an hundred and fifty yards, falls into the river. The bath, they told us, had wrought great cures in ſeveral diſorders, ſuch as rheumatiſms, ſwelled and contracted joints, and ſcorbutic ulcers. In the bathing-place the thermometer ſtood at 100°, or blood heat; but in the ſpring, after being immerſed two minutes, it was 1° above boiling ſpirits. The thermometer in the air, at this time, was 34°; in the river 40°; and in the *Toion*'s houſe 64°. The ground where theſe ſprings break out, is on a gentle aſcent; behind which there is a green hill of a moderate ſize. I am ſorry I was not ſufficiently ſkilled in botany to examine the plants, which ſeemed to thrive here with great luxuriance; the wild garlic, indeed, forced itſelf on our notice, and was at this time ſpringing up very vigorouſly.

Monday 10.

The next morning, we embarked on the Bolchoireka in canoes; and, having the ſtream with us, expected to be at our journey's end the day following. The town of Bolcheretſk is about eighty miles from Natcheekin; and we were informed, that, in the ſummer ſeaſon, when the river has been full and rapid, from the melting of ſnow on the mountains, the canoes had often gone down in a ſingle day; but that, in its preſent ſtate, we ſhould probably be much longer, as the ice had broken up only three days before we arrived; and that ours would be the firſt boat that had attempted to paſs. This intelligence proved but too true. We found ourſelves greatly impeded by the ſhallows; and though the ſtream, in many places, ran with great rapidity, yet every

Monday 18.

half

1779. May. half mile we had ripplings and ſhoals, over which we were obliged to haul the boats. The country, on each ſide, was very romantic, but unvaried; the river running between mountains of the moſt craggy and barren aſpect, where there was nothing to diverſify the ſcene, but now and then the ſight of a bear, and the flights of wild-fowl. So unintereſting a paſſage leaves me nothing farther to ſay,

Tueſday 11. than that this, and the following night, we ſlept on the banks of the river, under our *marquiſe*; and ſuffered very much from the ſeverity of the weather, and the ſnow, which ſtill remained on the ground.

Wedneſ. 12. At day-light on the 12th, we found we had got clear of the mountains, and were entering a low extenſive plain, covered with ſhrubby trees. About nine in the forenoon, we arrived at an *oſtrog*, called Opatchin, which is computed to be fifty miles from Natcheekin, and is nearly of the ſame ſize as Karatchin. We found here a ſerjeant with four Ruſſian ſoldiers, who had been two days waiting for our arrival; and who immediately diſpatched a light boat to Bolcheretſk, with intelligence of our approach. We were now put into the trammels of formality; a canoe, furniſhed with ſkins and furs, and equipped in a magnificent manner, was prepared for our reception, in which we were accommodated much at our eaſe, but to the excluſion of the reſt of our fellow-travellers. It was with much regret we found ourſelves obliged to ſeparate from our old companion Monſieur Port, whom we had obſerved to grow every day more ſhy and diſtant, as we drew nearer the end of our journey. Indeed, he had himſelf told us, before we ſet out, that we paid him a reſpect he had no title to; but, as we found him a very modeſt and diſcreet man, we had inſiſted on his living with us during the whole of our journey. The

remainder

remainder of our paſſage was performed with great facility and expedition, the river growing more rapid as we deſcended, and leſs obſtructed by ſhoals. 1779. May.

As we approached the capital, we were ſorry to obſerve, from an appearance of much ſtir and buſtle, that we were to be received in form. Decent clothes had been, for ſome time, a ſcarce commodity amongſt us; and our travelling dreſſes were made up of a burleſque mixture of European, Indian, and Kamtſchadale faſhions. We therefore thought it would be too ridiculous to make a parade in this trim through the metropolis of Kamtſchatka; and, as we ſaw a crowd collected on the banks of the river, and were told the Commander would be at the water-ſide to receive us, we ſtopped ſhort at a ſoldier's houſe, about a quarter of a mile from the town, from whence we ſent Port with a meſſage to his Excellency, acquainting him, that the moment we had put off our travelling dreſſes, we would pay our reſpects to him at his own houſe; and to beg he would not think of waiting to conduct us. Finding, however, that he perſiſted in his intentions of paying us this compliment, we loſt no farther time in attiring ourſelves, but made all the haſte in our power to join him at the entrance of the town. I obſerved my companions to be as awkward as I felt myſelf, in making our firſt ſalutations; bowing and ſcraping being marks of good-breeding that we had now, for two years and a half, been totally unaccuſtomed to. The manner in which we were received by the Commander, was the moſt engaging that could be conceived, and increaſed my mortification, at finding, that he had almoſt entirely forgot the French language; ſo that the ſatisfaction of converſing with him was wholly confined to Mr. Webber, who ſpoke the German, his native tongue.

1779. May.

In company with Major Behm, was Captain Shmaleff, the ſecond in command, and another officer, with the whole body of the merchants of the place. They conducted us to the Commander's houſe, where we were received by his lady with great civility, and found tea and other refreſhments prepared for us. After the firſt compliments were over, Mr. Webber was deſired to acquaint the Major with the object of our journey, with our want of naval ſtores, flour, and freſh proviſions, and other neceſſaries for the ſhips crews; and at the ſame time to aſſure him, that we were ſenſible, from what we had already ſeen of the condition of the country about Awatſka Bay, we could not expect much aſſiſtance from him in that quarter; that the impoſſibility of ſending heavy ſtores acroſs the peninſula, during the preſent ſeaſon of the year, was but too apparent, from the difficulties we had met with in our journey; and that, long before any material change could take place, we ſhould be under the neceſſity of proceeding on our voyage. We were here interrupted by the Commander, who obſerved, that we did not yet know what they were capable of doing; that, at leaſt, it was not his buſineſs to think of the difficulties of ſupplying our wants, but only to learn what were the articles we ſtood in need of, and the longeſt time we could allow him, for procuring them. After expreſſing our ſenſe of his obliging diſpoſition, we gave him a liſt of the naval ſtores, the number of cattle, and the quantity of flour, we were directed to purchaſe, and told him, that we purpoſed recommencing our voyage about the 5th of June.

Our converſation afterward turned upon different ſubjects; and it will naturally be ſuppoſed, that our inquiries were principally directed to the obtaining ſome information reſpecting

1779. May.

reſpecting our own country. Having now been abſent three years, we had flattered ourſelves with the certainty of receiving intelligence from Major Behm, which could not fail of being intereſting; and I cannot expreſs the diſappointment we felt, on finding, that he had no news to communicate of a much later date than that of our departure from England.

About ſeven o'clock, the Commander, conceiving we might be fatigued with our journey, and deſirous of taking ſome repoſe, begged he might conduct us to our lodgings. It was in vain that we proteſted againſt a compliment which we had certainly no title to expect, but that of being ſtrangers; a circumſtance which ſeemed, in the opinion of this generous Livonian, to counterbalance every other conſideration. In our way, we paſſed by two guard-houſes, where the men were turned out under arms, in compliment to Captain Gore; and were afterward brought to a very neat and decent houſe, which the Major gave us to underſtand was to be our reſidence, during our ſtay. Two ſentinels were poſted at the door; and in a houſe adjoining, there was a ſerjeant's guard. Having ſhewn us into our apartments, the Major took his leave, with a promiſe to ſee us the next day; and we were left to find out, at our leiſure, all the conveniencies that he had moſt amply provided for us. A ſoldier, called a *putproperſckack*, whoſe rank is between that of a ſerjeant and corporal, along with our fellow-traveller Port, were appointed to be our male domeſtics; beſides whom, there was a houſe-keeper and a cook, who had orders to obey Port's directions in dreſſing us a ſupper, according to our own mode of cookery. We received many civil meſſages, in the courſe of the evening, from the principal people of the town, purporting, that they would not

1779. May. add to our fatigues, by paying their reſpects to us at that time, but would wait on us in the morning. Such well-ſupported politeneſs and attention, in a country ſo deſolate and uncultivated, formed a contraſt exceedingly favourable to its inhabitants; and, to finiſh the piece as it began, at ſun-ſet the ſerjeant came with the report of his guard to Captain Gore.

Thurſday 13. Early in the morning, we received the compliments of the Commander, of Captain Shmaleff, and of the principal inhabitants of the town, who all honoured us with viſits ſoon after. The two firſt, having ſent for Port, after we were gone to reſt, and inquired of him, what articles we ſeemed to be moſt in want of on board the ſhips; we found them prepared to inſiſt on our ſharing with the garriſon under their command, in what little ſtock of proviſions they had remaining. At the ſame time they lamented, that we had arrived at a ſeaſon of the year, when there was always the greateſt ſcarcity of every thing amongſt them; the ſloops not being yet arrived, with their annual ſupply, from Okotſk.

We agreed to accept the liberality of theſe hoſpitable ſtrangers, with the beſt grace we could; but on condition, that we might be made acquainted with the price of the articles we were to be ſupplied with; and that Captain Clerke ſhould give bills to the amount, upon the Victualling Office in London. This the Major poſitively refuſed; and whenever it was afterward urged, ſtopped us ſhort, by telling us, he was certain, that he could not oblige his Miſtreſs more, than in giving every aſſiſtance in his power to her good friends and allies the Engliſh; and that it would be a particular ſatisfaction to her, to hear, that in ſo remote a part of the world, her dominions had afforded any relief to ſhips engaged

engaged in ſuch ſervices as ours; that he could not therefore act ſo contrary to the character of his Empreſs, as to accept of any bills; but that, to accommodate the matter, he would take a bare atteſtation of the particulars, with which we might be furniſhed; and that this he ſhould tranſmit to his Court, as a certificate of having performed his duty. I ſhall leave (he continued) to the two Courts, all farther acknowledgments; but cannot conſent to accept any thing of the kind alluded to. 1779. May.

When this matter was adjuſted, he began to inquire about our private wants; ſaying, he ſhould conſider himſelf as ill uſed, if we had any dealings with the merchants, or applied to any other perſon except himſelf.

In return for ſuch ſingular generoſity, we had little to beſtow but our admiration and our thanks. Fortunately, however, Captain Clerke had ſent by me a ſet of prints and maps, belonging to the laſt voyage of Captain Cook, which he deſired me to preſent in his name to the Commander; who being an enthuſiaſt in every thing relating to diſcoveries, received it with a ſatisfaction which ſhewed, that, though a trifle, nothing could have been more acceptable. Captain Clerke had likewiſe intruſted me with a diſcretionary power of ſhewing him a chart of the diſcoveries made in the preſent voyage; and as I judged, that a perſon in his ſituation, and of his turn of mind, would be exceedingly gratified by a communication of this ſort, though, out of delicacy, he had forborn to aſk more than a few general queſtions on the ſubject, I made no ſcruple to repoſe in him a confidence, of which his whole conduct ſhewed him to be deſerving.

I had the pleaſure to find, that he felt this compliment as I hoped he would, and was much ſtruck at ſeeing, in one view,

1779. May. view, the whole of that coaſt, as well on the ſide of Aſia as on that of America, of which his countrymen had been ſo many years employed in acquiring a partial and imperfect knowledge *.

Excepting this mark of confidence, and the ſet of prints I have already mentioned, we had brought nothing with us that was in the leaſt worth his acceptance; for it ſcarce deſerves noticing, that I prevailed on his ſon, a young boy, to accept of a ſilver watch I happened to have about me; and I made his little daughter very happy with two pair of ear-rings, of French paſte. Beſides theſe trifles, I left with Captain Shmaleff the thermometer I had uſed on my journey; and he promiſed me, to keep an exact regiſter of the temperature of the air for one year, and to tranſmit it to Mr. Muller, with whom he had the pleaſure of being acquainted.

We dined this day at the Commander's, who, ſtudious on every occaſion to gratify our curioſity, had, beſides a number of diſhes dreſſed in our own way, prepared a great variety of others, after the Ruſſian and Kamtſchadale manner. The afternoon was employed in taking a view of the town, and the adjacent country. Bolcheretſk is ſituated in a low ſwampy plain, that extends to the ſea of Okotſk, being about forty miles long, and of a conſiderable breadth. It

* On this occaſion, Major Behm permitted us to examine all the maps and charts that were in his poſſeſſion. Thoſe relating to the peninſula of the Tſchutſki, were made in conformity to the information collected by Pleniſhner, between the years 1760 and 1770. As the charts of Pleniſhner were afterward made uſe of, according to Mr. Coxe, in the compilation of the General Map of Ruſſia, publiſhed by the Academy in 1776, it may be neceſſary to obſerve, that we found them exceedingly erroneous; and that the compilers of the General Map ſeem to have been led into ſome miſtakes on his authority. Thoſe, in which the iſlands on the coaſt of America were laid down, we found to contain nothing new, and to be much leſs accurate than thoſe we ſaw at Oonalaſhka.

lies

lies on the North ſide of the Bolchoireka (or great river), between the mouth of the Gottſofka and the Biſtraia, which here empty themſelves into this river; and the peninſula, on which it ſtands, has been ſeparated from the continent by a large canal, the work of the preſent Commander; which has not only added much to its ſtrength as a fortreſs, but has made it much leſs liable, than it was before, to inundations. Below the town, the river is from ſix to eight feet deep, and about a quarter of a mile broad. It empties itſelf into the ſea of Okotſk, at the diſtance of twenty-two miles; where, according to Kraſcheninikoff, it is capable of admitting veſſels of a conſiderable ſize. There is no corn, of any ſpecies, cultivated in this part of the country; and Major Behm informed me, that his was the only garden that had yet been planted. The ground was, for the moſt part, covered with ſnow; that which was free from it appeared full of ſmall hillocks, of a black turfy nature. I ſaw about twenty or thirty cows; and the Major had ſix ſtout horſes. Theſe, and their dogs, are the only tame animals they poſſeſs; the neceſſity they are under, in the preſent ſtate of the country, of keeping great numbers of the latter, making it impoſſible to bring up any cattle, that are not in ſize and ſtrength a match for them. For, during the ſummer ſeaſon, their dogs are entirely let looſe, and left to provide for themſelves; which makes them ſo exceedingly ravenous, that they will ſometimes even attack the bullocks. 1779. May.

The houſes in Bolcheretſk are all of one faſhion, being built of logs, and thatched. That of the Commander is much larger than the reſt, conſiſting of three rooms of a conſiderable ſize, neatly papered, and which might have been reckoned handſome, if the *talc* with which the windows

1779. May. dows were covered, had not given them a poor and diſagreeable appearance. The town conſiſts of ſeveral rows of low buildings, each conſiſting of five or ſix dwellings, connected together, with a long common paſſage running the length of them; on one ſide of which is the kitchen and ſtore-houſe; and on the other the dwelling apartments. Beſides theſe, are barracks for the Ruſſian ſoldiers and Coſſacks; a well-looking church; and a court-room; and at the end of the town a great number of *Balagans*, belonging to the Kamtſchadales. The inhabitants, taken all together, amount to between five and ſix hundred. In the evening, the Major gave a handſome entertainment; to which the principal people of the town, of both ſexes, were invited.

Friday 14. The next morning we applied privately to the merchant Fedoſitſch, to purchaſe ſome tobacco for the ſailors, who had now been upward of a twelvemonth without this favourite commodity. However, this, like all our other tranſactions of the ſame kind, came immediately to the Major's knowledge; and we were ſoon after ſurprized to find, in our houſe, four bags of tobacco, weighing upward of a hundred pounds each, which he begged might be preſented, in the name of himſelf, and the garriſon under his command, to our ſailors. At the ſame time, they had ſent us twenty loaves of fine ſugar, and as many pounds of tea, being articles they underſtood we were in great want of, which they begged to be indulged in preſenting to the officers. Along with theſe, Madame Behm had alſo ſent a preſent for Captain Clerke, conſiſting of freſh butter, honey, figs, rice, and ſome other little things of the ſame kind, attended with many wiſhes, that, in his infirm ſtate of health, they might be of ſervice to him. It was in vain we tried to oppoſe this profuſion

profuſion of bounty, which I was really anxious to reſtrain, being convinced, that they were giving away, not a ſhare, but almoſt the whole ſtock of the garriſon. The conſtant anſwer the Major returned us, on thoſe occaſions, was, that we had ſuffered a great deal, and that we muſt needs be in diſtreſs. Indeed, the length of time we had been out, ſince we touched at any known port, appeared to them ſo very incredible, that it required the teſtimony of our maps, and other corroborating circumſtances, to gain their belief. Amongſt the latter was a very curious fact which Major Behm related to us this morning, and which, he ſaid, but for our arrival, he ſhould have been totally at a loſs to account for. 1779. May.

It is well known, that the Tſchutſki are the only people, of the North of Aſia, who have maintained their independence, and reſiſted all the attempts that have been made by the Ruſſians to reduce them. The laſt expedition againſt them was undertaken in the year 1750, and terminated, after various ſucceſs, in the retreat of the Ruſſian forces, and the loſs of the commanding officer. Since that time, the Ruſſians had removed their frontier fortreſs from the Anadir to the Ingiga, a river that empties itſelf into the Northern extremity of the ſea of Okotſk, and gives its name to a gulf, ſituated to the Weſt of that of Penſhinſk. From this fort, Major Behm had received diſpatches the day of our arrival at Bolcheretſk, containing intelligence, that a tribe, or party, of the Tſchutſki, had arrived at that place with propoſitions of friendſhip, and a voluntary offer of tribute; that on inquiring into the cauſe of this unexpected alteration in their ſentiments, they had informed his people, that toward the latter end of the laſt ſummer they had been viſited by two very large Ruſſian boats; that they had been

1779. May.

treated by the people, who were in them, with the greateſt kindneſs, and had entered into a league of friendſhip and amity with them; and that, relying on this friendly diſpoſition, they were now come to the Ruſſian fort, in order to ſettle a treaty, on ſuch terms as might be acceptable to both nations. This extraordinary hiſtory had occaſioned much ſpeculation, both at Ingiginſk and Bolcheretſk; and, had we not furniſhed them with a key to it, muſt have remained perfectly unintelligible. We felt no ſmall ſatisfaction in having, though accidentally, ſhewn the Ruſſians, in this inſtance, the only true way of collecting tribute, and extending their dominions; and in the hopes that the good underſtanding, which this event hath given riſe to, may reſcue a brave people from the future invaſions of ſuch powerful neighbours.

We dined, this day, with Captain Shmaleff; and in the afternoon, in order to vary our amuſements, he treated us with an exhibition of the Ruſſian and Kamtſchadale dancing. No deſcription can convey an adequate idea of this rude and uncouth entertainment. The figure of the Ruſſian dance was much like thoſe of our hornpipes, and was danced either ſingle, or by two or four perſons at a time. Their ſteps were ſhort and quick, with the feet ſcarce raiſed from the ground; the arms were fixed cloſe to the ſides; the body being all the while kept upright and immoveable, excepting when the parties paſſed each other, at which time the hand was raiſed with a quick and awkward motion. But if the Ruſſian dance was at the ſame time both unmeaning and ridiculous, the Kamtſchadale joined to the latter quality the moſt whimſical idea that ever entered into any people's heads. It is intended to repreſent the awkward and clumſy geſtures of the bear, which theſe people

people have frequent opportunities of obſerving in a great variety of ſituations. It will ſcarcely be expected that I ſhould give a minute deſcription of all the ſtrange poſtures which were exhibited on theſe occaſions; and I ſhall therefore only mention, that the body was always bowed, and the knees bent, whilſt the arms were uſed in imitating the tricks and attitudes of that animal. 1779. May.

As our journey to Bolcheretſk had taken up more time than we expected, and we were told that our return might prove ſtill more difficult and tedious, we were under the neceſſity of acquainting the commander, this evening, with our intention of ſetting out the next day. It was not without the utmoſt regret we thought of leaving our new acquaintance; and were therefore moſt agreeably ſurprized, when the Major told us, that if we could ſtay one day longer, he would accompany us. He had, he ſaid, made up his diſpatches, and reſigned the command of Kamtſchatka to his ſucceſſor Captain Shmaleff, and had prepared every thing for his departure to Okotſk, which was to take place in a few days; but that he ſhould feel great pleaſure in putting off his journey a little longer, and returning with us to Saint Peter and Saint Paul's, that he might himſelf be a witneſs of every thing being done for us, that it was in their power to do.

In return for the few trifles I had given to the children of Major Behm, I was, next morning, the 15th, preſented, Saturday 15. by his little boy, with a moſt magnificent Kamtſchadale dreſs, which ſhall be deſcribed in its proper place. It was of the kind worn by the principal *Toions* of the country, on occaſions of great ceremony; and, as I was afterward told, by Fedoſitſch, could not have been purchaſed for one hundred and twenty roubles. At the ſame time I

1779. May. had a preſent from his daughter, of a handſome ſable muff.

We afterward dined with the Commander, who, in order to let us ſee as much of the manners of the inhabitants, and of the cuſtoms of the country, as our time would permit, invited the whole of the better ſort of people in the village to his houſe this evening. All the women appeared very ſplendidly dreſſed, after the Kamtſchadale faſhion. The wives of Captain Shmaleff, and the other officers of the garriſon, were prettily dreſſed, half in the Siberian, and half in the European mode; and Madame Behm, in order to make the ſtronger contraſt, had unpacked part of her baggage, and put on a rich European dreſs. I was much ſtruck with the richneſs and variety of the ſilks which the women wore, and the ſingularity of their habits. The whole was like ſome enchanted ſcene in the midſt of the wildeſt and moſt dreary country in the world. Our entertainment again conſiſted of dancing and ſinging.

The next morning being fixed for our departure, we retired early to our lodgings, where the firſt things we ſaw were three travelling dreſſes, made after the faſhion of the country, which the Major had provided for us, who came himſelf to our houſe ſoon after, to ſee all our things packed up, and properly taken care of. Indeed, what with his liberal preſents, and the kindneſs of Captain Shmaleff, and many other individuals, who all begged to throw in their mite, together with the ample ſtock of proviſions he had ſent us for our journey, we had amaſſed no inconſiderable load of baggage.

Sunday 16. Early in the morning, every thing being ready for our departure, we were invited to call on Madame Behm, in our

our way to the boats, and take our leave of her. Impreſſed, as our minds were, with ſentiments of the warmeſt gratitude, by the attentive, benevolent, and generous treatment we had met with at Bolcheretſk, they were greatly heightened by the affecting ſcene which preſented itſelf to us, on leaving our lodgings. All the ſoldiers and Coſſacks, belonging to the garriſon, were drawn up on one hand, and the male inhabitants of the town, dreſſed out in their beſt clothes, on the other; and, as ſoon as we came out of the houſe, the whole body of the people joined in a melancholy ſong, which, the Major told us, it was uſual, in that country, to ſing on taking leave of their friends. In this manner we marched down to the Commander's houſe, preceded by the drums and muſic of the garriſon, where we were received by Madame Behm, attended by the ladies, who were dreſſed in long ſilk cloaks, lined with very valuable furs of different colours, which made a moſt magnificent appearance. After partaking of ſome refreſhment, that was prepared for us, we went down to the water-ſide, accompanied by the ladies, who now joined the ſong with the reſt of the inhabitants; and as ſoon as we had taken leave of Madame Behm, and aſſured her of the grateful ſenſe we ſhould ever retain of the hoſpitality of Bolcheretſk, we found ourſelves too much affected, not to haſten into the boats with all the expedition we could. When we put off, the whole company gave us three cheers, which we returned from the boat; and, as we were doubling a point, where for the laſt time we ſaw our friendly entertainers, they took their farewel in another cheer. 1779. May.

We found the ſtream, on our return, ſo exceedingly rapid, that, notwithſtanding the Coſſacks and Kamtſchadales uſed their utmoſt exertions, we did not reach the firſt village,

1779. May.

lage, Opatchin, till the evening of the 17th, which was at the rate of about twenty miles a day. We got to Natcheekin on the 19th; and, on the 20th, we croſſed the plain to Karatchin. We found the road much better than when we had paſſed it before, there having been a ſmart froſt on the night of the 19th. On the 21ſt, we proceeded down the Awatſka River; and, before it was dark, got over the ſhoals which lie at the entrance of the bay. During the whole courſe of our journey, we were much pleaſed with the great good-will with which the *Toions*, and their Kamtſchadales, afforded us their aſſiſtance, at the different *oſtrogs* through which we paſſed; and I could not but obſerve the pleaſure that appeared in their countenances, on ſeeing the Major, and their ſtrong expreſſions of ſorrow, on hearing he was ſo ſoon going to leave them.

Monday 17.
Wedneſ. 19.
Thurſday 20.
Friday 21.

We had diſpatched a meſſenger to Captain Clerke, from Bolcheretſk, with an account of our reception, and of the Major's intention of returning with us; at the ſame time, apprizing him of the day he might probably expect to ſee us. We were therefore very well pleaſed to obſerve, as we approached the harbour, all the boats of the two ſhips coming toward us, the men clean, and the officers as well dreſſed as the ſcarcity of our clothing would permit. The Major was much ſtruck at the robuſt and healthy appearance of the boats crews, and ſtill more at ſeeing moſt of them without any other covering than a ſhirt and trowſers, although at the very moment it actually ſnowed.

As Major Behm had expreſſed his intentions of viſiting the ſhips before he landed, as ſoon as we arrived off the town, I deſired to receive his commands; when remarking, that from the account we had given of the very bad ſtate of

Captain

Captain Clerke's health, it might be imprudent to diſturb him at ſo late an hour (it being now paſt nine o'clock), he thought it, he ſaid, moſt adviſeable to remain that night on ſhore. Accordingly, after attending him to the Serjeant's houſe, I took my leave, for the preſent, and went on board to acquaint Captain Clerke with my proceedings at Bolcheretſk. It was with the utmoſt concern I found, that in the fortnight we had been abſent, this excellent officer was much altered for the worſe, inſtead of reaping that advantage we flattered ourſelves he might, from the repoſe of the harbour, and the milk and vegetable diet with which he was ſupplied. 1779. May.

As ſoon as I had diſpatched this buſineſs, I returned to the Major, and the next morning conducted him to the ſhips; where, on his arrival, he was ſaluted with thirteen guns, and received with every other mark of diſtinction, that it was in our power to pay him. He was attended by the Commander of one of the Ruſſian galliots, the maſter of a ſloop that lay in the harbour, two merchants from Bolcheretſk, and the prieſt of the neighbouring village of Paratounca, for whom he appeared to entertain the higheſt reſpect, and whom I ſhall hereafter have occaſion to mention, on account of his great kindneſs to Captain Clerke. Saturday 22.

After viſiting the Captain, and taking a view of both the ſhips, he returned to dinner on board the Reſolution; and, in the afternoon, the various curioſities we had collected in the courſe of our voyage, were ſhewn him, and a complete aſſortment of every article preſented to him by Captain Clerke. On this occaſion I muſt not paſs over an inſtance of great generoſity and gratitude in the ſailors of both ſhips; who, when they were told of the handſome preſent of tobacco

1779. May. bacco that was made them by the Major, desired, entirely of their own accord, that their grog might be stopped, and their allowance of spirits presented, on their part, to the garrison of Bolcheretsk, as they said they had reason to conclude that brandy was scarce in the country, and would be very acceptable to them, since the soldiers on shore had offered four roubles a bottle for it. We, who knew how much the sailors always felt, whenever their allowance of grog was stopped, which was generally done in warm weather, that they might have it in a greater proportion in cold, and that this offer would deprive them of it during the inclement season we had to expect in our next expedition to the North, could not but admire so extraordinary a sacrifice; and, that they might not suffer by it, Captain Clerke, and the rest of the officers, substituted in the room of the very small quantity the Major could be prevailed on to accept, the same quantity of rum. This, with a dozen or two of Cape wine, for Madame Behm, and such other little presents as were in our power to bestow, were accepted in the most obliging manner. The next morning the tobacco was divided between the crews of the two ships, three pounds being allotted to every man that chewed or smoked tobacco, and one pound to those that did not.

I have before mentioned, that Major Behm had resigned the command of Kamtschatka, and intended to set out in a short time for Petersburg; and he now offered to charge himself with any dispatches we might trust to his care. This was an opportunity not to be neglected; and accordingly Captain Clerke acquainted him, that he would take the liberty of sending by him some papers relating to our voyage, to be delivered to our Ambassador at the Russian court. Our first intentions were to send only a small journal of

of our proceedings; but afterward, Captain Clerke being perſuaded that the whole account of our diſcoveries might ſafely be truſted to a perſon who had given ſuch ſtriking proofs both of his public and private virtues; and conſidering that we had a very hazardous part of the voyage ſtill to undertake, determined to ſend, by him, the whole of the journal of our late Commander, with that part of his own, which completed the period from Captain Cook's death, till our arrival at Kamtſchatka; together with a chart of all our diſcoveries. Mr. Bayly, and myſelf, thought it alſo proper to ſend a general account of our proceedings to the board of longitude; by which precautions, if any misfortune had afterward befallen us, the Admiralty would have been in poſſeſſion of a complete hiſtory of the principal facts of our voyage. It was alſo determined, that a ſmaller pacquet ſhould be ſent by an expreſs from Okotſk, which, the Major ſaid, if he was fortunate in his paſſage to that port, would reach Peterſburg by December; and that he himſelf ſhould be there in February or March. 1779. May.

During the three following days, the Major was entertained alternately in the two ſhips, in the beſt manner we were able. On the 25th, he took his leave, and was ſaluted with thirteen guns; and the ſailors, at their own deſire, gave him three cheers. The next morning, Mr. Webber, and myſelf, attended him a few miles up the Awatſka River, where we met the Ruſſian prieſt, his wife and children, who were waiting to take the laſt farewel of their commander. Thurſday 25. Wedneſ. 26.

It was hard to ſay, whether the good prieſt and his family, or ourſelves, were moſt affected on taking our leave of Major Behm. Short as our acquaintance had been, his noble and diſintereſted conduct had inſpired us with the

1779. May.

higheſt reſpect and eſteem for him; and we could not part with a perſon to whom we were under ſuch obligations, and whom we had little proſpect of ever ſeeing again, without feeling the moſt tender concern. The intrinſic value of the private preſents we received from him, excluſive of the ſtores which might be carried to a public account, muſt have amounted, according to the current price of articles in that country, to upward of two hundred pounds. But this generoſity, extraordinary as it muſt appear in itſelf, was exceeded by the delicacy with which all his favours were conferred, and the artful manner in which he endeavoured to prevent our feeling the weight of obligations, which he knew we had no means of requiting. If we go a ſtep further, and conſider him as ſupporting a public character, and maintaining the honour of a great Sovereign, we ſhall find a ſtill higher ſubject of admiration, in the juſt and enlarged ſentiments by which he was actuated. "The ſervice in "which you are employed," he would often ſay, "is for "the general advantage of mankind, and therefore gives "you a right, not merely to the offices of humanity, but to "the privileges of citizens, in whatever country you may "be thrown. I am ſure I am acting agreeably to the wiſhes "of my Miſtreſs, in affording you all the relief in our "power; and I cannot forget either her character, or my "own honour, ſo much, as to barter for the performance "of a duty." At other times, he would tell us, that he was particularly deſirous of ſetting a good example to the Kamtſchadales, who, he ſaid, were but juſt emerging from a ſtate of barbariſm; that they looked up to the Ruſſians as their patterns in every thing; and that he had hopes they might, in future, look upon it as a duty incumbent upon them to aſſiſt ſtrangers to the utmoſt of their power, and

and believe, that ſuch was the univerſal practice of civilized nations. To all this muſt be added, that, after having relieved, to the utmoſt of his abilities, all our preſent diſtreſſes, he ſhewed himſelf not much leſs mindful of our future wants; and, as he ſuppoſed it more than probable we ſhould not diſcover the paſſage we were in ſearch of, and therefore ſhould return to Kamtſchatka in the fall of the year, he made Captain Clerke give him a liſt of what cordage and flour we ſhould want, and promiſed they ſhould be ſent from Okotſk, and wait our arrival. For the ſame purpoſe, he gave Captain Clerke a paper, enjoining all the ſubjects of the Empreſs, whom we might happen to meet, to give us every aſſiſtance in their power. 1779. May.

CHAP. III.

Continuation of Tranſactions in the Harbour of St. Peter and St. Paul.— Abundance of Fiſh.— Death of a Seaman belonging to the Reſolution.—The Ruſſian Hoſpital put under the Care of the Ship's Surgeons.— Supply of Flour and Cattle.— Celebration of the King's Birth-day.— Difficulties in ſailing out of the Bay.—Eruption of a Volcano.—Steer to the Northward.—Cheepoonſkoi Noſs.—Errors of the Ruſſian Charts.—Kamtſchatſkoi Noſs.—Olutorſkoi Noſs.—Tſchukotſkoi Noſs.—Iſland of St. Laurence.—View, from the ſame Point, of the Coaſts of Aſia and America, and the Iſlands of St. Diomede.—Various Attempts to get to the North, between the two Continents.—Obſtructed by impenetrable Ice.—Sea-horſes and white Bears killed.—Captain Clerke's Determination, and future Deſigns.

1779. May. HAVING concluded the laſt chapter with an account of our return from Bolcheretſk, accompanied by Major Behm, the Commander of Kamtſchatka, and of his departure; I ſhall proceed to relate the tranſactions that paſſed in the harbour of St. Peter and St. Paul during our
Friday 7. abſence. On the 7th of May, ſoon after we had left the bay, a large piece of ice drove acroſs the cut-water of the Reſolution, and brought home the ſmall bower anchor. This obliged them to weigh the other anchor, and moor again.

1779. May.

again. The carpenters, who were employed in ſtopping the leak, were obliged to take off a great part of the ſheathing from the bows, and found many of the trunnels ſo very looſe and rotten, as to be eaſily drawn out with the fingers.

Tueſday 11. On the 11th, they had heavy gales from the North Eaſt, which obliged both the ſhips to ſtrike yards and topmaſts; but in the afternoon, the weather being more moderate, and the ice having drifted away as far as the mouth of the harbour of St. Peter and St. Paul, they warped cloſe to the ſhore for the greater convenience of watering and wooding, and again moored as before; the town bearing North half Weſt, half a mile diſtant, and the mouth of the bay, ſhut in by the Southernmoſt point of Rakowina harbour, South.

Wedneſ. 12. The next day a party was ſent on ſhore to cut wood, but made little progreſs on account of the ſnow, which ſtill covered the ground. A convenient ſpot was cleared away abreaſt of the ſhips, where there was a fine run of water; and a tent being erected for the cooper, the empty caſks were landed, and the ſail-makers ſent on ſhore.

Saturday 15. On the 15th, the beach being clear of ice, the people were ſent to haul the ſeine, and caught an abundant ſupply of fine flat fiſh for both the ſhips companies. Indeed, from this time, during the whole of our ſtay in the harbour, we were abſolutely overpowered with the quantities of fiſh which came in from every quarter. The *Toions*, both of this town, and of Paratounca, a village in the neighbourhood, had received orders from Major Behm to employ all the Kamtſchadales in our ſervice; ſo that we frequently could not take into the ſhips the preſents that were ſent us. They conſiſted, in general, of

1779. May. of flat fiſh, cod, trout, and herring. Theſe laſt, which were in their full perfection, and of a delicious flavour, were exceedingly abundant in this bay. The Diſcovery's people ſurrounded, at one time, ſo great a quantity in their ſeine, that they were obliged to throw a vaſt number out, leſt the net ſhould be broken to pieces; and the cargo they landed was afterward ſo plentiful, that, beſides a ſufficient ſtore for immediate uſe, they filled as many caſks as they could ſpare for ſalting; and, after ſending to the Reſolution a ſufficient quantity for the ſame purpoſe, they left ſeveral buſhels behind on the beach.

The ſnow now began to diſappear very rapidly, and abundance of wild garlic, celery, and nettle-tops were gathered for the uſe of the crews; which being boiled with wheat and portable ſoup, made them a wholeſome and comfortable breakfaſt; and with this they were ſupplied every morning. The birch-trees were alſo tapped, and the ſweet juice, which they yielded in great quantities, was conſtantly mixed with the men's allowance of brandy.

Sunday 16. The next day, a ſmall bullock, which had been procured for the ſhips companies by the Serjeant, was killed; and weighed two hundred and ſeventy-two pounds. It was ſerved out to both crews for their Sunday's dinner, being the firſt piece of freſh beef they had taſted ſince our departure from the Cape of Good Hope in December 1776, a period of near two years and a half.

This evening died John Macintoſh, the carpenter's mate, after having laboured under a dyſentery ever ſince our departure from the Sandwich Iſlands: he was a very hard-working quiet man, and much regretted by his meſs-mates. He was the fourth perſon we loſt by ſickneſs during the voyage;

voyage; but the firſt who could be ſaid, from his age, and the conſtitutional habits of his body, to have had, on our ſetting out, an equal chance with the reſt of his comrades: Watman, we ſuppoſed to be about ſixty years of age; and Roberts, and Mr. Anderſon, from the decay which had evidently commenced before we left England, could not, in all probability, under any circumſtances, have lived a greater length of time than they did. 1779. May.

I have already mentioned, that Captain Clerke's health continued daily to decline, notwithſtanding the ſalutary change of diet which the country of Kamtſchatka afforded him. The prieſt of Paratounca, as ſoon as he heard of the infirm ſtate he was in, ſupplied him every day with bread, milk, freſh butter, and fowls, though his houſe was ſixteen miles from the harbour where we lay.

On our firſt arrival, we found the Ruſſian hoſpital, which is near the town of St. Peter and St. Paul, in a condition truly deplorable. All the ſoldiers were, more or leſs, affected by the ſcurvy, and a great many in the laſt ſtage of that diſorder. The reſt of the Ruſſian inhabitants were alſo in the ſame condition; and we particularly remarked, that our friend the Serjeant, by making too free with the ſpirits we gave him, had brought on himſelf, in the courſe of a few days, ſome of the moſt alarming ſymptoms of that malady. In this lamentable ſtate, Captain Clerke put them all under the care of our ſurgeons, and ordered a ſupply of ſour-krout, and malt, for wort, to be furniſhed for their uſe. It was aſtoniſhing to obſerve the alteration in the figures of almoſt every perſon we met on our return from Bolcheretſk; and I was informed, by our ſurgeons, that they attributed their ſpeedy recovery principally to the effects of the ſweet-wort.

On

1779. June. Tueſday 1. On the 1ſt of June we got on board two hundred and fifty poods, or nine thouſand pound weight of rye-flour, with which we were ſupplied from the ſtores of St. Peter and St. Paul's; and the Diſcovery had a proportional quantity. The men were immediately put on full allowance of bread, which they had not been indulged in ſince our leaving the Cape of Good Hope. The ſame day, our watering was completed, having got on board ſixty-five tons.

Friday 4. On the 4th, we had freſh breezes, and hard rain, which diſappointed us in our deſign of dreſſing the ſhips, and obliged us to content ourſelves with firing twenty-one guns in honour of the day, and celebrating it in other reſpects in the beſt manner we were able. Port, who was left with us on account of his ſkill in languages, behaved himſelf with ſo much modeſty and diſcretion, that, as ſoon as his maſter was gone, he was no longer Jean Port, but Monſieur Port, the interpreter; and partook, as well as the Serjeant (in his capacity of commander of the place), of the entertainment of the day. Our worthy friend, the prieſt of Paratounca, having got intelligence of its being our king's birth-day, gave alſo a ſumptuous feaſt; at which ſome of our gentlemen were preſent, who ſeemed highly delighted with their entertainment, which conſiſted of abundance of good eating and drinking, together with dancing.

Sunday 6. On the 6th, twenty head of cattle were ſent us, by the Commander's orders, from the Verchnei *oſtrog*, which is ſituated on the river Kamtſchatka, at the diſtance of near a hundred miles from this place, in a direct line. They were of a moderate ſize; and, notwithſtanding the Kamtſchadales had been ſeventeen days in driving them down to the harbour, arrived in good condition. The four following days were

were employed in making ready for ſea; and, on the 11th, at two in the morning, we began to unmoor; but, before we had got one anchor up, it blew ſo ſtrong a gale from the North Eaſt, that we kept faſt, and moored again; conjecturing, from the poſition of the entrance of the bay, that the current of wind would ſet up the channel. Accordingly, the pinnace being ſent out to examine the paſſage, returned with an account, that the wind blew ſtrong from the South Eaſt, with a great ſwell, ſetting into the bay, which would have made any attempt to get to ſea very hazardous. 1779. June. Friday 11.

Our friend Port now took his leave of us, and carried with him the box with our journals, which was to go by the Major, and the pacquet that was to be ſent expreſs. On the 12th, the weather being moderate, we began to unmoor again; but, after breaking the meſſenger, and reeving a running purchaſe with a ſix inch hawſer, which alſo broke three times, we were obliged, at laſt, to heave a ſtrain at low water, and wait for the flowing of the tide to raiſe the anchor. This project ſucceeded; but not without damaging the cable in the wake of the hawſe. At three, we weighed the beſt bower, and ſet ſail; and, at eight, having little wind, and the tide making againſt us, we dropped anchor again in ten fathoms, off the mouth of Rakowina harbour; the *oſtrog* bearing North by Eaſt half Eaſt, two miles and a half diſtant; the Needle Rocks, on the Eaſt ſide of the paſſage, South South Eaſt half Eaſt; and the high rock, on the Weſt ſide of the paſſage, South. Saturday 12.

On the 13th, at four in the morning, we got under way with the ebb tide; and, there being a dead calm, the boats were ſent ahead to tow the ſhips. At ten, the wind ſpringing up from the South Eaſt by South, and the tide having Sunday 13.

1779. June. turned, we were again obliged to drop anchor in ſeven fathoms; the Three Needle Rocks bearing South half Eaſt; and the *oſtrog* North half Eaſt, at the diſtance of one mile from the neareſt land. After dinner, I went, with Captain Gore, on ſhore on the Eaſt ſide of the paſſage, where we ſaw, in two different places, the remains of extenſive villages; and, on the ſide of the hill, an old ruined parapet, with four or five embraſures. It commanded the paſſage up the mouth of the bay; and, in Beering's time, as he himſelf mentions, had guns mounted on it. Near this place were the ruins of ſome caverns under ground, which we ſuppoſed to have been magazines.

At ſix in the afternoon we weighed with the ebb tide, and turned to windward; but, at eight, a thick fog ariſing, we were obliged to bring to, as our ſoundings could not afford us a ſufficient direction for ſteering between ſeveral ſunk rocks, which lie on each ſide of the paſſage we had to make.

Monday 14. In the morning of the 14th, the fog clearing away, we weighed as ſoon as the tide began to ebb; and, having little wind, ſent the boats ahead to tow; but, at ten o'clock, both the wind and tide ſet in ſo ſtrong from the ſea, that we were again obliged to drop anchor in thirteen fathoms, the high rock bearing Weſt one quarter South, diſtant three quarters of a mile. We remained faſt for the reſt of the day, the wind blowing freſh into the mouth of the bay; and, toward evening, the weather had a very unuſual appearance, being exceedingly dark and cloudy, with an unſettled ſhifting wind.

Tueſday 15. Before day-light, on the 15th, we were ſurprized with a rumbling noiſe, reſembling diſtant hollow thunder; and, when the day broke, we found the decks and ſides of the ſhips covered with a fine duſt like emery, near an inch thick.

thick. The air, at the ſame time, continued loaded and darkened with this ſubſtance; and, toward the *volcano* mountain, ſituated to the North of the harbour, it was ſo thick and black, that we could not diſtinguiſh the body of the hill. About twelve o'clock, and during the afternoon, the exploſions became louder, and were followed by ſhowers of cinders, which were, in general, about the ſize of peas; though many were picked up from the deck larger than a hazel nut. Along with the cinders fell ſeveral ſmall ſtones, which had undergone no change from the action of fire. In the evening we had dreadful thunder and lightning, which, with the darkneſs of the atmoſphere, and the ſulphureous ſmell of the air, produced all together a moſt awful and terrifying effect. We were, at this time, about eight leagues from the foot of the mountain. 1779. June.

On the 16th, at day-light, we again weighed anchor, and ſtood out of the bay; but the ebb tide ſetting acroſs the paſſage upon the Eaſtern ſhore, and the wind falling, we were driven very near the Three Needle Rocks, which lie on that ſide of the entrance, and obliged to hoiſt out the boats, in order to tow the ſhips clear of them. At noon we were two leagues from the land, and had ſoundings with forty-three fathoms of line, over a bottom of ſmall ſtones, of the ſame kind with thoſe which fell on our decks after the eruption of the *volcano*; but whether they had been left there by the laſt, or by ſome former eruptions, we were not able to determine. Wedneſ. 16.

The aſpect of the country was now very different from what it had been on our firſt arrival. The ſnow, excepting what remained on the tops of ſome very high mountains, had diſappeared; and the ſides of the hills, which, in many

1779. June. parts, were well wooded, were covered with a beautiful verdure.

As it was Captain Clerke's intention to keep as much in ſight of the coaſt of Kamtſchatka as the weather would permit, in order to determine its poſition, we continued ſteering to the North North Eaſt, with light and variable winds, till the 18th. The *volcano* was ſtill ſeen throwing up immenſe volumes of ſmoke; and we had no ſoundings with one hundred and fifty fathoms, at the diſtance of four leagues from the ſhore.

Friday 18. On the 18th, the wind freſhening from the South, the weather became ſo thick and hazy, as to make it imprudent to attempt any longer to keep in ſight of the land. But, that we might be ready to reſume our ſurvey, whenever the fogs ſhould diſperſe, we ran on in the direction of the coaſt, as laid down in the Ruſſian charts, and fired ſignal guns for the Diſcovery to ſteer the ſame courſe. At eleven o'clock, juſt before we loſt ſight of the land, Cheepoonſkoi Noſs, ſo called by the Ruſſians (a deſcription of which, as well as the coaſt between it and Awatſka Bay, will be given hereafter), bore North North Eaſt, diſtant ſeven or eight leagues.

Sunday 20. On the 20th, at three in the morning, the weather having cleared up, we ſtood in toward the land; and in an hour's time ſaw it ahead, extending from North Weſt to North North Eaſt, diſtant about five leagues. The North part we took to be Kronotſkoi Noſs; its poſition in the Ruſſian charts agreeing nearly with our reckoning as to its latitude, which was 54° 42′; but, in longitude, we differed from them conſiderably, they placing it 1° 48′ Eaſt of Awatſka; whereas, our reckoning, corrected by the time-keepers and lunar obſervations, makes it 3° 34′ Eaſtward of that place, or 162° 17′ Eaſt

East from Greenwich. The land about this cape is very high, and the inland mountains were ſtill covered with ſnow. The ſhore breaks off in ſteep cliffs, and the coaſt is without any appearance of inlets or bays. We had not been long gratified with this ſight of the land, when the wind freſhened from the South Weſt, and brought on a thick fog, which obliged us to ſtand off to the North Eaſt by Eaſt. The weather clearing up again at noon, we ſteered toward the land, expecting to fall in with Kamtſchatſkoi Noſs, and had ſight of it at day-break of the 21ſt. 1779. June. Monday 21.

The Southerly wind was ſoon after ſucceeded by a light breeze blowing off the land, which prevented our approaching the coaſt ſufficiently near to deſcribe its aſpect, or aſcertain, with accuracy, its direction. At noon our latitude, by obſervation, was 55° 52′, and longitude (deduced from a compariſon of many lunar obſervations, taken near this time, with the time-keepers), 163° 50′; the extremities of the land bearing North Weſt by Weſt three quarters Weſt, and North by Weſt three quarters Weſt, the neareſt part about eight leagues diſtant. At nine o'clock in the evening, having approached about two leagues nearer the coaſt, we found it formed a projecting peninſula, extending about twelve leagues in a direction nearly North and South. It is level, and of a moderate height, the Southern extremity terminating in a low ſloping point; that to the North forming a ſteep bluff head; and between them, about four leagues to the Southward of the Northern Cape, there is a conſiderable break in the land. On each ſide of this break the land is quite low; beyond the opening riſes a remarkable ſaddle-like hill; and a chain of high mountains, covered with ſnow, ranges along the back of the whole peninſula.

As

1779. June. As the coaſt runs in an even direction, we were at a great loſs where to place Kamtſchatſkoi Noſs, which, according to Muller, forms a projecting point about the middle of the peninſula, and which certainly does not exiſt; but I have ſince found, that, in the general map publiſhed by the Academy of Peterſburg in 1776, that name is given to the Southern cape. This was found, by ſeveral accurate obſervations, to be in latitude 56° 3′, longitude 163° 20′; the difference in longitude, from the Ruſſian charts, being the ſame as at Kronotſkoi Noſs. The variation of the compaſs at this time was 10° Eaſt. To the Southward of this peninſula the great river Kamtſchatka falls into the ſea.

As the ſeaſon was too far advanced to admit of our making an accurate ſurvey of the coaſt of Kamtſchatka, it was Captain Clerke's plan, in our run to Beering's Strait, to determine principally the poſitions of the projecting points of the coaſt. We therefore directed our courſe acroſs an extenſive bay, laid down between Kamtſchatſkoi Noſs and Olutorſkoi Noſs, intending to make the latter; which, according to the Ruſſian geographers, terminates the peninſula called Kamtſchatka, and becomes the Southern boundary of the Koriaki country.

Tueſday 22. On the 22d, we paſſed a dead whale, which emitted a horrid ſtench, perceivable at upward of a league's diſtance; it was covered with a great number of ſea-birds, that were feaſting on it.

Thurſday 24. On the 24th, the wind, which had varied round the compaſs the three preceding days, fixed at South Weſt, and brought clear weather, with which we continued our courſe to the North Eaſt by North, acroſs the bay, without any land in ſight.

This

This day we ſaw a great number of gulls, and were witneſſes to the diſguſting mode of feeding of the arctic gull, which has procured it the name of the paraſite, and which, if the reader is not already acquainted with it, he will find in the note below *. 1779. June.

On the 25th, at one o'clock in the afternoon, being in latitude 59° 12′, longitude 168° 35′, the wind freſhening from the ſame quarter, a thick fog ſucceeded; and this unfortunately juſt at the time we expected to ſee Olutorſkoi Noſs, which, if Muller places it right in latitude 59° 30′, and in longitude 167° 36′, could only have then been twelve leagues from us; at which diſtance, land of a moderate height might eaſily have been ſeen. But if the ſame error in longitude prevails here, which we have hitherto invariably found, it would have been much nearer us, even before the fog came on; and as we ſaw no appearance of land at that time, it muſt either have been very low, or there muſt be ſome miſtake of latitude in Muller's account. We tried ſoundings, but had no ground with one hundred and ſixty fathoms of line. Friday 25.

The weather ſtill thickening, and preventing a nearer approach to the land, at five we ſteered Eaſt by North, which is ſomewhat more Eaſterly than the Ruſſian charts lay down the trending of the coaſt from Olutorſkoi Noſs. The next day, we had a freſh gale from the South Weſt, which laſted till the 27th at noon, when the fogs clearing away, we ſtood to the Northward, in order to make the land. The latitude at noon, by obſervation, was 59° 49′, longitude 175° 43′. Saturday 26. Sunday 27.

* This bird, which is ſomewhat larger than the common gull, purſues the latter kind whenever it meets them; the gull, after flying for ſome time, with loud ſcreams, and evident marks of great terror, drops its dung, which its purſuer immediately darts at, and catches before it falls into the ſea.

Notwithſtanding

1779. June. Notwithſtanding we ſaw ſhags in the forenoon, which are ſuppoſed never to go far from land, yet there was no appearance of it this day; but on the 28th, at ſix in the morning, we got ſight of it to the North Weſt. The coaſt ſhews itſelf in hills of a moderate height; but inland, others are ſeen to riſe conſiderably. We could obſerve no wood, and the ſnow lying upon them in patches, gave the whole a very barren appearance. At nine, we were about ten miles from the ſhore, the Southern extremity bearing Weſt by South, ſix leagues diſtant, beyond which the coaſt appeared to trend to the Weſtward. This point being in latitude 61° 48′, longitude 174° 48′, lies, according to the Ruſſian charts, near the mouth of the river Opuka. At the ſame time, the Northern extreme bore North by Weſt; between which and a hill bearing North Weſt by Weſt a quarter Weſt, and at this diſtance appearing to us like an iſland, the coaſt ſeemed to bend to the Weſtward, and form a deep bay.

About eight miles from land, we perceived ourſelves in a ſtrong rippling; and being apprehenſive of foul ground, we bore away to the North Eaſt, along the ſhore; notwithſtanding, on heaving the lead, we found regular ſoundings of twenty-four fathoms, over a gravelly bottom; from whence we concluded, that this appearance was occaſioned by a tide, at that time running to the Southward. At noon, the extremes of the land bearing Weſt South Weſt three-quarters Weſt, and North North Eaſt three-quarters Eaſt, diſtant from the neareſt ſhore four leagues, we were abreaſt of the low land, which we now perceived to join the two points, where we had before expected to find a deep bay. The coaſt bends a little to the Weſtward, and has a ſmall inlet, which may probably be the mouth of ſome trifling ſtream. Our latitude,

tude, by obſervation, was 61° 56′, and longitude 175° 43′, and the variation of the compaſs 17° 30′ Eaſt. 1779. June.

We continued, during the afternoon, to run along the ſhore, at the diſtance of four or five leagues, with a moderate Weſterly breeze, carrying regular ſoundings from twenty-eight to thirty-ſix fathoms. The coaſt preſented the ſame barren aſpect as to the Southward; the hills riſing conſiderably inland, but to what height, the clouds on their tops put it out of our power to determine. At eight in the evening, land was thought to have been ſeen to the Eaſt by North, on which we ſteered to the Southward of Eaſt; but it turned out to be only a fog bank. At midnight, the extreme point bearing North Eaſt a quarter Eaſt, we ſuppoſed it to be Saint Thadeus's Noſs; to the Southward of which, the land trends to the Weſtward, and forms a deep bight, wherein, according to the Ruſſian charts, lies the river Katirka.

On the 29th, the weather was unſettled and variable, with the wind from the North Eaſt. At noon of the 30th, our latitude, by obſervation, was 61° 48′, and longitude 180° 0′; at which time Saint Thadeus's Noſs bore North North Weſt, twenty-three leagues diſtant, and beyond it we obſerved the coaſt ſtretching almoſt directly North. The moſt Eaſterly point of the Noſs is in latitude 62° 50′, and longitude 179° 0′, being 3 ½° more to the Eaſt, than what the Ruſſians make it. The land about it muſt be of a conſiderable height from its being ſeen at ſo great a diſtance. During the two laſt days, we ſaw numbers of whales, large ſeals, and ſea-horſes; alſo gulls, ſea-parrots, and albatroſſes. We took the advantage of a little calm weather to try for fiſh, and caught abundance of fine cod. The depth of water from ſixty-five to ſeventy-five fathoms. Tueſday 29. Wedneſ.

1779. July. Thurſday 1. On the 1ſt of July at noon, Mr. Bligh having moored a ſmall keg with the deep-ſea lead, in ſeventy-five fathoms, found the ſhip made a courſe North by Eaſt, half a mile an hour. This he attributed to the effect of a long Southerly ſwell, and not to that of any current. The wind freſhening from the South Eaſt toward evening, we ſhaped our courſe to the North Eaſt by Eaſt, for the point called in Beering's chart, Tſchukotſkoi Noſs, which we had obſerved on the 4th of September laſt year, at the ſame time that we ſaw, to the South Eaſt, the iſland of Saint Laurence. This Cape, and Saint Thadeus's Noſs, form the North Eaſt and South Weſt extremities of the large and deep Gulph of Anadir, into the bottom of which the river of that name empties itſelf, dividing, as it paſſes, the country of the Koriacs from that of the Tſchutſki.

Saturday 3. On the 3d at noon, the latitude, by obſervation, was 63° 33′, and the longitude 186° 45°; half an hour after which we got ſight of the Tſchukotſkoi Noſs, bearing North half Weſt, thirteen or fourteen leagues diſtant, and at five in the afternoon ſaw the iſland of Saint Laurence, bearing Eaſt three-quarters North; and another iſland a little to the Eaſtward of it, which we ſuppoſed to be between Saint Laurence and Anderſon's Iſland, about ſix leagues Eaſt South Eaſt of the former. As we had no certain accounts of this iſland, Captain Clerke was deſirous of a nearer proſpect, and immediately hauled the wind toward it; but, unfortunately, we were not able to weather the iſland of Saint Laurence, and were therefore under the neceſſity of bearing up again, and paſſing them all to the leeward.

We had a better opportunity of ſettling the longitude of the iſland Saint Laurence, when we laſt ſaw it, than now. But ſeeing it at that time but once, and to the Southward, we

we could only determine its latitude ſo far as we could judge of diſtances; whereas now the noon obſervations enabled us to aſcertain it correctly, which is 63° 47′. Its longitude was found to be 188° 15′, as before. This iſland, if its boundaries were at this time within our view, is about three leagues in circuit. The North part may be ſeen at the diſtance of ten or twelve leagues; but as it falls in low land to the South Eaſt, the extent of which we could not ſee, ſome of us conjectured, that it might probably be joined to the land to the Eaſtward of it; this, however, the hazineſs of the weather prevented our aſcertaining. Theſe iſlands, as well as the land about the Tſchukotſkoi Noſs, were covered with ſnow, and preſented us with a moſt dreary picture. At midnight, Saint Laurence bore South South Eaſt, five or ſix miles diſtant; and our depth of water was eighteen fathoms. We were accompanied by various kinds of ſea fowl, and ſaw ſeveral ſmall creſted awks. 1779. July.

The weather ſtill continuing to thicken, we loſt all ſight of land till the 5th, when it appeared both to the North Eaſt and North Weſt. Our latitude, by account, was, at this time, 65° 24′, longitude 189° 14′. As the iſlands of Saint Diomede, which lie between the two continents in Beering's ſtrait, were determined by us laſt year to be in latitude 65° 48′, we could not reconcile the land to the North Eaſt, with the ſituation of theſe iſlands. We therefore ſtood toward the land till three in the afternoon, when we were within four miles of it, and finding it to be two iſlands, were pretty well ſatisfied of their being the ſame; but the weather ſtill continuing hazy, to make ſure of our ſituation, we ſtood over to the coaſt of Aſia, till ſeven in the evening; at which time we were within two or three leagues of the Eaſt Cape of that continent. Monday 5.

1779. July. This Cape is a high round head of land, extending four or five miles from North to South, forming a peninſula, and connected with the continent by a narrow neck of low land. Its ſhore is bold, and off its North part are three high, detached, ſpiral rocks. At this time it was covered with ſnow, and the beach ſurrounded with ice. We were now convinced, that we had been under the influence of a ſtrong current, ſetting to the North, that had cauſed an error in our latitude at noon of twenty miles. In paſſing this ſtrait the laſt year, we had experienced the ſame effect.

Being at length ſure of our poſition, we held on to the North by Eaſt. At ten at night, the weather becoming clear, we had an opportunity of ſeeing, at the ſame moment, the remarkable peaked hill, near Cape Prince of Wales, on the coaſt of America, and the Eaſt Cape of Aſia, with the two connecting iſlands of Saint Diomede between them.

Tueſday 6. At noon on the 6th, the latitude, by account, was 67° North, and the longitude 191° 6′ Eaſt. Having already paſſed a conſiderable number of large maſſes of ice, and obſerved, that it ſtill adhered in ſeveral places to the ſhore on the continent of Aſia, we were not much ſurprized to fall in, at three in the afternoon, with an extenſive body of it, ſtretching away to the Weſtward. This ſight gave great diſcouragement to our hopes of advancing much farther Northward this year, than we had done the preceding.

Having little wind in the afternoon, we hoiſted out the boats in purſuit of the ſea-horſes, which were in great numbers on the detached pieces of ice; but they ſoon returned without ſucceſs; theſe animals being exceedingly ſhy, and before they could come within gun-ſhot, always making their retreat into the water.

At ſeven in the evening, we hoiſted in the boats, and the wind

wind freſhening from the Southward, we ſtood on to the North Eaſt, with a view of exploring the continent of America, between the latitudes of 68° and 69°, which, owing to the foggy weather laſt year, we had not been able to examine. In this attempt we were again in part diſappointed. For, on the 7th, at ſix in the morning, we were ſtopped by a large field of ice, ſtretching from North Weſt to South Eaſt; but ſoon after, the horizon becoming clear, we had ſight of the coaſt of America, at about ten leagues diſtance, extending from North Eaſt by Eaſt to Eaſt, and lying, by obſervation, between the 68° and 68° 20′ of latitude. As the weather was clear, and the ice not high, we were enabled to ſee over a great extent of it. The whole preſented a ſolid and compact ſurface, not in the ſmalleſt degree thawed; and appeared to us likewiſe to adhere to the land. 1779. July. Wedneſ. 7.

The weather ſoon after changing to hazy, we ſaw no more of the land; and there not remaining a poſſibility of approaching nearer to it, we ſtood to the North North Weſt, keeping the ice cloſe on board, and got round its Weſtern extremity by noon, when we found it trending nearly North. Our latitude at this time was, by account, 68° 22′, and longitude 192° 34′. We continued our courſe to the North North Eaſt, along the edge of the ice, during the remaining part of the day, paſſing through many looſe pieces that had been broken off from the main body, and againſt which, notwithſtanding all our caution, the ſhips were driven with great violence. At eight o'clock in the evening, we paſſed ſome drift-wood; and at midnight the wind ſhifted to the North Weſt: the thermometer fell from 38° to 31°, and we had continued ſhowers of ſnow and ſleet.

On the 8th, at five in the morning, the wind coming ſtill more to the Northward, we could no longer keep on the ſame Thurſday 8.

1779. July. ſame tack, on account of the ice, but were obliged to ſtand to the Weſtward. At this time our ſoundings had decreaſed to nineteen fathoms, from which, on comparing it with our obſervations on the depth of water laſt year, we concluded, that we were not at a greater diſtance from the American ſhore than ſix or ſeven leagues; but our view was confined within a much ſhorter compaſs, by a violent fall of ſnow. At noon, the latitude, by account, was 69° 21′, longitude 192° 42′. At two in the afternoon, the weather cleared up, and we found ourſelves cloſe to an expanſe of what appeared from the deck ſolid ice; but, from the maſthead, it was diſcovered to be compoſed of huge compact bodies, cloſe and united toward the outer edge, but in the interior parts, ſeveral pieces were ſeen floating in vacant ſpaces of the water. It extended from North Eaſt by the North to Weſt South Weſt. We bore away by the edge of it, to the Southward, that we might get into clearer water; for the ſtrong Northerly winds had drifted down ſuch quantities of looſe pieces, that we had been, for ſome time, ſurrounded by them, and could not avoid ſtriking againſt ſeveral, notwithſtanding we reefed the topſails, and ſtood under an eaſy ſail.

Friday 9. On the 9th, we had a freſh gale from the North North Weſt, with heavy ſhowers of ſnow and ſleet. The thermometer was, in the night-time, 28°, and at noon 30°. We continued to ſteer Weſt South Weſt, as before, keeping as near the large body of ice as we could, and had the misfortune to rub off ſome of the ſheathing from the bows againſt the drift pieces, and to damage the cutwater. Indeed, the ſhocks we could not avoid receiving, were frequently ſo ſevere, as to be attended with conſiderable danger. At noon, the latitude, by account, was 69° 12′, and longitude

188°

188° 5′. The variation, in the afternoon, was found to be 29° 30′ East. 1779. July.

As we had now ſailed near forty leagues to the Weſtward, along the edge of the ice, without ſeeing any opening, or a clear ſea to the Northward beyond it, and had therefore no proſpect of advancing farther North for the preſent, Captain Clerke reſolved to bear away to the South by Eaſt (the only quarter that was clear), and to wait till the ſeaſon was more advanced, before he made any farther efforts to penetrate through the ice. The intermediate time he propoſed to ſpend in examining the bay of Saint Laurence, and the coaſt to the Southward of it; as a harbour ſo near, in caſe of future damage from the ice, would be very deſirable. We alſo wiſhed to pay another viſit to our Tſchutſki friends; and, particularly, ſince the accounts we had heard of them from the Commander of Kamtſchatka.

We therefore ſtood on to the Southward, till the noon of the 10th, at which time we paſſed great quantities of drift-ice, and the wind fell to a perfect calm. The latitude, by obſervation, was 68° 1′; longitude 188° 30′. We paſſed ſeveral whales in the forenoon; and, in the afternoon, hoiſted out the boats, and ſent them in purſuit of the ſea-horſes, which were in great numbers on the pieces of ice that ſurrounded us. Our people were more ſucceſsful than they had been before, returning with three large ones, and a young one; beſides killing and wounding ſeveral others. The gentlemen who went on this party were witneſſes of ſeveral remarkable inſtances of parental affection in thoſe animals. On the approach of our boats toward the ice, they all took their cubs under their fins, and endeavoured to eſcape with them into the ſea. Several, whoſe young were killed or wounded, and left floating on the ſurface, roſe Saturday 10.

1779. July. roſe again, and carried them down, ſometimes juſt as our people were going to take them up into the boat; and might be traced bearing them to a great diſtance through the water, which was coloured with their blood: we afterward obſerved them bringing them, at times, above the ſurface, as if for air, and again diving under it with a dreadful bellowing. The female, in particular, whoſe young had been deſtroyed, and taken into the boat, became ſo enraged, that ſhe attacked the cutter, and ſtruck her two tuſks through the bottom of it.

At eight in the evening, a breeze ſprung up to the Eaſtward, with which we ſtill continued our courſe to the Southward, and at twelve fell in with numerous large bodies of ice. We endeavoured to puſh through them with an eaſy ſail, for fear of damaging the ſhip: and having got a little farther to the Southward, nothing was to be ſeen, but one compact field of ice, ſtretching to the South Weſt, South Eaſt, and North Eaſt, as far as the eye could reach. This unexpected and formidable obſtacle put an end to Captain Clerke's plan of viſiting the Tſchutſki; for no ſpace remained open, but back again to the Northward. Accord-

Sunday 11. ingly, at three in the morning of the 11th, we tacked, and ſtood to that quarter. At noon, the latitude, by obſervation, was 67° 49′, and longitude 188° 47′.

Monday 12. On the 12th, we had light winds, with thick hazy weather; and, on trying the current, we found it ſet to the North Weſt, at the rate of half a knot an hour. We continued to ſteer Northward, with a moderate Southerly breeze

Tueſday 13. and fair weather, till the 13th, at ten in the forenoon, when we again found ourſelves cloſe in with a ſolid field of ice, to which we could ſee no limits from the maſt-head. This, at once, daſhed all our hopes of penetrating farther; which had

had been conſiderably raiſed, by having now advanced near ten leagues through a ſpace, which, on the 9th, we had found occupied by impenetrable ice. Our latitude, at this time, was 69° 37′; our poſition nearly in the mid channel between the two continents; and the field of ice extending from Eaſt North Eaſt, to Weſt South Weſt. 1779. July.

As there did not remain the ſmalleſt proſpect of getting farther North in the part of the ſea where we now were, Captain Clerke reſolved to make one more, and final attempt on the American coaſt, for Baffin's Bay, ſince we had been able to advance the fartheſt on this ſide laſt year. Accordingly, we kept working, the remaining part of the day, to the windward, with a freſh Eaſterly breeze. We ſaw ſeveral fulmars and arctic gulls, and paſſed two trees, both appearing to have lain in the water a long time. The larger was about ten feet in length, and three in circumference, without either bark or branches, but with the roots remaining attached.

On the 14th, we ſtood on to the Eaſtward, with thick and foggy weather, our courſe being nearly parallel to that we ſteered the 8th and 9th, but ſix leagues more to the Northward. Wedneſ. 14.

On the 15th, the wind freſhened from the Weſtward, and having, in a great meaſure, diſperſed the fog, we immediately ſtood to the Northward, that we might take a nearer view of the ice; and in an hour were cloſe in with it, extending from North North Weſt, to North Eaſt. We found it to be compact and ſolid; the outer parts were ragged, and of different heights; the interior ſurface was even; and, we judged, from eight to ten feet above the level of the ſea. The weather becoming moderate for the remaining part of the day, we directed our Thurſday 15.

1779. July.

courſe according to the trending of the ice, which in many parts formed deep bays.

Friday 16. In the morning of the 16th, the wind freſhened, and was attended with thick and frequent ſhowers of ſnow. At eight in the forenoon, it blew a ſtrong gale from the Weſt South Weſt, and brought us under double-reefed top-ſails; when, the weather clearing a little, we found ourſelves embayed; the ice having taken a ſudden turn to the South Eaſt, and in one compact body ſurrounding us on all ſides, except on the South quarter. We therefore hauled our wind to the Southward, being at this time in latitude 70° 8′ North, and in twenty-ſix fathoms water; and, as we ſuppoſed, about twenty-five leagues from the coaſt of America. The gale increaſing, at four in the afternoon we cloſe reefed the fore and main-top-ſails, furled the mizen-top-ſail, and got the top-gallant-yards down upon deck. At eight, finding the depth of water had decreaſed to twenty-two fathoms, which we conſidered as a proof of our near approach to the American coaſt, we tacked and ſtood to the North. We had blowing weather, accom-

Saturday 17. panied with ſnow, through the night; but next morning, it became clear and moderate; and, at eight in the forenoon, we got the top-gallant-yards acroſs, and made ſail with the wind ſtill at Weſt South Weſt. At noon, we were in latitude, by obſervation, 69° 55′, longitude 194° 30′. Toward evening, the wind ſlackened, and at midnight it was a calm.

Sunday 18. On the 18th, at five in the morning, a light breeze ſprung up from the Eaſt North Eaſt, with which we continued our courſe to the North, in order to regain the ice as ſoon as poſſible. We paſſed ſome ſmall logs of drift-wood, and

ſaw

1779. July.

ſaw abundance of ſea-parrots, and the ſmall ice-birds, and likewiſe a number of whales. At noon, the latitude, by obſervation, was 70° 26′, and longitude 194° 54′; the depth of water twenty-three fathoms; the ice ſtretched from North to Eaſt North Eaſt, and was diſtant about three miles. At one in the afternoon, finding that we were cloſe in with a firm united field of it, extending from Weſt North Weſt to Eaſt, we tacked, and, the wind coming round to the Weſtward, ſtood on to the Eaſtward, along its edge, till eleven at night. At that time a very thick fog coming on, and the water ſhoaling to nineteen fathoms, we hauled our wind to the South. The variation obſerved this day was 31° 20′ Eaſt. It is remarkable, that though we ſaw no ſea-horſes on the body of the ice, yet they were in herds, and in greater numbers on the detached fragments, than we had ever obſerved before. About nine in the evening, a white bear was ſeen ſwimming cloſe by the Diſcovery; it afterward made to the ice, on which were alſo two others.

Monday 19.

On the 19th, at one in the morning, the weather clearing up, we again ſteered to the North Eaſt, till two, when we were a ſecond time ſo completely embayed, that there was no opening left, but to the South; to which quarter we accordingly directed our courſe, returning through a remarkably ſmooth water, and with very favourable weather, by the ſame way we had come in. We were never able to penetrate farther North than at this time, when our latitude was 70° 33′; and this was five leagues ſhort of the point to which we advanced laſt ſeaſon. We held on to the South South Weſt, with light winds from the North Weſt, by the edge of the main ice, which lay on our left hand, and ſtretched between us and the continent of America. Our

1779. July. latitude, by obſervation at noon, was 70° 11′, our longitude 196° 15′, and the depth of water ſixteen fathoms. From this circumſtance, we judged that the Icy Cape was now only at ſeven or eight leagues diſtance; but, though the weather was in general clear, it was at the ſame time hazy in the horizon; ſo that we could not expect to ſee it.

In the afternoon, we ſaw two white bears in the water, to which we immediately gave chace in the jolly boat, and had the good fortune to kill them both. The larger, which probably was the dam of the younger, being ſhot firſt, the other would not quit it, though it might eaſily have eſcaped on the ice, whilſt the men were reloading, but remained ſwimming about, till, after being fired upon ſeveral times, it was ſhot dead.

The dimenſions of the larger were as follow:

	Feet.	Inches.
From the ſnout to the end of the tail - -	7	2
From the ſnout to the ſhoulder-bone - -	2	3
Height of the ſhoulder - - -	4	3
Circumference near the fore-legs - -	4	10
Breadth of the fore-paw - - -		10

	lb.
Weight of the four quarters - -	436
Weight of the four quarters of the ſmalleſt	256

On comparing the dimenſions of this with Lord Mulgrave's white bear, they were found almoſt exactly the ſame, except in the circumference, where our's fell exceedingly ſhort.

Theſe animals afforded us a few excellent meals of freſh meat. The fleſh had indeed a ſtrong fiſhy taſte, but was, in

in every reſpect, infinitely ſuperior to that of the ſea-horſe; which, nevertheleſs, our people were again perſuaded, without much difficulty, to prefer to their ſalted proviſions. 1779. July.

At ſix in the morning of the 20th, a thick fog coming on, we loſt ſight of the ice for two hours; but the weather clearing, we ſaw the main body again to the South South Eaſt, when we hauled our wind, which was Eaſterly, toward it, in the expectation of making the American coaſt to the South Eaſt, and which we effected at half paſt ten. At noon, the latitude, by account, was 69° 33′, and longitude 194° 53′, and the depth of water nineteen fathoms. The land extended from South by Eaſt, to South South Weſt half Weſt, diſtant eight or ten leagues, being the ſame we had ſeen laſt year; but it was now much more covered with ſnow than at that time; and, to all appearance, the ice adhered to the ſhore. We continued, in the afternoon, ſailing through a ſea of looſe ice, and ſtanding toward the land, as near as the wind, which was Eaſt South Eaſt, would admit. At eight, the wind leſſening, there came on a thick fog; and, on perceiving a rippling in the water, we tried the current, which we found to ſet to the Eaſt North Eaſt, at the rate of a mile an hour, and therefore determined to ſteer, during the night, before the wind, in order to ſtem it, and to oppoſe the large fragments of looſe ice, that were ſetting us on toward the land. The depth of the water, at midnight, was twenty fathoms. Tueſday 20.

At eight in the morning of the 21ſt, the wind freſhening, and the fog clearing away, we ſaw the American coaſt to the South Eaſt, at the diſtance of eight or ten leagues, and hauled in for it; but were ſtopped again by the ice, and obliged to bear away to the Weſtward, along the edge of it. Wedneſ. 21.

At

1779. July. At noon, the latitude, by account, was 69° 34′, and longitude 193°, and the depth of water twenty-four fathoms.

Thus, a connected, ſolid field of ice, rendering every effort we could make to a nearer approach to the land fruitleſs, and joining, as we judged, to it, we took a laſt farewel of a North Eaſt paſſage to Old England. I ſhall beg leave to give, in Captain Clerke's own words, the reaſons of this his final determination, as well as of his future plans; and this the rather, as it is the laſt tranſaction his health permitted him to write down.

" It is now impoſſible to proceed the leaſt farther to the " Northward upon this coaſt (America); and it is equally " as improbable that this amazing maſs of ice ſhould be " diſſolved by the few remaining ſummer-weeks which " will terminate this ſeaſon; but it will continue, it is to " be believed, as it now is, an inſurmountable barrier to " every attempt we can poſſibly make. I, therefore, think " it the beſt ſtep that can be taken, for the good of the ſer- " vice, to trace the ſea over to the Aſiatic coaſt, and to try " if I can find any opening, that will admit me farther " North; if not, to ſee what more is to be done upon that " coaſt; where I hope, yet cannot much flatter myſelf, to " meet with better ſucceſs; for the ſea is now ſo choaked " with ice, that a paſſage, I fear, is totally out of the queſ- " tion."

CHAP.

CHAP. IV.

Fruitleſs Attempts to penetrate through the Ice to the North Weſt.—Dangerous Situation of the Diſcovery.—Sea-horſes killed.—Freſh Obſtructions from the Ice.—Report of Damages received by the Diſcovery.—Captain Clerke's Determination to proceed to the Southward.—Joy of the Ships Crews on that Occaſion.—Paſs Serdze Kamen.—Return through Beering's Strait.—Inquiry into the Extent of the North Eaſt Coaſt of Aſia.—Reaſons for rejecting Muller's Map of the Promontory of the Tſchutſki.—Reaſons for believing the Coaſt does not reach a higher Latitude than 70½° *North.—General Obſervations on the Impracticability of a North Eaſt, or North Weſt Paſſage from the Atlantic into the Pacific Ocean.—Comparative View of the Progreſs made in the Years* 1778 *and* 1779.*—Remarks on the Sea, and Sea-coaſts, North of Beering's Strait.—Hiſtory of the Voyage reſumed.—Paſs the Iſland of St. Laurence.—The Iſland of Mednoi.—Death of Captain Clerke.—Short Account of his Services.*

CAPTAIN CLERKE having determined, for the reaſons aſſigned at the concluſion of the laſt Chapter, to give up all farther attempts on the coaſt of America, and to make his laſt efforts, in ſearch of a paſſage, on the coaſt of the oppoſite continent, we continued, during the afternoon of the 1779. July.

1779. July. Wedneſ. 21. the 21ſt of July, to ſteer to the Weſt North Weſt, through much looſe ice. At ten at night, diſcovering the main body of it through the fog, right ahead, and almoſt cloſe to us, and being unwilling to take a Southerly courſe, ſo long as we could poſſibly avoid it, we hauled our wind, which was Eaſterly, and ſtood to the Northward; but, in an hour after, the weather clearing up, and finding ourſelves ſurrounded by a compact field of ice, on every ſide, except to the South South Weſt, we tacked, and ſtood on in that direction, in order to get clear of it.

Thurſday 22. At noon of the 22d, our latitude, by obſervation, was 69° 30′, and longitude 187° 30′. In the afternoon, we again came up with the ice, which extended to the North Weſt and South Weſt, and obliged us to continue our courſe to the Southward, in order to weather it.

It may be remarked, that ſince the 8th of this month, we had twice traverſed this ſea, in lines nearly parallel with the run we had juſt now made; that in the firſt of thoſe traverſes, we were not able to penetrate ſo far North, by eight or ten leagues, as in the ſecond; and that in the laſt we had again found an united body of ice, generally about five leagues to the Southward of its poſition in the preceding run. As this proves that the large, compact fields of ice, which we ſaw, were moveable, or diminiſhing; at the ſame time, it does not leave any well-founded expectation of advancing much farther in the moſt favourable ſeaſons.

At ſeven in the evening, the weather being hazy, and no ice in ſight, we bore away to the Weſtward; but, at half paſt eight, the fog diſperſing, we found ourſelves in the midſt of looſe ice, and cloſe in with the main body; we therefore ſtood upon a wind, which was ſtill Eaſterly, and kept

kept beating to windward during the night, in hopes of weathering the looſe pieces, which the freſhneſs of the wind kept driving down upon us in ſuch quantities, that we were in manifeſt danger of being blocked up by them. 1779. July.

In the morning of the 23d, the clear water, in which we continued to ſtand to and fro, did not exceed a mile and a half, and was every inſtant leſſening. At length, after uſing our utmoſt endeavours to clear the looſe ice, we were driven to the neceſſity of forcing a paſſage to the Southward, which, at half paſt ſeven, we accompliſhed, but not without ſubjecting the ſhip to ſome very ſevere ſhocks. The Diſcovery was leſs ſucceſsful. For, at eleven, when they had nigh got clear out, ſhe became ſo entangled by ſeveral large pieces, that her way was ſtopped, and immediately dropping bodily to leeward, ſhe fell, broadſide foremoſt, on the edge of a conſiderable body of ice; and having, at the ſame time, an open ſea to windward, the ſurf cauſed her to ſtrike violently upon it. This maſs at length either ſo far broke, or moved, as to ſet them at liberty to make another trial to eſcape; but, unfortunately, before the ſhip gathered way enough to be under command, ſhe again fell to leeward on another fragment; and the ſwell making it unſafe to lie to windward, and finding no chance of getting clear, they puſhed into a ſmall opening, furled their ſails, and made faſt with ice-hooks. Friday 23.

In this dangerous ſituation we ſaw them at noon, about three miles from us, bearing North Weſt, a freſh gale from the South Eaſt driving more ice to the North Weſt, and increaſing the body that lay between us. Our latitude, by account, was 69° 8′, the longitude 187°, and the depth of water twenty-eight fathoms. To add to the gloomy appre-

1779. July. henſions which began to force themſelves on us, at half paſt four in the afternoon, the weather becoming thick and hazy, we loſt ſight of the Diſcovery; but, that we might be in a ſituation to afford her every aſſiſtance in our power, we kept ſtanding on cloſe by the edge of the ice. At ſix, the wind happily coming round to the North, gave us ſome hopes, that the ice might drift away and releaſe her; and in that caſe, as it was uncertain in what condition ſhe might come out, we kept firing a gun every half hour, in order to prevent a ſeparation. Our apprehenſions for her ſafety did not ceaſe till nine, when we heard her guns in anſwer to ours; and ſoon after, being hailed by her, were informed, that upon the change of wind, the ice began to ſeparate; and that, ſetting all their ſails, they forced a paſſage through it. We learned farther, that whilſt they were encompaſſed by it, they found the ſhip drift, with the main body, to the North Eaſt, at the rate of half a mile an hour. We were ſorry to find, that the Diſcovery had rubbed off a great deal of the ſheathing from the bows, and was become very leaky, from the ſtrokes ſhe had received when ſhe fell upon the edge of the ice.

Saturday 24. On the 24th, we had freſh breezes from South Weſt, with hazy weather, and kept running to the South Eaſt till eleven in the forenoon, when a large body of looſe ice, extending from North North Eaſt, round by the Eaſt, to South South Eaſt, and to which (though the weather was tolerably clear) we could ſee no end, again obſtructed our courſe. We therefore kept working to windward, and at noon, our latitude, by obſervation, was 68° 53′, longitude 188°; the variation of the compaſs 22° 30′ Eaſt. At four in the afternoon, it became calm, and we hoiſted out the boats in purſuit of the ſea-horſes, which were in prodigious herds on every ſide of us.

1779. July.

us. We killed ten of them, which were as many as we could make uſe of for eating, or for converting into lamp oil. We kept on with the wind, from the South Weſt, along the edge of the ice, which extended in a direction almoſt due Eaſt and Weſt, till four in the morning of the 25th, when obſerving a clear ſea beyond it, to the South Eaſt, we made ſail that way, with a view of forcing through it. By ſix, we had cleared it, and continued the remainder of the day running to the South Eaſt, without any ice in ſight. At noon, our latitude, by obſervation, was 68° 38′, longitude 189° 9′, and the depth of water thirty fathoms. At midnight, we tacked, and ſtood to the Weſtward, with a freſh gale from the South; and at ten in the forenoon of the 26th, the ice again ſhewed itſelf, extending from North Weſt to South. It appeared looſe, and drifting, by the force of the wind, to the Northward. At noon, our latitude, by obſervation, was 68° North, longitude 188° 10′ Eaſt; and we had ſoundings with twenty-eight fathoms. For the remaining part of the day, and till noon of the 27th, we kept ſtanding backward and forward, in order to clear ourſelves of different bodies of ice. At noon, we were in latitude, by obſervation, 67° 47′, longitude 188°. At two in the afternoon, we ſaw the continent to the South by Eaſt; and at four, having run, ſince noon, with a South South Eaſt wind to the South Weſt, we were ſurrounded by looſe maſſes of ice, with the firm body of it in ſight, ſtretching in a North by Weſt, and a South by Eaſt direction, as far as the eye could reach; beyond which we ſaw the coaſt of Aſia, bearing South, and South by Eaſt.

Sunday 25.

Monday 26.

Tueſday 27.

As it was now neceſſary to come to ſome determination with reſpect to the courſe we were next to ſteer, Captain Clerke ſent a boat, with the carpenters, on board the Diſcovery,

1779. July. very, to inquire into the particulars of the damage ſhe had ſuſtained. They returned, in the evening, with the report of Captain Gore, and of the carpenters of both ſhips, that the damages they had received were of a kind that would require three weeks to repair; and that it would be neceſſary, for that purpoſe, to go into ſome port.

Thus, finding a farther advance to the Northward, as well as a nearer approach to either continent, obſtructed by a ſea blocked up with ice, we judged it both injurious to the ſervice, by endangering the ſafety of the ſhips, as well as fruitleſs, with reſpect to the deſign of our voyage, to make any farther attempts toward a paſſage. This, therefore, added to the repreſentations of Captain Gore, determined Captain Clerke not to loſe more time in what he concluded to be an unattainable object, but to ſail for Awatſka Bay, to repair our damages there; and, before the winter ſhould ſet in, and render all other efforts toward diſcovery impracticable, to explore the coaſt of Japan.

I will not endeavour to conceal the joy that brightened the countenance of every individual, as ſoon as Captain Clerke's reſolutions were made known. We were all heartily ſick of a navigation full of danger, and in which the utmoſt perſeverance had not been repaid with the ſmalleſt probability of ſucceſs. We therefore turned our faces toward home, after an abſence of three years, with a delight and ſatisfaction, which, notwithſtanding the tedious voyage we had ſtill to make, and the immenſe diſtance we had to run, were as freely entertained, and perhaps as fully enjoyed, as if we had been already in ſight of the Land's-end.

Wedneſ. 28. On the 28th, we kept working to windward with a freſh breeze from the South Eaſt, having the coaſt of Aſia ſtill in ſight.

1779. July.

ſight. At four in the morning, the Cape, which, on the authority of Muller, we have called Serdze Kamen, bore South South Weſt, diſtant ſix or ſeven leagues. We ſaw, in different places, upon the tops of the hills, which riſe inland on both ſides of the Cape, protuberances of a conſiderable height, which had the appearance of huge rocks, or pillars of ſtone.

Thurſday 29. On the 29th, the wind ſtill continuing contrary, we made but ſlow progreſs to the Southward. At midnight we had thick, foggy weather, accompanied with a breeze from the North North Weſt, with which we directed our courſe to the South South Eaſt, through the ſtrait, and had no land in ſight till ſeven in the evening of the 30th; when the fog Friday 30. clearing away, we ſaw Cape Prince of Wales bearing South by Eaſt, diſtant about ſix leagues; and the iſland St. Diomede South Weſt by Weſt. We now altered our courſe to the Weſt, and at eight made the Eaſt Cape, which, at midnight, bore Weſt by North, diſtant four leagues. In the night we ſteered to the South South Weſt, with a freſh Weſt North Weſterly breeze; and, at four in the morning of the 31ſt, the Eaſt Cape bore North North Eaſt, and the North Saturday 31. Eaſt part of the bay of St. Laurence (where we anchored the laſt year) Weſt by South, its diſtance being four leagues. As we could not have worked up to windward without a greater waſte of time than the object appeared to deſerve, we ran acroſs the bay, regretting much, as we paſſed along, the loſs of this opportunity of paying a ſecond viſit to the Tſchutſki. At noon our latitude, by obſervation, was 65° 6′, and longitude 189°. The South point of the Bay of St. Laurence bore North by Weſt one quarter Weſt, and was diſtant ſeven or eight leagues. In the afternoon the variation was found to be 22° 50′ Eaſt.

Having

1779. July. Having now paſſed Beering's Strait, and taken our final leave of the North Eaſt coaſt of Aſia, it may not be improper, on this occaſion, to ſtate the grounds on which we have ventured to adopt two general concluſions reſpecting its extent, in oppoſition to the opinions of Mr. Muller. The firſt, that the promontory named Eaſt Cape is actually the Eaſternmoſt point of that quarter of the globe; or, in other words, that no part of the continent extends in longitude beyond 190° 22′ Eaſt: the ſecond, that the latitude of the North Eaſternmoſt extremity falls to the Southward of 70° North. With reſpect to the former, if ſuch land exiſt, it muſt neceſſarily be to the North of latitude 69°, where the diſcoveries made in the preſent voyage terminate; and, therefore, the probable direction of the coaſt, beyond this point, is the queſtion I ſhall endeavour, in the firſt place, to inveſtigate.

As the Ruſſian is the only nation that has hitherto navigated theſe ſeas, all our information reſpecting the ſituation of the coaſt to the Northward of Cape North, muſt neceſſarily be derived from the charts and journals of the perſons who have been employed, at various times, in aſcertaining the limits of that empire; and theſe are, for the moſt part, ſo imperfect, ſo confuſed, and contradictory, that it is not eaſy to form any diſtinct idea of their pretended, much leſs to collect the amount of their real diſcoveries. It is on this account, that the extent and form of the peninſula, inhabited by the Tſchutſki, ſtill remains a point on which the Ruſſian geographers are much divided. Mr. Muller, in his map, publiſhed in the year 1754, ſuppoſes this country to extend toward the North Eaſt, to the 75° of latitude, and in longitude 190° Eaſt of Greenwich, and to terminate in a round Cape, which he calls Tſchukotſkoi Noſs.

To

1779. July.

To the Southward of this Cape he conceives the coaſt to form a bay to the Weſtward, bounded, in latitude 67° 18′, by Serdze Kamen, the Northernmoſt point ſeen by Beering in his expedition in the year 1728. The map, publiſhed by the academy of St. Peterſburg, in the year 1776, gives the whole peninſula entirely a new form, placing its North Eaſternmoſt extremity in the latitude 73°, longitude 178° 30′. The Eaſternmoſt point in latitude 65° 30′, longitude 189° 30′. All the other maps we ſaw, both printed and in manuſcript, vary between theſe two, apparently more according to the fancy of the compiler, than on any grounds of more accurate information. The only point in which there is a general coincidence, without any conſiderable variation, is in the poſition of the Eaſt Cape in latitude 66°. The form of the coaſt, both to the South and North of this Cape, in the map of the academy, is exceedingly erroneous, and may be totally diſregarded. In that of Mr. Muller, the coaſt to the Northward bears a conſiderable reſemblance to our ſurvey, as far as the latter extends, except that it does not trend ſufficiently to the Weſtward; receding only about 5° of longitude, between the latitude of 66° and 69°; whereas, in reality, it recedes near ten. Between the latitude of 69° and 74°, he makes the coaſt bend round to the North and North Eaſt, and to form a conſiderable promontory. On what authority, now remains to be examined.

Mr. Coxe, whoſe accurate reſearches into this ſubject, give his opinion great weight, is perſuaded that the extremity of the *Noſs* in queſtion, was never paſſed but by Deſhneff and his party, who ſailed from the river Kovyma in the year 1648, and are ſuppoſed to have got round it into the Anadir. As the account of this expedition, the ſubſtance of which the Reader will find in Mr. Coxe's Account

1779. July. count of Ruſſian Diſcoveries, contains no geographical delineation of the coaſt along which they ſailed, its poſition muſt be conjectured from incidental circumſtances; and from theſe it appears very manifeſt, that the Tſchukotſkoi Noſs of Deſhneff is no other than the promontory called, by Captain Cook, the Eaſt Cape. Speaking of the *Noſs*, he ſays, "One might ſail from the iſthmus to the river Ana-"dir, with a fair wind, in three days and three nights." This exactly coincides with the ſituation of the Eaſt Cape, which is about one hundred and twenty leagues from the mouth of the Anadir; and as there is no other iſthmus to the Northward between that and the latitude of 69°, it is obvious, that, by this deſcription, he muſt intend either the Cape in queſtion, or ſome other to the Southward of it. In another place he ſays, "Overagainſt the iſthmus there "are two iſlands in the ſea, upon which were ſeen people "of the Tſchutſki nation, through whoſe lips were run "pieces of the teeth of the ſea-horſe." This again perfectly agrees with the two iſlands ſituated to the South Eaſt of the Eaſt Cape. We ſaw indeed no inhabitants on them; but it is not at all improbable, that a party of the Americans, from the oppoſite continent, whom this deſcription accurately ſuits, might, at that time, have been accidentally there; and whom it was natural enough for him to miſtake for a tribe of the Tſchutſki *.

Theſe

* From the circumſtance, related in the laſt Volume, that gave name to Sledge Iſland, it appears, that the inhabitants of the adjacent continents viſit occaſionally the ſmall iſlands lying between them, probably for the conveniency of fiſhing, or in purſuit of furs.

It appears alſo from Popoff's depoſition, which I ſhall have occaſion to ſpeak of more particularly hereafter, that the general reſemblance between the people, who are ſeen in

1779. July.

Theſe two circumſtances are of ſo ſtriking and unequivocal a nature, that they appear to me concluſive on the point of the Tſchukotſkoi Noſs, notwithſtanding there are others of a more doubtful kind, which we have from the ſame authority, and which now remain to be conſidered. "To go," ſays Deſhneff in another account, "from the "Kovyma to the Anadir, a great promontory muſt be "doubled, which ſtretches very far into the ſea;" and afterward, "this promontory ſtretches between North and "North Eaſt." It was probably from the expreſſions contained in theſe paſſages, that Mr. Muller was induced to give the country of the Tſchutſki the form we find in his map; but had he been acquainted with the ſituation of the Eaſt Cape, as aſcertained by Captain Cook, and the remarkable coincidence between it and this promontory or iſthmus (for it muſt be obſerved, that Deſhneff appears to be all along ſpeaking of the ſame thing), in the circumſtances already mentioned, I am confident, he would not have thought thoſe expreſſions, merely by themſelves, of ſufficient weight to warrant him in extending the North Eaſtern extremity of Aſia, either ſo far to the North or to the Eaſtward. For, after all, theſe expreſſions are not irreconcileable with the opinion we have adopted, if we ſuppoſe

in theſe iſlands, and the Tſchutſki, was ſufficient to lead Deſhneff into the error of imagining them to be the ſame. "Oppoſite to the Noſs," he ſays, "is an iſland of moderate ſize, without trees, whoſe inhabitants *reſemble, in their exterior, the Tſchutſki, although they are quite another nation*; not numerous indeed, yet ſpeaking their own particular language." Again, "One may go in a baidare from the Noſs to the iſland in half a day: beyond is a great continent, which can be diſcovered from the iſland in ſerene weather. When the weather is good, one may go from the iſland to the continent in a day. *The inhabitants of the continent are ſimilar to the Tſchutſki, excepting that they ſpeak another language.*"

1779. July. Deſhneff to have taken theſe bearings from the ſmall bight which lies to the Weſtward of the Cape.

The depoſition of the Coſſack Popoff, taken at the Anadirſkoi *oſtrog*, in the year 1711, ſeems to have been the next authority on which Mr. Muller has proceeded; and beſide theſe two, I am not acquainted with any other. This Coſſack, together with ſeveral others, was ſent by land to demand tribute from the independent Tſchutſki tribes, who lived about the Noſs. The firſt circumſtance in the account of this journey, that can lead to the ſituation of Tſchukotſkoi Noſs, is its diſtance from Anadirſk; and this is ſtated to be ten weeks journey, with loaded rein-deer; on which account, it is added, their day's journey was but very ſmall. It is impoſſible to conclude much from ſo vague an account; but, as the diſtance between the Eaſt Cape and the *oſtrog* is upward of two hundred leagues in a ſtraight line, and therefore may be ſuppoſed to allow twelve or fifteen miles a day; its ſituation cannot be reckoned incompatible with Popoff's calculation. The next circumſtance mentioned in this depoſition is, that their route lay by the foot of a rock called Matkol, ſituated at the bottom of a great gulf. This gulf Muller ſuppoſes to be the bay he had laid down between latitude 66° and 72°; and accordingly places the rock Matkol in the centre of it; but it appears equally probable, even if we had not ſo many reaſons to doubt the exiſtence of that bay, that it might be ſome part of the gulf of Anadir, which they would undoubtedly touch upon in their road from the *oſtrog* to the Eaſt Cape.

But what ſeems to put this matter beyond all diſpute, and to prove that the Cape viſited by Popoff cannot be to the Northward of 69° latitude, is that part of his depoſition, which I have already quoted, relative to the iſland lying off the

the Noſs, from whence the oppoſite continent might be ſeen. For as the two continents, in latitude 69°, have diverged ſo far as to be more than three hundred miles diſtant, it is highly improbable, that the Aſiatic coaſt ſhould again trend in ſuch a manner to the Eaſtward, as to come nearly within ſight of the coaſt of America. 1779. July.

If theſe arguments ſhould be deemed concluſive againſt the exiſtence of the peninſula of the Tſchutſki, as laid down by Muller, it will follow, that the Eaſt Cape is the Tſchukotſkoi Noſs of the * more early Ruſſian navigators; and, conſequently, that the undeſcribed coaſt, from the latitude of 69° to the mouth of the River Kovyma, muſt uniformly trend more or leſs to the Weſtward. As an additional proof of this, it may be remarked, that the Tſchukotſkoi Noſs is always repreſented as dividing the ſea of Kovyma from that of Anadir, which could not be the caſe, if any conſiderable cape had projected to the North Eaſt in the higher latitudes. Thus, in the depoſitions taken at Anadirſk, it is related, "that oppoſite the Noſs, on both ſides, as well in "the ſea of Kovyma, as in that of Anadir, an iſland is ſaid "to be ſeen at a great diſtance, which the Tſchutſki call a "large country; and ſay, that people dwell there who have "large teeth put in their mouths, that project through their "cheeks." Then follows a deſcription of theſe people and their country, exactly correſponding with our accounts of the oppoſite continent.

The laſt queſtion that ariſes is, to what degree of Northern latitude this coaſt extends, before it trends more directly to

* I mention the more early Ruſſian navigators, becauſe Beering, whom we have alſo followed, and after him all the late Ruſſian geographers, have given this name to the South Eaſt Cape of the peninſula of the Tſchutſki, which was formerly called the Anadirſkoi Noſs.

1779. July. the Weſtward. If the ſituation of the mouth of the Kovyma, both with reſpect to its latitude and longitude, were accurately determined, it would perhaps not be very difficult to form a probable conjecture upon this point. Captain Cook was always ſtrongly of opinion, that the Northern coaſt of Aſia, from the Indigirka Eaſtward, has hitherto been generally laid down more than two degrees to the Northward of its true poſition; and he has, therefore, on the authority of a map that was in his poſſeſſion, and on the information he received at Oonalaſhka, placed the mouth of the river Kovyma, in his chart of the North Weſt coaſt of America, and the North Eaſt coaſt of Aſia, in the latitude of 68°. Should he be right in this conjecture, it is probable for the reaſons that have been already ſtated, that the Aſiatic coaſt does not any where exceed 70° before it trends to the Weſtward; and conſequently, that we were within 1° of its North Eaſtern extremity. For, if the continent be ſuppoſed to ſtretch any where to the Northward of Shelatſkoi Noſs, it is ſcarcely poſſible, that ſo extraordinary a circumſtance ſhould not have been mentioned by the Ruſſian navigators; and we have already ſhewn, that they make mention of no remarkable promontory between the Kovyma and the Anadir, except the Eaſt Cape. Another circumſtance, related by Deſhneff, may, perhaps, be thought a further confirmation of this opinion, namely, that he met with no impediment from ice in navigating round the North Eaſt extremity of Aſia; though he adds, that this ſea is not always ſo free from it; as indeed is manifeſt from the failure of his firſt expedition, and, ſince that, from the unſucceſsful attempts of Shalauroff, and the obſtacles we met with, in two different years, in our preſent voyage.

The continent, left undetermined in our chart, between Cape

Cape North, and the mouth of the Kovyma, is, in longitudinal extent, one hundred and twenty-five leagues. One third, or about forty leagues, of this diſtance, from the Kovyma Eaſtward, was explored in the year 1723, by a *Sinbojarſkoi* of Jakutz, whoſe name was Feodor Amoſſoff; by whom Mr. Muller was informed, that its direction was to the Eaſtward. It is ſaid to have been ſince accurately ſurveyed by Shalauroff, whoſe chart makes it trend to the North Eaſt by Eaſt, as far as the Shelatſkoi Noſs, which he places about forty-three leagues to the Eaſtward of the Kovyma. The ſpace between this Noſs and Cape North, about eighty-two leagues, is therefore the only part of the Ruſſian empire that now remains unaſcertained. 1779. July.

But if the river Kovyma be erroneouſly ſituated with reſpect to its longitude, as well as in its latitude, a ſuppoſition for which probable grounds are not wanting, the extent of the unexplored coaſt will become proportionably diminiſhed. The reaſons which incline me to believe, that the mouth of this river is placed in the Ruſſian charts much too far to the Weſtward, are as follow: Firſt, becauſe the accounts that are given of the navigation of the Frozen Sea from that river, round the North Eaſt point of Aſia, to the gulf of Anadir, do not accord with the ſuppoſed diſtance between thoſe places. Secondly, becauſe the diſtance over land, from the Kovyma to the Anadir, is repreſented by the early Ruſſian travellers as a journey eaſily performed, and of no very extraordinary length. Thirdly, becauſe the coaſt from the Shelatſkoi Noſs of Shalauroff* ſeems to trend directly South Eaſt to the Eaſt Cape. If this be ſo, it will follow, that, as we were probably not more than 1° to the

* See Chart in Coxe's Account of Ruſſian Diſcoveries.

Southward

1779. July. Southward of Shelatſkoi Noſs, only ſixty miles of the Aſiatic coaſt remain unaſcertained.

Had Captain Cook lived to this period of our voyage, and experienced, in a ſecond attempt, the impracticability of a North Eaſt or North Weſt paſſage from the Pacific to the Atlantic Ocean, he would doubtleſs have laid before the Public, in one connected view, an account of the obſtacles which defeated this, the primary object of our expedition, together with his obſervations on a ſubject of ſuch magnitude, and which had engaged the attention, and divided the opinions of philoſophers and navigators, for upward of two hundred years. I am very ſenſible how unequal I am to the taſk of ſupplying this deficiency; but, that the expectations of the reader may not be wholly diſappointed, I muſt beg his candid acceptance of the following obſervations, as well as of thoſe I have already ventured to offer him, relative to the extent of the North Eaſt coaſt of Aſia.

The evidence that has been ſo fully and judiciouſly ſtated in the introduction, amounts to the higheſt degree of probability, that a North Weſt paſſage, from the Atlantic into the Pacific Ocean, cannot exiſt to the Southward of 65° of latitude. If then there exiſts a paſſage, it muſt be either through Baffin's Bay, or round by the North of Greenland, in the Weſtern hemiſphere; or elſe through the Frozen Ocean, to the Northward of Siberia, in the Eaſtern; and on whichever ſide it lies, the navigator muſt neceſſarily paſs through Beering's Strait. The impracticability of penetrating into the Atlantic on either ſide, through this ſtrait, is therefore all that remains to be ſubmitted to the conſideration of the Public.

As far as our experience went, it appears, that the ſea to the North of Beering's ſtrait, is clearer of ice in Auguſt than in

in July, and perhaps in a part of September it may be ſtill more free. But, after the equinox, the days ſhorten ſo faſt, that no farther thaw can be expected; and we cannot rationally allow ſo great an effect to the warm weather in the firſt half of September, as to imagine it capable of diſperſing the ice from the moſt Northern parts of the American coaſt. But admitting this to be poſſible, it muſt at leaſt be granted, that it would be madneſs to attempt to run from the Icy Cape to the known parts of Baffin's Bay (a diſtance of four hundred and twenty leagues), in ſo ſhort a time as that paſſage can be ſuppoſed to continue open. 1779. July.

Upon the Aſiatic ſide, there appears ſtill leſs probability of ſucceſs, both from what came to our own knowledge, with reſpect to the ſtate of the ſea to the Southward of Cape North, and alſo from what we learn from the experience of the * Lieutenants under Beering's direction, and the journal of Shalauroff, in regard to that on the North of Siberia.

The voyage of Deſhneff, if its truth be admitted, proves undoubtedly the poſſibility of paſſing round the North Eaſt point of Aſia; but when the reader reflects, that near a century and a half has elapſed ſince the time of that navigator, during which, in an age of great curioſity and enterprize, no man has yet been able to follow him, he will not entertain very ſanguine expectations of the public advantages that can be derived from it. But let us even ſuppoſe, that in ſome ſingularly favourable ſeaſon a ſhip has found a clear paſſage round the coaſt of Siberia, and is ſafely arrived at the mouth of the Lena, ſtill there remains the Cape of Tai-

* See Gmelin, pages 369. 374.

mura,

1779. July. mura, ſtretching to the 78° of latitude, which the good fortune of no ſingle voyager has hitherto doubled.

It is, however, contended, thas there are ſtrong reaſons for believing, that the ſea is more free from ice, the nearer we approach to the pole; and that all the ice we ſaw in the lower latitudes, was formed in the great rivers of Siberia and America, the breaking up of which had filled the intermediate ſea. But even if that ſuppoſition be true, it is equally ſo, that there can be no acceſs to thoſe open ſeas, unleſs this great maſs of ice is ſo far diſſolved in the ſummer, as to admit of a ſhip's getting through it. If this be the fact, we have taken a wrong time of the year for attempting to find this paſſage, which ſhould have been explored in April and May, before the rivers were broken up. But how many reaſons may be given againſt ſuch a ſuppoſition? Our experience at Saint Peter and Saint Paul enabled us to judge what might be expected farther North; and upon that ground, we had reaſon to doubt, whether the continents might not in winter be even joined by the ice; and this agreed with the ſtories we heard in Kamtſchatka, that on the Siberian coaſt, they go out from the ſhore in winter, upon the ice, to greater diſtances than the breadth of the ſea is, in ſome parts, from one continent to the other.

In the depoſitions referred to above, the following remarkable circumſtance is related. Speaking of the land ſeen from the Tſchukotſkoi Noſs, it is ſaid, "that in ſummer time they ſail in one day to the land in baidares, a ſort of veſſel conſtructed of whale-bone, and covered with ſeal-ſkins; and in winter time, going ſwift with rein-deer, the journey may likewiſe be made in a day." A ſufficient proof,

proof, that the two countries were uſually joined together by the ice. 1779. July.

The account given by Mr. Muller, of one of the expeditions undertaken to diſcover a ſuppoſed iſland in the Frozen Sea, is ſtill more remarkable. " In the year 1714, a new " expedition was prepared from Jakutzk, for the ſame " place, under the command of Alexei Markoff, who was " to ſail from the mouth of the Jana; and if the *Schitiki* " were not fit for ſea voyages, he was to conſtruct, at a pro- " per place, veſſels fit for proſecuting the diſcoveries with- " out danger.

" On his arrival at Uſt-janſkoe Simovie, the port at which " he was to embark, he ſent an account, dated February 2, " 1715, to the Chancery of Jakutzk, mentioning that it " was impoſſible to navigate the ſea, as it was continually " frozen, both in ſummer and winter; and that, conſe- " quently, the intended expedition was no otherwiſe to be " carried on, but with ſledges drawn by dogs. In this man- " ner he accordingly ſet out, with nine perſons, on the " 10th of March the ſame year, and returned on the 3d of " April, to Uſt-janſkoe Simovie. The account of his jour- " ney is as follows: that he went ſeven days, as faſt as " his dogs could draw him (which, in good ways and wea- " ther, is eighty or a hundred werſts in a day) directly to- " ward the North, upon the ice, without diſcovering any " iſland: that it had not been poſſible for him to proceed " any farther, the ice riſing there in the ſea like mountains: " that he had climbed to the top of ſome of them, whence " he was able to ſee to a great diſtance round about him, " but could diſcern no appearance of land: and that, at laſt, " wanting food for his dogs, many of them died, which " obliged him to return."

1779. July.

Beſides theſe arguments, which proceed upon an admiſſion of the hypotheſis, that the ice in thoſe ſeas comes from the rivers, there are others which give great room to ſuſpect the truth of the hypotheſis itſelf. Captain Cook, whoſe opinion reſpecting the formation of ice had formerly coincided with that of the theoriſts we are now controverting, found abundant reaſon, in the preſent voyage, for changing his ſentiments. We found the coaſt of each continent to be low, the ſoundings gradually decreaſing toward them, and a ſtriking reſemblance between the two; which, together with the deſcription Mr. Hearne gives of the coppermine river, afford reaſon to conjecture, that whatever rivers may empty themſelves into the Frozen Sea, from the American continent, are of the ſame nature with thoſe on the Aſiatic ſide; which are repreſented to be ſo ſhallow at the entrance, as to admit only ſmall veſſels; whereas the ice we have ſeen, riſes above the level of the ſea to a height equal to the depth of thoſe rivers; ſo that its entire height muſt be at leaſt ten times greater.

The curious reader will alſo, in this place, be led naturally to reflect on another circumſtance, which appears very incompatible with the opinion of thoſe who imagine land to be neceſſary for the formation of ice; I mean the different ſtate of the ſea about Spitſbergen, and to the North of Beering's Strait. It is incumbent on them to explain how it comes to paſs, that in the former quarter, and in the vicinity of much known land, the navigator annually penetrates to near 80° North latitude; whereas, on the other ſide, his utmoſt efforts have not been able to carry him beyond 71°; where, moreover, the continents diverge nearly Eaſt and Weſt, and where there is no land yet known to exiſt near the pole. For the farther ſatisfaction of the reader on this point,

point, I ſhall beg leave to refer him to *Obſervations made during a voyage round the world*, by Dr. Forſter, where he will find the queſtion of the formation of ice, fully and ſatisfactorily diſcuſſed, and the probability of open polar ſeas diſproved by a variety of powerful arguments. 1779. July.

I ſhall conclude theſe remarks with a ſhort comparative view of the progreſs we made to the Northward, at the two different ſeaſons we were engaged in that purſuit, together with a few general obſervations relative to the ſea, and the coaſt of the two continents, which lie to the North of Beering's Strait.

It may be obſerved, that in the year 1778, we did not meet with the ice, till we advanced to the latitude of 70°, on Auguſt 17th; and that then we found it in compact bodies, extending as far as the eye could reach, and of which a part or the whole was moveable, ſince, by its drifting down upon us, we narrowly eſcaped being hemmed in between it and the land. After experiencing both how fruitleſs and dangerous it would be to attempt to penetrate farther North, between the ice and the land, we ſtood over toward the Aſiatic ſide, between the latitude 69° and 70°, frequently encountering, in this tract, large and extenſive fields of ice; and though, by reaſon of the fogs, and thickneſs of the weather, we were not able abſolutely and entirely to trace a connected line of it acroſs, yet we were ſure to meet with it before we reached the latitude of 70°, whenever we attempted to ſtand to the Northward. On the 26th of Auguſt, in latitude 69¾°, and longitude 184°, we were obſtructed by it in ſuch quantities, as made it impoſſible for us to paſs either to the North or Weſt, and obliged us to run along the edge of it to the South South Weſt, till we ſaw land, which we afterward found to be the coaſt of Aſia. With the ſea-

1779. July. ſon thus far advanced, the weather ſetting in with ſnow and ſleet, and other ſigns of approaching winter, we abandoned our enterprize for that time.

In this ſecond attempt, we could do little more than confirm the obſervations we had made in the firſt; for we were never able to approach the continent of Aſia higher than the latitude of 67°, nor that of America in any parts, excepting a few leagues between the latitude of 68° and 68° 20′, that were not ſeen the laſt year. We were now obſtructed by ice 3° lower, and our endeavours to puſh farther to the Northward, were principally confined to the mid-ſpace between the two coaſts. We penetrated near 3° farther on the American ſide than on the Aſiatic, meeting with the ice both years ſooner, and in greater quantities, on the latter coaſt. As we advanced North, we ſtill found the ice more compact and ſolid; yet as, in our different traverſes from ſide to ſide, we paſſed over ſpaces which had before been covered with it, we conjectured, that moſt of what we ſaw was moveable. Its height, on a medium, we took to be from eight to ten feet, and that of the higheſt to have been ſixteen or eighteen. We again tried the currents twice, and found them unequal, but never to exceed one mile an hour. By comparing the reckoning with the obſervations, we alſo found the current to ſet different ways, yet more from the South Weſt than any other quarter; but whatever their direction might be, their effect was ſo trifling, that no concluſions, reſpecting the exiſtence of any paſſage to the Northward, could be drawn from them. We found the month of July to be infinitely colder than that of Auguſt. The thermometer in July was once at 28°, and very commonly at 30°; whereas the laſt year, in Auguſt, it was very rare to have it ſo low as the freezing point. In both ſeaſons, we had ſome high

high winds, all of which came from the South Weſt. We were ſubject to fogs, whenever the wind was moderate, from whatever quarter, but they attended Southerly winds more conſtantly than contrary ones. 1779. July.

The ſtraits, between the two continents, at their neareſt approach, in latitude 66°, were aſcertained to be thirteen leagues, beyond which they diverge to North Eaſt by Eaſt and Weſt North Weſt; and in latitude 69°, they become 14° of longitude, or about one hundred leagues, aſunder. A great ſimilarity is obſervable in the appearance of the two countries, to the Northward of the ſtraits. Both are deſtitute of wood. The ſhores are low, with mountains riſing to a great height farther up the country. The depth of water in the mid-way between them, was twenty-nine and thirty fathoms, decreaſing gradually as we approached either continent, with the difference of being ſomewhat ſhoaler on the American than on the Aſiatic coaſt, at the ſame diſtance from land. The bottom, in the middle, was a ſoft ſlimy mud; and on drawing near to either ſhore, a brown ſand, intermixed with ſmall fragments of bones, and a few ſhells. We obſerved but little tide or current; what there was, came from the Weſtward.

But it is now time to reſume the narrative of our voyage, which was broken off on the 31ſt of July, on which day at noon we had advanced eighteen leagues to the Southward of the Eaſt Cape.

Auguſt.
Sunday 1. We had light airs from the South Weſt, till noon of the 1ſt of Auguſt, at which time our latitude, by obſervation, was 64° 23′, longitude 189° 15′; the coaſt of Aſia extended from North Weſt by Weſt to Weſt half South, diſtant about twelve leagues; and the land to the Eaſtward of Saint Laurence bore South half Weſt. On the 2d, the weather be- Monday 2.
coming

1779. August. coming clear, we ſaw the ſame land at noon, bearing from Weſt South Weſt half Weſt to South Eaſt, making in a number of high hummocks, which had the appearance of ſeparate iſlands; the latitude, by obſervation, was 64° 3′, longitude 189° 28′, and depth of water ſeventeen fathoms. We did not approach this land ſufficiently near to determine, whether it was one iſland, or compoſed of a cluſter together. Its Weſternmoſt part we paſſed July 3d, in the evening, and then ſuppoſed to be the iſland of Saint Laurence; the Eaſternmoſt we ran cloſe by in September laſt year, and this we named Clerke's Iſland, and found it to conſiſt of a number of high cliffs, joined together by very low land. Though we miſtook, the laſt year, thoſe cliffs for ſeparate iſlands, till we approached very near the ſhore, I ſhould ſtill conjecture, that the iſland Saint Laurence was diſtinct from Clerke's Iſland, ſince there appeared a conſiderable ſpace between them, where we could not perceive the ſmalleſt riſing of ground. In the afternoon, we alſo ſaw what bore the appearance of a ſmall iſland, to the North Eaſt of the land which was ſeen at noon, and which, from the hazineſs of the weather, we had only ſight of once. We eſtimated its diſtance to be nineteen leagues from the iſland of Saint Laurence, in a North Eaſt by Eaſt half Eaſt

Tueſday 3. direction. On the 3d, we had light variable winds, and directed our courſe round the North Weſt point of the iſland

Wedneſ. 4. of Saint Laurence. On the 4th, at noon, our latitude, by account, was 64° 8′, longitude 188°; the Iſland St. Laurence bearing South one quarter Eaſt, diſtant ſeven leagues. In the afternoon, a freſh breeze ſpringing up from the Eaſt, we ſteered to the South South Weſt, and ſoon loſt ſight

Saturday 7. of St. Laurence. On the 7th, at noon, the latitude, by obſervation, was 59° 38′, longitude 183°. In the afternoon, it fell

fell calm, and we got a great number of cod in ſeventy-eight fathoms of water. The variation was found to be 19° East. From this time to the 17th, we were making the beſt of our way to the South, without any occurrence worth remarking, except that the wind coming from the Weſtern quarter, forced us farther to the Eaſtward than we wiſhed, as it was our intention to make Beering's iſland. 1779. Auguſt.

On the 17th, at half paſt four in the morning, we ſaw land to the North Weſt, which we could not approach, the wind blowing from that quarter. At noon, the latitude, by obſervation, was 53° 49′, longitude 168° 5′, and variation 10° East. The land in ſight bore North by Weſt, twelve or fourteen leagues diſtant. This land we take to be the iſland Mednoi, laid down, in the Ruſſian charts, to the South East of Beering's Iſland. It is high land, and appeared clear of ſnow. We place it in the latitude 54° 28′, longitude 167° 52′. We got no ſoundings with one hundred and fifty fathoms of line. Tueſday 17.

Captain Clerke was now no longer able to get out of his bed; he therefore deſired, that the officers would receive their orders from me, and directed that we ſhould proceed, with all ſpeed, to Awatſka Bay. The wind continuing Weſterly, we ſtood on to the South, till early on the morning of the 19th, when, after a few hours rain, it blew from the Eaſtward, and freſhened to a ſtrong gale. We accordingly made the moſt of it whilſt it laſted, by ſtanding to the Weſtward, under all the ſail we could carry. Thurſday 19. Friday 20.

On the 20th, the wind ſhifting to the South Weſt, our courſe was to the Weſt North Weſt. At noon, the latitude, by obſervation, was 53° 7′, longitude 162° 49′. On the 21ſt, at half paſt five in the morning, we ſaw a very high peaked mountain on the coaſt of Kamtſchatka, called Cheepoonſkoi Mountain, from its Saturday 21.

1779. Auguſt. its lying behind the Noſs, bearing North Weſt by North, twenty-five or thirty leagues diſtant. At noon, the coaſt extended from North by Eaſt to Weſt, with a very great hazineſs upon it, and diſtant about twelve leagues. We had light airs the remaining part of this and the following day, and got no ſoundings with one hundred and forty fathoms of line.

Sunday 22. On the 22d of Auguſt, 1779, at nine o'clock in the morning, departed this life Captain Charles Clerke, in the thirty-eighth year of his age. He died of a conſumption, which had evidently commenced before he left England, and of which he had lingered during the whole voyage. His very gradual decay had long made him a melancholy object to his friends; yet the equanimity with which he bore it, the conſtant flow of good ſpirits, which continued to the laſt hour, and a cheerful reſignation to his fate, afforded them ſome conſolation. It was impoſſible not to feel a more than common degree of compaſſion for a perſon, whoſe life had been a continued ſcene of thoſe difficulties and hardſhips, to which a ſeaman's occupation is ſubject, and under which he at laſt ſunk. He was brought up to the Navy from his earlieſt youth, and had been in ſeveral actions during the war which began in 1756, particularly in that between the Bellona and Courageux, where being ſtationed in the mizen-top, he was carried overboard with the maſt, but was taken up without having received any hurt. He was Midſhipman in the Dolphin, commanded by Commodore Byron, on her firſt voyage round the world, and afterward ſerved on the American ſtation. In 1768, he made his ſecond voyage round the world, in the Endeavour, as Maſter's Mate, and by the promotion, which took place during the expedition, he returned a Lieutenant. His third voyage round the world

world was in the Reſolution, of which he was appointed the Second Lieutenant: and ſoon after his return, in 1775, he was promoted to the rank of Maſter and Commander. When the preſent expedition was ordered to be fitted out, he was appointed to the Diſcovery, to accompany Captain Cook; and, by the death of the latter, ſucceeded, as has been already mentioned, to the chief command. 1779. Auguſt.

It would be doing his memory extreme injuſtice not to ſay, that during the ſhort time the expedition was under his direction, he was moſt zealous and anxious for its ſucceſs. His health, about the time the principal command devolved upon him, began to decline very rapidly, and was every way unequal to encounter the rigours of a high Northern climate. But the vigour and activity of his mind had, in no ſhape, ſuffered by the decay of his body: and though he knew, that by delaying his return to a warmer climate, he was giving up the only chance that remained for his recovery, yet, careful and jealous to the laſt degree, that a regard to his own ſituation ſhould never bias his judgment to the prejudice of the ſervice, he perſevered in the ſearch of a paſſage, till it was the opinion of every officer in both ſhips, that it was impracticable, and that any farther attempts would not only be fruitleſs, but dangerous.

CHAP. V.

Return to the Harbour of Saint Peter and Saint Paul.—Promotion of Officers.—Funeral of Captain Clerke.—Damages of the Diſcovery repaired.—Various other Occupations of the Ships Crews.—Letters from the Commander.—Supply of Flour and Naval Stores from a Ruſſian Galliot.—Account of an Exile.—Bear-hunting and Fiſhing Parties.—Diſgrace of the Serjeant.—Celebration of the King's Coronation Day, and Viſit from the Commander.—The Serjeant reinſtated.—A Ruſſian Soldier promoted at our Requeſt.—Remarks on the Diſcipline of the Ruſſian Army.—Church at Paratounca.—Method of Bear-hunting.—Farther Account of the Bears and Kamtſchadales.—Inſcription to the Memory of Captain Clerke.—Supply of Cattle.—Entertainments on the Empreſs's Name Day.—Preſent from the Commander.—Attempt of a Marine to deſert.—Work out of the Bay.—Nautical and Geographical Deſcription of Awatſka Bay.—Aſtronomical Tables, and Obſervations.

1779. Auguſt. Sunday 22. I SENT Mr. Williamſon to acquaint Captain Gore with the death of Captain Clerke, and received a letter from him, ordering me to uſe all my endeavours to keep in company with the Diſcovery; and, in caſe of a ſeparation, to make the beſt of my way to the harbour of St. Peter and St.

St. Paul. At noon, we were in latitude 53° 8′ North, longitude 160° 40′ Eaſt, with Cheepoonſkoi Noſs bearing Weſt. We had light airs in the afternoon, which laſted through the forenoon of the 23d. At noon, a freſh breeze ſpringing up from the Eaſtward, we ſtood in for the entrance of Awatſka Bay; and at ſix in the evening, ſaw it bearing Weſt North Weſt half Weſt, diſtant five leagues. At eight, the light-houſe, in which we now found a good light, bore North Weſt by Weſt, three miles diſtant. The wind about this time died away; but the tide being in our favour, we ſent the boats ahead, and towed beyond the narrow parts of the entrance; and, at one o'clock in the morning of the 24th, the ebb tide ſetting againſt us, we dropped anchor. At nine, we weighed, and turned up the bay with light airs, and the boats ſtill ahead till one; when, by the help of a freſh breeze, we anchored, before three in the afternoon, in the harbour of St. Peter and St. Paul, with our enſign half ſtaff up, on account of our carrying the body of our late Captain; and were ſoon after followed by the Diſcovery.

1779. Auguſt. Monday 23. Tueſday 24.

We had no ſooner anchored, than our old friend, the Serjeant, who was ſtill the Commander of the place, came on board with a preſent of berries, intended for our poor deceaſed Captain. He was exceedingly affected when we told him of his death, and ſhewed him the coffin that contained his body. And as it was Captain Clerke's particular requeſt to be buried on ſhore, and, if poſſible, in the church of Paratounca, we took the preſent opportunity of explaining this matter to the Serjeant, and conſulting with him about the proper ſteps to be taken on the occaſion. In the courſe of our converſation, which, for want of an interpreter, was carried on but imperfectly, we learned that Profeſ-

1779. Auguſt.

ſor de L'Iſle, and ſeveral Ruſſian gentlemen, who died here, had been buried in the ground near the barracks at the *oſtrog* of St. Peter and St. Paul's; and that this place would be preferable to Paratounca, as the church was to be removed thither the next year. It was therefore determined, that we ſhould wait for the arrival of the Prieſt of Paratounca, whom the Serjeant adviſed us to ſend for, as the only perſon that could ſatisfy our inquiries on this ſubject. The Serjeant having, at the ſame time, ſignified his intentions of ſending off an expreſs to the Commander at Bolcheretſk, to acquaint him with our arrival, Captain Gore availed himſelf of that occaſion of writing him a letter, in which he requeſted that ſixteen head of black cattle might be ſent with all poſſible expedition. And becauſe the Commander did not underſtand any language except his own, the nature of our requeſt was made known to the Serjeant, who readily undertook to ſend, along with our letter, an explanation of its contents.

We could not help remarking, that, although the country was much improved in its appearance ſince we were laſt here, the Ruſſians looked, if poſſible, worſe now than they did then. It is to be owned, they obſerved, that this was alſo the caſe with us; and, as neither party ſeemed to like to be told of their bad looks, we found mutual conſolation in throwing the blame upon the country, whoſe green and lively complexion, we agreed, caſt a deadneſs and ſallowneſs upon our own.

The eruption of the *volcano*, which was ſo violent when we ſailed out of the bay, we found had done no damage here, notwithſtanding ſtones had fallen at the *oſtrog*, of the ſize of a gooſe's egg. This was all the news we had to inquire after, and all they had to tell; excepting that of the arrival

arrival of Sopoſnikoff from Oonalaſhka, who took charge of the pacquet Captain Cook had ſent to the Admiralty, and which, it gave us much ſatisfaction to find, had been forwarded. 1779. Auguſt.

In the morning of the 25th, Captain Gore made out the new commiſſions, in conſequence of Captain Clerke's death; appointing himſelf to the command of the Reſolution, and me to the command of the Diſcovery; and Mr. Lanyan, Maſter's Mate of the Reſolution, who had ſerved in that capacity on board the Adventure in the former voyage, was promoted to the vacant Lieutenancy. Theſe promotions produced the following farther arrangements: Lieutenants Burney and Rickman were removed from the Diſcovery, to be Firſt and Second Lieutenants of the Reſolution; and Lieutenant Williamſon was appointed Firſt Lieutenant of the Diſcovery. Captain Gore alſo permitted me to take into the Diſcovery, four Midſhipmen, who had made themſelves uſeful to me in aſtronomical calculations, and whoſe aſſiſtance was now particularly neceſſary, as we had no *ephemeris* for the preſent year. And, that aſtronomical obſervations might continue to be made in both ſhips, Mr. Bayly took my place in the Reſolution. The ſame day we were viſited by the Pope Romanoff Vereſhagen, the worthy Prieſt of Paratounca. He expreſſed his ſorrow at the death of Captain Clerke in a manner that did honour to his feelings, and confirmed the account given by the Serjeant, reſpecting the intended removal of the church to the harbour; adding, that the timber was actually preparing, but leaving the choice of either place entirely to Captain Gore. Wedneſ. 25.

The Diſcovery, as has been mentioned, had ſuffered great damage from the ice, particularly on the 23d day of July; and

1779. August. and having, ever ſince, been exceedingly leaky, it was imagined that ſome of her timbers had ſtarted. Captain Gore therefore ſent the carpenters of the Reſolution to aſſiſt our own in repairing her; and accordingly, the fore-hold being cleared, to lighten her forward, they were ſet to work, to rip the damaged ſheathing from the larboard bow. This operation diſcovered, that three feet of the third ſtrake, under the wale, were ſtaved, and the timbers within ſtarted. A tent was next erected, for the accommodation of ſuch of our people as were employed on ſhore; and a party were ſent a mile into the country, to the Northward of the harbour, to fell timber. The obſervatories were erected at the Weſt end of the village, near a tent, in which Captain Gore and myſelf took up our abode.

Thurſday 26. The farther we proceeded in removing the ſheathing, the more we diſcovered of the decayed ſtate of the ſhip's hull. The next morning, eight feet of a plank in the wale were found to be ſo exceedingly rotten, as to make it neceſſary to ſhift it. This left us for ſome time at a ſtand, as nothing was to be found, in either ſhip, wherewith to replace it, unleſs we choſe to cut up a top-maſt; an expedient not to be had recourſe to, till all others failed. The carpenters were therefore ſent on ſhore in the afternoon, in ſearch of a tree big enough for the purpoſe. Luckily they found a birch, which I believe was the only one of ſufficient ſize in the whole neighbourhood of the bay, and which had been ſawed down by us when we were laſt here; ſo that it had the advantage of having lain ſome time to ſeaſon. This was ſhaped on the ſpot, and brought on board the next morning.

As the ſeaſon was now ſo far advanced, I was fearful leſt any delay or hindrance ſhould ariſe, on our parts, to Captain Gore's

Gore's farther views of diſcovery, and therefore gave orders that no more ſheathing ſhould be ripped off, than was abſolutely neceſſary for repairing the damages ſuſtained by the ice. This I did, being apprehenſive of their meeting with more decayed planks, which, I judged, had much better remain in that ſtate, than be filled up with green birch, upon a ſuppoſition that ſuch was to be had. All hands were, at preſent, buſily employed in ſeparate duties, that every thing might be in readineſs for ſea, againſt the time our carpenters ſhould have finiſhed their work. We ſet apart four men to haul the ſeine for ſalmon, which were caught in great abundance, and found to be of an excellent quality. After ſupplying the immediate wants of both ſhips, we ſalted down near a hogſhead a day. The invalids, who were four in number, were employed in gathering greens, and in cooking for the parties on ſhore. Our powder was alſo landed, in order to be dried; and the ſea-horſe blubber, with which both ſhips, in our paſſage to the North (as has been before related), had ſtored themſelves, was now boiled down for oil, which was become a neceſſary article, our candles having long ſince been expended. The cooper was fully engaged in his department: and in this manner were both ſhips companies employed in their ſeveral occupations, till Saturday afternoon, which was given up to all our men, except the carpenters, for the purpoſe of waſhing their linen, and getting their clothes in ſome little order, that they might make a decent appearance on Sunday.

1779. Auguſt.

Saturday 28.

In the afternoon of that day, we paid the laſt offices to Captain Clerke. The officers and men of both ſhips walked in proceſſion to the grave, whilſt the ſhips fired minute-guns; and the ſervice being ended, the marines fired three vollies.

Sunday 29.

1779. Auguſt. vollies. He was interred under a tree, which ſtands on riſing ground, in the valley to the North ſide of the harbour, where the hoſpital and ſtore-houſes are ſituated; Captain Gore having judged this ſituation moſt agreeable to the laſt wiſhes of the deceaſed, for the reaſons above-mentioned; and the Prieſt of Paratounca having pointed out a ſpot for his grave, which, he ſaid, would be, as near as he could gueſs, in the centre of the new church. This reverend Paſtor walked in the proceſſion, along with the gentleman who read the ſervice; and all the Ruſſians in the garriſon were aſſembled, and attended with great reſpect and ſolemnity.

Monday 30. On the 30th, the different parties returned to their reſpective employments, as mentioned in the courſe of the preceding week; and on the 2d of September, the carpenters having ſhifted the rotten and damaged planks, and repaired and caulked the ſheathing of the larboard bow, proceeded to rip off the ſheathing that had been injured by the ice, from the ſtarboard ſide. Here, again, they diſcovered four feet of a plank, in the third ſtrake under the wale, ſo ſhaken, as to make it neceſſary to be replaced. This was

September. Thurſday 2.

Friday 3. accordingly done, and the ſheathing repaired on the 3d. In the afternoon of the ſame day, we got on board ſome ballaſt, unhung the rudder, and ſent it on ſhore, the lead of the pintles being found entirely worn away, and a great part of the ſheathing rubbed off. As the carpenters of the Reſolution were not yet wanted, we got this ſet to rights

Saturday 4. the next day, but finding the rudder out of all proportion heavy, even heavier than that of the Reſolution, we let it remain on ſhore, in order to dry and lighten.

The ſame day, an enſign arrived from Bolcheretſk with a letter from the Commander to Captain Gore, which we put

put into the Serjeant's hands, and, by his aſſiſtance, were made to underſtand, that orders had been given about the cattle; and that they might be expected here in a few days; and, moreover, that Captain Shmaleff, the preſent Commander, would himſelf pay us a viſit immediately on the arrival of a ſloop which was daily expected from Okotzk. The young officer, who brought the letter, was the ſon of the Captain Lieutenant Synd, who commanded an expedition on diſcovery, between Aſia and America, eleven years ago, and reſided at this time at Okotzk *. He informed us, that he was ſent to receive our directions, and to take care to get us ſupplied with whatever our ſervice might require; and that he ſhould remain with us, till the Commander was himſelf able to leave Bolcheretſk; after which he was to return, that the garriſon there might not be left without an officer. 1779. September.

On the 5th, the parties that were on ſhore returned on board, and were employed in ſcrubbing the ſhip's bot- Sunday 5.

* See all that is known of his voyage, and a Chart of his diſcoveries, in Mr. Coxe's *Account of Ruſſian Diſcoveries between Aſia and America.* We were not able to learn, from the Ruſſians in Kamtſchatka, a more perfect account of Synd than we now find is given by Mr. Coxe; and yet they ſeemed diſpoſed to communicate all that they really knew. Major Behm could only inform us, in general, that the expedition had miſcarried as to its object, and that the commander had fallen under much blame. It appeared evidently, that he had been on the coaſt of America to the Southward of Cape Prince of Wales, between the latitude of 64° and 65°; and it is moſt probable, that his having got too far to the Northward to meet with ſea-otters, which the Ruſſians, in all their attempts at diſcoveries, ſeem to have principally in view, and his returning without having made any that promiſed commercial advantages, was the cauſe of his diſgrace, and of the great contempt with which the Ruſſians always ſpoke of this officer's voyage.

The cluſter of iſlands, placed in Synd's chart, between the latitude of 61° and 65°, is undoubtedly the ſame with the iſland, called, by Beering, St. Laurence's, and thoſe we named Clerke's, Anderſon's, and King's Iſlands; but their proportionate ſize, and relative ſituation, are exceedingly erroneous.

1779. September. tom, and getting in eight tons of ſhingle ballaſt. We alſo got up two of our guns, that had been ſtowed in the fore-hold, and mounted them on the deck, being now about to viſit nations, our reception amongſt whom might a good deal depend on the reſpectability of our appearance.

Wedneſ. 8. The Reſolution hauled on ſhore on the 8th, to repair ſome damages, which ſhe had alſo received among the ice, in her cut-water; and our carpenters, in their turn, were ſent to her aſſiſtance.

About this time we began to brew a ſtrong decoction of a ſpecies of dwarf-pine that grows here in great abundance, thinking that it might hereafter be uſeful in making beer, and that we ſhould probably be able to procure ſugar or melaſſes to ferment with it at Canton. At all events, I was ſure it would be ſerviceable as a medicine for the ſcurvy; and was more particularly deſirous of ſupplying myſelf with as much of it as I could procure, becauſe moſt of the preventatives we had brought out, were either uſed, or ſpoiled by keeping. By the time we had prepared a hogſhead of it, the ſhip's copper was diſcovered to be very thin, and cracked in many places. This obliged me to deſiſt, and to give orders, that it ſhould be uſed as ſparingly, for the future, as poſſible. It might, perhaps, be an uſeful precaution for thoſe who may hereafter be engaged in long voyages of this kind, either to provide themſelves with a ſpare copper, or to ſee that the copper uſually furniſhed be of the ſtrongeſt kind. The various extra-ſervices, in which it will be found neceſſary to employ them, and eſpecially the important one of making antiſcorbutic decoctions, ſeem abſolutely to require ſome ſuch proviſion; and I ſhould rather recommend the former, on account of the

the additional quantity of fuel that would be conſumed in heating thick coppers. 1779. September.

In the morning of the 10th, the boats from both ſhips were ſent to tow into the harbour a Ruſſian galliot from Okotzk. She had been thirty-five days on her paſſage, and had been ſeen from the light-houſe a fortnight ago, beating up toward the mouth of the bay. At that time, the crew had ſent their only boat on ſhore for water, of which they now began to be in great want; and the wind freſhening, the boat was loſt on its return; and the galliot, being driven out to ſea again, had ſuffered exceedingly. Friday 10.

There were fifty ſoldiers in her, with their wives and children; and ſeveral other paſſengers, beſides the crew, which conſiſted of twenty-five; ſo that they had upward of an hundred ſouls on board. A great number for a veſſel of eighty tons; and that was alſo heavy laden with ſtores and proviſions. Both this galliot, and the ſloop we ſaw here in May, are built like the Dutch doggers. Soon after ſhe had come to anchor, we received a viſit from a *Put-parouchick*, or Sub-lieutenant, who was a paſſenger in the galliot, and ſent to take the command of this place. Part of the ſoldiers, we underſtood, were alſo deſigned to reinforce the garriſon; and two pieces of ſmall cannon were landed, as an additional defence to the town. It ſhould ſeem, from theſe circumſtances, that our viſit here had drawn the attention of the Ruſſian Commanders in Siberia, to the defenceleſs ſituation of the place; and I was told by the honeſt Serjeant, with many ſignificant ſhrugs, that, as we had found our way into it, other nations might do the ſame, ſome of whom might not be altogether ſo welcome.

Next morning the Reſolution hauled off from the ſhore, having Saturday 11.

1779. September. having repaired the damages ſhe had ſuſtained by the ice; and, in the courſe of the day, we got from the galliot a ſmall quantity of pitch, tar, cordage, and twine; canvaſs was the only thing we aſked for, with which their ſcanty ſtore did not put it into their power to ſupply us. We alſo received from her an hundred and forty ſkins of flour, amounting to 13,782 pounds Engliſh, after deducting five pounds for the weight of each bag.

We had a conſtant courſe of dry weather till this day, when there came on a heavy rain, accompanied with ſtrong ſqualls of wind, which obliged us to ſtrike our yards and topmaſts.

Sunday 12. The 12th, being Sunday, was kept as a day of reſt; but the weather unfortunately continuing foul, our men could not derive the advantage from it we wiſhed, by gathering the berries that grew in great quantities and varieties on the coaſt; and taking other paſtime on ſhore. The ſame day, Enſign Synd left us to return to Bolcheretſk with the remainder of the ſoldiers that came in the galliot. He had been our conſtant gueſt during his ſtay. Indeed, we could not but conſider him, on his father's account, as, in ſome meaſure, belonging to us, and entitled, as one of the family of diſcoverers, to a ſhare in our affections.

We had hitherto admitted the Serjeant to our tables, in conſideration of his being Commander of the place: and, moreover, becauſe he was a quick, ſenſible man, and comprehended, better than any other, the few Ruſſian words we had learned. Enſign Synd had very politely ſuffered him to enjoy the ſame privileges during his ſtay; but, on the arrival of the new Commander from Okotzk, the Serjeant, for ſome cauſe or other, which we could not learn, fell into diſgrace, and was no longer ſuffered to ſit down in the company

pany of his own officers. It was in vain to think of making any attempt to obtain an indulgence, which, though it would have been highly agreeable to us, was doubtleſs incompatible with their diſcipline. 1779. September.

On Wedneſday we had finiſhed the ſtowage of the holds; got on board all our wood and water; and were ready to put to ſea at a day's notice. It is however neceſſary to obſerve, that though every thing was in this degree of readineſs on board, the cattle were not yet arrived from Verchnei; and as freſh proviſions were the moſt important article of our wants, and in a great meaſure neceſſary for the health of the men, we could not think of taking our departure without them. We therefore thought this a favourable opportunity (eſpecially as there was an appearance of fine weather) of taking ſome amuſement on ſhore, and acquiring a little knowledge of the country. Accordingly, Captain Gore propoſed a party of bear-hunting, which we all very readily came into. Wedneſ. 15.

We did not ſet out on this expedition till Friday the 17th, in order to give a day's reſt to the Hoſpodin Ivaſkin, a new acquaintance, that was to be of our party, and who came down here on Wedneſday. This gentleman, who, we underſtood, uſually reſides at Verchnei, had been deſired by Major Behm to attend us on our return to the harbour, in order to be our interpreter; and the accounts we had heard of him, before his arrival, had excited in us a great curioſity to ſee him. Friday 17.

He is of a conſiderable family in Ruſſia. His father was a General in the Empreſs's ſervice; and he himſelf, after having received his education partly in France, and partly in Germany, had been page to the Empreſs Elizabeth, and an Enſign in her guards. At the age of ſixteen he was

knowted,

1779. September.

knowted, had his noſe ſlit, and was baniſhed firſt to Siberia and afterward to Kamtſchatka, where he had now lived thirty-one years. He was a very tall thin man, with a face all over furrowed with deep wrinkles; and bore, in his whole figure, the ſtrongeſt marks of old age, though he had ſcarcely reached his fifty-fourth year.

To our very great diſappointment, he had ſo totally forgotten both his German and French, as not to be able to ſpeak a ſentence, nor readily to underſtand what was ſaid to him, in either of theſe languages. We found ourſelves thus unfortunately deprived of what we flattered ourſelves would have turned out a favourable opportunity of getting farther information relative to this country. We had alſo promiſed ourſelves much pleaſure from the hiſtory of this extraordinary man, which he probably would have been induced to relate to ſtrangers, who might perhaps be of ſome little ſervice to him, but who could have no inducement to take advantage, from any thing he might ſay, to do him an injury. No one here knew the cauſe of his baniſhment; but they took it for granted, that it muſt have been for ſomething very atrocious; particularly, as two or three Commanders of Kamtſchatka have endeavoured to get him recalled, ſince the preſent Empreſs's reign; but, far from ſucceeding in this, they have not been even able to get the place of his baniſhment changed. He told us, that, for twenty years, he had not taſted bread, nor had been allowed ſubſiſtence of any kind whatſoever; but that, during this period, he had lived among the Kamtſchadales, on what his own activity and toil in the chace had furniſhed. That afterward he had a ſmall penſion granted; and that, ſince Major Behm came to the command, his ſituation had been infinitely mended. The notice that worthy man had taken

of

of him, and his having often invited him to become his gueſt, had been the occaſion of others following his example; beſides which, he had been the means of getting his penſion increaſed to one hundred roubles a year; which is the common pay of an Enſign in all parts of the Empreſs's dominions, except in this province, where the pay of all the officers is double. Major Behm told us, that he had obtained permiſſion to take him to Okotzk, which was to be the place of his reſidence in future; but that he ſhould leave him behind for the preſent, on an idea, that he might, on our return to the bay, be uſeful to us as an interpreter. 1779. September.

Having given orders to the Firſt Lieutenants of both ſhips, to let the rigging have ſuch a repair as the ſupply of ſtores, we had lately received, would permit, we ſet out on our hunting party, under the direction of the corporal of the Kamtſchadales, intending, before we began to look for our game, to proceed ſtraight to the head of Behm's Harbour. It is an inlet on the Weſt ſide of the bay (which we had named after that officer, from its being a favourite place of his, and having been ſurveyed by himſelf), and is called by the natives Tareinſka.

In our way toward this harbour, we met the *Toion* of Saint Peter and Saint Paul, in a canoe, with his wife and two children, and another Kamtſchadale. He had killed two ſeals upon a round iſland, that lies in the entrance of the harbour, with which, and a great quantity of berries that he had gathered, he was returning home. As the wind had veered to the South Weſt, we now changed our route, by his advice; and, inſtead of going up the harbour, directed our courſe to the Northward, toward a pool of water that lies near the mouth of the river Paratounca, and which was a known

1779. September. a known haunt of the bears. We had ſcarce landed, when unfortunately the wind changed to the Eaſtward, and a ſecond time deſtroyed all hopes of coming up with our game; for the Kamtſchadales aſſured us, that it was in vain to expect to meet with bears, whilſt we were to the windward; owing to their being poſſeſſed of an uncommon acuteneſs in ſcenting their purſuers, which enabled them, under ſuch circumſtances, to avoid the danger, whilſt it is yet at a very great diſtance. We returned therefore to the boat, and paſſed the night on the beach, having brought a tent with
Saturday 18. us for that purpoſe; and the next day, by the advice of our guides, croſſed the bay, and went to the head of Rakoweena Harbour.

Having here ſecured the boats, we proceeded with all our luggage on foot, and, after a walk of five or ſix miles, came to the ſea-ſide, a league to the Northward of the Light-houſe Head. From hence, as far as we could ſee toward Cheepoonſkoi Noſs, there is a continued narrow border of low level ground adjoining to the ſea, which is covered with heath, and produces great abundance of berries, particularly thoſe called partridge and crow berries. We were told, we ſhould not fail to meet with a number of bears, feeding upon theſe berries; but that the weather being ſhowery, was unfavourable for us.

Accordingly, we directed our courſe along this plain; and though we ſaw ſeveral bears at a diſtance, we could never, with all our management, contrive to get within ſhot of them. Our diverſion was therefore changed to ſpearing of ſalmon, which we ſaw puſhing, in great numbers, through the ſurf into a ſmall river. I could not help obſerving, how much inferior our Kamtſchadales were at this method of fiſhing, to the people at Oonalaſhka; nor were their inſtruments,

ments, although pointed with iron, near ſo good for the purpoſe, nor to be compared in neatneſs, to thoſe of the Americans, though pointed only with bone. On inquiring into the reaſon of this inferiority, I was informed by the corporal, who had lived many years amongſt the Americans, that formerly the Kamtſchadales made uſe of the ſame kind of darts and ſpears with the Americans, headed and barbed with bone, and were not leſs dexterous in the management of them than the latter. We could not underſtand one another ſufficiently for me to learn the cauſe of this change; probably it was one of the not unuſual effects of a forced and imperfect ſtate of improvement. It fell out very opportunely, that the water afforded us a little prey; for, beſides our ill ſucceſs in the chace by land, we had alſo been diſappointed in our expectations of ſhooting wild fowl, on a ſupply of which we had in ſome meaſure depended for our ſubſiſtence; and on its failure, began to think that we had been full long abſent from head-quarters. 1779. September.

Our Kamtſchadales now diſcovered, that the want of ſucceſs, in not meeting with game, was owing to the party being too large, and to the unavoidable noiſe that was the conſequence of it. We therefore agreed to ſeparate; Ivaſkin, the corporal, and myſelf, forming one party; Captain Gore, and the reſt of the company, the other.

Accordingly, after paſſing the night under our tent, we ſet out on the morning of the 19th, by different routes, meaning to take a circuit round the country, and meet at Saint Peter and Saint Paul. The party to which I belonged, took the courſe of the river, at the mouth of which we had fiſhed for the ſalmon; and, after being thoroughly ſoaked by the heavy rains that fell all the morning, we Sunday 19.

1779. September. came about three in the afternoon to ſome old *balagans*, where a Kamtſchadale village had been formerly ſituated, without meeting with a ſingle bear during the whole of a long and tedious walk. It was our firſt intention to have remained here all night, in order to have reſumed our chace early the next morning; but the weather clearing, and at the ſame time a freſh breeze ſpringing up from a quarter unfavourable to our deſigns, the Hoſpodin, whom former ſufferings had made very unfit to bear much fatigue, and who ſeemed, at preſent, more particularly diſtreſſed from having emptied his ſnuff-box, began to be very importunate with us to return home. It was ſome time before the old corporal conſented, alleging, that we were at a great diſtance from the harbour; and that, on account of the badneſs of the way, the night would probably overtake us before we reached the end of our journey. At length, however, he yielded to Ivaſkin's intreaties, and conducted us along the ſide of a number of ſmall lakes, with which the flat part of this country ſeems much to abound. Theſe lakes are from half a mile to two miles in length, and about half a mile broad; the water is freſh and clear, and they are full of a red-coloured fiſh, reſembling, both in ſhape and ſize, a ſmall ſalmon; of which a more particular deſcription will be given hereafter. The banks of theſe lakes were covered with the fragments of fiſh that the bears had half eaten, and which cauſed an intolerable ſtench. We often came upon the ſpots which the bears had juſt left, but were never able even to come within ſight of them.

It was night before we reached the ſhips, and we had then been twelve hours upon our legs. Poor Ivaſkin found himſelf exceedingly tired and overcome with fatigue; probably,

bably, he was more ſenſible of it, for want of a ſupply of ſnuff; for, every ſtep he took, his hand dived mechanically into his pocket, and drew out his huge empty box. We had ſcarcely got into the tent, when the weather ſet in exceedingly rough and wet. We congratulated ourſelves, that we had not ſtayed out another day, the Hoſpodin's box was repleniſhed, and we forgot the fatigues and ill ſucceſs of our expedition over a good ſupper. 1779. September.

I was exceedingly ſorry, on being told the next day, that our friend the Serjeant had undergone corporal puniſhment, during our abſence, by command of the old *Putparouchick*. None of our people had been able to learn what was the cauſe of his diſpleaſure; but it was imagined to have ariſen from ſome little jealouſy ſubſiſting between them, on account of the civility which we had ſhewn to the former. However, having every reaſon to believe, that the offence, whatever it might be, did not call for ſo diſgraceful a chaſtiſement, we could not help being both ſorry and much provoked at it, as the terms on which we had lived with him, and the intereſt we were known to take in his affairs, made the affront in ſome meaſure perſonal to ourſelves. For it has not yet been mentioned, that we had conſulted with the late worthy Commander, Major Behm, who was alſo his friend, by what means we might be moſt likely to ſucceed in doing him ſome ſervice, for the good order he had kept in the *oſtrog* during our ſtay, and for his readineſs, on all occaſions, to oblige us. The Major adviſed a letter of recommendation to the Governor General, which Captain Clerke had accordingly given him, and which, backed with his own repreſentations, he had no doubt would get the Serjeant advanced a ſtep higher in his profeſſion. Monday 20.

1779. September. We did not chooſe to make any remonſtrance on this ſubject, till the arrival of Captain Shmaleff. Indeed our inability, from the want of language, to enter into any diſcuſſion of the buſineſs, made it adviſeable to come to this determination. However, when the *Put-parouchick* paid us his next viſit, we could not help teſtifying our chagrin, by receiving him very coolly.

Wedneſ. 22. The 22d, being the anniverſary of his Majeſty's coronation, twenty-one guns were fired, and the handſomeſt feaſt our ſituation would allow of was prepared, in honour of the day. As we were ſitting down to dinner, the arrival of Captain Shmaleff was announced. This was a moſt agreeable ſurprize; in the firſt place, becauſe he arrived ſo opportunely to partake of the good fare and feſtivity of the occaſion; and, in the next, becauſe in our laſt accounts of him, we were given to underſtand, that the effects of a ſevere illneſs had made him unequal to the journey. We were glad to find this had been merely an excuſe; that, in fact, he was aſhamed of coming empty-handed, knowing we muſt be in great want of tea, ſugar, *&c. &c.*; and that therefore he had deferred his ſetting out, in daily expectation of the ſloop from Okotzk; but having no tidings of her, and dreading leſt we ſhould ſail, without his having paid us a viſit, he was determined to ſet out, though with nothing better to preſent to us, than apologies for the poverty of Bolcheretſk. At the ſame time he acquainted us, that our not having received the ſixteen head of black cattle, we had deſired might be ſent down, was owing to the very heavy rains at Verchnei, which had prevented their ſetting out. We made the beſt anſwer we were able, to ſo much politeneſs and generoſity; and the next day, on coming on board the Reſolution, he was ſaluted with eleven

eleven guns. Specimens of all our curioſities were preſented to him; and Captain Gore added to them a gold watch, and a fowling-piece. 1779. September.

The next day he was entertained on board the Diſcovery; and on the 25th, he took leave of us to return to Bolcheretſk. He could not be prevailed on to lengthen his viſit, having ſome expectations, as he told us, that the Sub-governor General, who was at this time making a tour through all the provinces of the Governor General of Jakutzk, might arrive in the ſloop that was daily expected from Okotzk. Before his departure, and without any interference of ours, he reinſtated the Serjeant in the command of this place, having determined to take the *Put-parouchick* along with him; at the ſame time, we underſtood that he was highly diſpleaſed with him, on account of the puniſhment that had been inflicted on the Serjeant, and for which there did not appear to be the ſlighteſt grounds. Thurſday 23. Saturday 25.

Captain Shmaleff's great readineſs to give us every poſſible proof of his deſire to oblige us, encouraged us to aſk a ſmall favour, for another of our Kamtſchadale friends. It was to requite an old ſoldier, whoſe houſe had been, at all times, open to the inferior officers, and who had done both them, and all the crew, a thouſand good offices. The Captain moſt obligingly complied with our requeſt, and dubbed him (which was all he wiſhed for) a corporal, upon the ſpot; and ordered him to thank the Engliſh officers for his great promotion. It may not here be improper to obſerve, that, in the Ruſſian army, the inferior claſs of officers enjoy a degree of pre-eminence above the private men, with which we, in our ſervice, are in a great meaſure unacquainted. It was no ſmall aſtoniſhment to us, to ſee a ſerjeant keep up all the ſtate, and exact all the reſpect, from

1779. September. from all beneath him, belonging to a field officer. It may be farther remarked, that there are many more gradations of rank amongſt them, than are to be met with in other countries. Between a ſerjeant and a private man, there are not leſs than four intermediate ſteps; and I have no doubt, but that the advantages ariſing from this ſyſtem are found to be very conſiderable. The ſalutary effects of little ſubordinate ranks in our ſea-ſervice, cannot be queſtioned. It gives riſe to great emulation, and the ſuperior officers are enabled to beſtow, on almoſt every poſſible degree of merit, a reward proportioned to it.

Having been incidentally led into this ſubject, I ſhall beg leave to add but one obſervation more, namely, that the diſcipline of the Ruſſian army, though at this diſtance from the ſeat of government, is of the ſtricteſt and ſevereſt kind; from which even the commiſſioned officers are not exempt. The puniſhment of the latter for ſmall offences is impriſonment, and a bread and water diet. An Enſign, a good friend of ours at this place, told us, that for having been concerned in a drunken riot, he was confined in the black hole for three months, and fed upon bread and water; which, he ſaid, ſo ſhattered his nerves, that he had never ſince had ſpirits for a common convivial meeting.

I accompanied Captain Shmaleff to the entrance of Awatſka River, and, having bid him farewel, took this opportunity of paying a viſit to the Prieſt of Paratounca. On Sun-
Sunday 26. day the 26th, I attended him to church. The congregation conſiſted of his own family, three Kamtſchadale men, and three boys, who aſſiſted in ſinging part of the ſervice; the whole of which was performed in a very ſolemn and edifying manner. The church is of wood, and by far the beſt

beſt building either in this town, or in that of St. Peter and St. Paul. It is ornamented with many paintings, particularly with two pictures of St. Peter and St. Paul, preſented by Beering; and which, in the real richneſs of their drapery, would carry off the prize from the firſt of our European performances; for all the principal parts of it are made of thick plates of ſolid ſilver, faſtened to the canvaſs, and faſhioned into the various foldings of the robes with which the figures were clothed. 1779. September.

The next day, I ſet on foot another hunting party, and put myſelf under the direction of the Clerk of the pariſh, who was a celebrated bear-hunter. We arrived, by ſun-ſet, at the ſide of one of the larger lakes. The next ſtep was to conceal ourſelves as much as poſſible; and this we were able to do very effectually, among ſome long graſs and bruſh-wood, that grew cloſe to the water's edge. We had not lain long in ambuſh, before we had the pleaſure to hear the growlings of bears in different parts round about us; and our expectations were ſoon gratified, by the ſight of one of them in the water, which ſeemed to be ſwimming directly to the place where we lay hid. The moon, at this time, gave a conſiderable light; and when the animal had advanced about fifteen yards, three of us fired at it, pretty nearly at the ſame time. The beaſt immediately turned ſhort on one ſide, and ſet up a noiſe, which could not properly be called roaring, nor growling, nor yelling, but was a mixture of all three, and horrible beyond deſcription. We plainly ſaw that it was ſeverely wounded, and that with difficulty it gained the bank, and retreated to ſome thick buſhes at a little diſtance. It ſtill continued to make the ſame loud and terrible noiſe; and though the Kamtſchadales were perſuaded it was mortally wounded, and could get no farther, Monday 27.

1779. September.

farther, yet they thought it moſt adviſeable not to rouſe it again for the preſent. It was, at this time, paſt nine o'clock; and the night becoming overcaſt, and threatening a change of weather, we thought it moſt prudent to return home, and defer the gratification of our curioſity till morning, when we returned to the ſpot, and found the bear dead in the place to which it had been watched. It proved to be a female, and beyond the common ſize.

As the account of our firſt hunting party will be apt to give the reader a wrong idea of the method in which this ſport is uſually conducted; it may not be amiſs to add a few more words on the ſubject; and which I am the better able to do ſince this laſt expedition.

When the natives come to the ground frequented by the bears, which they contrive to reach about ſun-ſet, the firſt ſtep is to look for their tracks, to examine which are the freſheſt, and the beſt ſituated with a view to concealment, and taking aim at the beaſt, either as he is paſſing by, or advancing in front, or going from them. Theſe tracks are found in the greateſt numbers, leading from the woods down to the lakes, and among the long ſedgy graſs and brakes by the edge of the water. The place of ambuſcade being determined upon, the hunters next fix in the ground the crutches, upon which their firelocks are made to reſt, pointing them in the direction they mean to make their ſhot. This done, they kneel or lie down, as the circumſtances of the cover require; and, with their bear-ſpears by their ſide, wait for their game. Theſe precautions, which are chiefly taken in order to make ſure of their mark, are, on ſeveral accounts, highly expedient. For, in the firſt place, ammunition is ſo dear at Kamtſchatka, that the price of a bear will not purchaſe more of it than is ſufficient to load

load a muſquet four or five times; and, what is more material, if the bear be not rendered incapable of purſuit by the firſt ſhot, the conſequences are often fatal. He immediately makes toward the place from whence the noiſe and ſmoke iſſue, and attacks his adverſaries with great fury. It is impoſſible for them to reload, as the animal is ſeldom at more than twelve or fifteen yards diſtance, when he is fired at: ſo that, if he does not fall, they immediately put themſelves in a poſture to receive him upon their ſpears; and their ſafety greatly depends on their giving him a mortal ſtab, as he firſt comes upon them. If he parries the thruſt (which, by the extraordinary ſtrength and agility of their paws, they are often enabled to do), and thereby breaks in upon his adverſaries, the conflict becomes very unequal, and it is well if the life of one of the party alone ſuffice to pay the forfeit. 1779. September.

There are two ſeaſons of the year when this diverſion, or occupation, as it may be rather called, is more particularly dangerous: in the ſpring, when the bears firſt come forth, after having ſubſiſted, as is univerſally aſſerted here, on ſucking their paws through the winter; and eſpecially if the froſt happen to be ſevere, and the ice not to be broken up in the lake at that time, by which means they are deprived of their ordinary and expected food. Under theſe circumſtances, they ſoon become exceedingly famiſhed, and fierce and ſavage in proportion. They will purſue the natives by the ſcent; and, as they now prowl about out of their uſual tracks, frequently come upon them unawares; and when this happens, as the Kamtſchadales have not the ſmalleſt notion of ſhooting flying, nor even at an animal running, or in any way except with their piece on a reſt, the bear-hunters often fall a ſacrifice to their hunger. The

1779. September. other ſeaſon in which it is dangerous to come in their way, is at the time of their copulation, which is generally about this time of the year.

An extraordinary inſtance of natural affection in theſe animals hath been already mentioned. The chace affords a variety of a ſimilar nature, and not leſs affecting; many of which were related to me. The Kamtſchadales derive great advantage in hunting, from this circumſtance. They never venture to fire upon a young bear, when the mother is near: for, if the cub drop, ſhe becomes enraged to a degree little ſhort of madneſs; and if ſhe get ſight of the enemy, will only quit her revenge with her life. On the contrary, if the dam be ſhot, the cubs will not leave her ſide, even after ſhe has been dead a long time; but continue about her, ſhewing, by a variety of affecting actions and geſtures, marks of the deepeſt affliction, and thus become an eaſy prey to the hunters.

Nor is the ſagacity of the bears, if the Kamtſchadales are to be credited, leſs extraordinary, or leſs worthy to be remarked, than their natural affection. Of this they have a thouſand ſtories to relate. I ſhall content myſelf with mentioning one inſtance, which the natives ſpeak of as a well-known fact; and that is, the ſtratagem they have recourſe to, in order to catch the bareins, which are conſiderably too ſwift of foot for them. Theſe animals keep together in large herds; they frequent moſtly the low grounds, and love to browſe at the feet of rocks and precipices. The bear hunts them by ſcent, till he come in ſight; when he advances warily, keeping above them, and concealing himſelf amongſt the rocks, as he makes his approaches, till he gets immediately over them, and nigh enough for his purpoſe.

poſe. He then begins to puſh down, with his paws, pieces of the rock amongſt the herd below. This manœuvre is not followed by any attempt to purſue, until he find he has maimed one of the flock, upon which a courſe immediately enſues, that proves ſucceſsful, or otherwiſe, according to the hurt the barein has received. 1779. September.

I cannot conclude this digreſſion, without obſerving, that the Kamtſchadales very thankfully acknowledge their obligations to the bears for what little advancement they have hitherto made, either in the ſciences or polite arts. They confeſs that they owe to them all their ſkill both in phyſic and ſurgery; that by remarking with what herbs theſe animals rub the wounds they have received, and what they have recourſe to when ſick and languid, they have become acquainted with moſt of the ſimples in uſe among them, either in the way of internal medicine, or external application. But what will appear ſomewhat more ſingular, is, they acknowledge the bears likewiſe for their dancing-maſters. Indeed, the evidence of one's ſenſes puts this out of diſpute; for the bear-dance of the Kamtſchadales is an exact counterpart of every attitude and geſture peculiar to this animal, through its various functions; and this is the foundation and ground-work of all their other dances, and what they value themſelves moſt upon.

I returned to the ſhips on the 28th, very well pleaſed with my excurſion, as it had afforded me an opportunity of ſeeing a little more of the country, and of obſerving the manners and behaviour of the Kamtſchadales, when freed from that conſtraint, which they evidently lie under in the company of the Ruſſians. Tueſday 28.

No occurrence worth mentioning took place till the 30th, when Captain Gore went to Paratounca, to put up in the Thurſday 30.

1779. September. church there an eſcutcheon, prepared by Mr. Webber, with an inſcription upon it, ſetting forth Captain Clerke's age and rank, and the object of the expedition in which he was engaged at the time of his deceaſe. We alſo affixed to the tree, under which he was buried, a board, with an inſcription upon it to the ſame effect.

Before his departure, Captain Gore left orders with me to get the ſhips out of the harbour into the bay, to be in readineſs to ſail. We were prevented from doing this, by a violent gale of wind, which laſted the whole day of the October. Friday 1. Saturday 2. firſt of October. However, on the 2d, both ſhips warped out of the harbour, clear of the narrow paſſage, and came to anchor in ſeven fathoms, a quarter of a mile from the *oſtrog*.

The day before we went out of the harbour, the cattle arrived from Verchnei; and, that the men might receive the full benefit of this capital and much-longed-for ſupply, by conſuming it freſh, Captain Gore came to a determination of ſtaying five or ſix days longer. Nor was this time idly employed. The boats, pumps, ſails, and rigging, of both ſhips, thereby received an additional repair. And Captain Gore, ſparing me ſome moloſſes, and the uſe of the Reſolution's copper, I was enabled to brew a fortnight's beer for the crew, and to make a farther proviſion of ten puncheons of ſtrong ſpruce eſſence. The preſent ſupply was the more acceptable, as our laſt caſk of ſpirits, except a ſmall quantity left in reſerve for caſes of neceſſity, was now ſerving out.

Sunday 3. The 3d was the name-day of the Empreſs; and we could want no inducement to ſhew it every poſſible reſpect. Accordingly Captain Gore invited the Prieſt of Paratounca, Ivaſkin, and the Serjeant, to dinner; and an entertainment

was

1779. October.

was alſo provided for the inferior officers of the garriſon, for the two *Toions* of Paratounca, and St. Peter and St. Paul, and for the other better ſort of Kamtſchadale inhabitants. The reſt of the natives, of every deſcription, were invited to partake with the ſhips companies, who had a pound of good fat beef ſerved out to each man; and what remained of our ſpirits was made into grog, and divided amongſt them. A ſalute of twenty-one guns was fired at the uſual hour; and the whole was conducted (conſidering the part of her dominions it was in) in a manner not unworthy ſo renowned and magnificent an Empreſs.

Tueſday 5. On the 5th, we received, from Bolcheretſk, a freſh ſupply of tea, ſugar, and tobacco. This preſent had met Captain Shmaleff on his return, and was accompanied by a letter from him, in which he informed us, that the ſloop from Okotzk had arrived during his abſence, and that Madame Shmaleff, who was entirely in our intereſts, had loſt no time in diſpatching a courier, with the few preſents, of which our acceptance was requeſted.

Wedneſ. 6. Thurſday 7. Friday 8. The appearance of foul weather, on the 6th and 7th, prevented our unmooring; but on the morning of the 8th, we ſailed out toward the mouth of the bay, and hoiſted in all the boats; when the wind, veering to the Southward, ſtopped our farther progreſs, and obliged us to drop anchor in ten fathoms; the *oſtrog* bearing due North, half a league diſtant.

Saturday 9. The weather being foggy, and the wind from the ſame quarter during the forenoon of the 9th, we continued in our ſtation. At four in the afternoon, we again unmoored; but whilſt we were, with great difficulty, weighing our laſt anchor, I was told that the drummer of the marines had left the boat, which had juſt returned from the village, and that

1779. October. that he was laſt ſeen with a Kamtſchadale woman, to whom his meſſmates knew he had been much attached, and who had often been obſerved perſuading him to ſtay behind. Though this man had been long uſeleſs to us, from a ſwelling in his knee, which rendered him lame, yet this made me the more unwilling he ſhould be left behind, to become a miſerable burthen, both to the Ruſſians and himſelf. I therefore got the Serjeant to ſend parties of ſoldiers, in different directions, in ſearch of him, whilſt ſome of our ſailors went to a well-known haunt of his in the neighbourhood, where they found him with his woman. On the return of this party, with our deſerter, we weighed, and followed the Reſolution out of the bay.

Having at length taken our leave of St. Peter and St. Paul, I ſhall conclude this chapter with a particular deſcription of Awatſka bay, and the coaſt adjoining; not only becauſe (its three inlets included) it conſtitutes perhaps the moſt extenſive, and ſafeſt, harbour that has yet been diſcovered; but becauſe it is the only port in this part of the world, capable of admitting ſhips of any conſiderable burthen. The term Bay, indeed, is perhaps not applicable, properly ſpeaking, to a place ſo well ſheltered as Awatſka; but then it muſt be obſerved, that from the looſe, undiſtinguiſhing manner, in which navigators have denominated certain ſituations of ſea and land, with reſpect to each other, bays, roads, ſounds, harbours, &c. we have no defined and determinate ideas affixed to theſe words, ſufficient to warrant us in changing a popular name, for one that may appear more proper.

The entrance into this bay, is in 52° 51′ North latitude, and 158° 48′ Eaſt longitude, and lies in the bight of another exterior bay, formed by Cheepoonſkoi Noſs, to the North, and

and Cape Gavareea to the South. The former of theſe head-lands bears from the latter North Eaſt by North, three quarters Eaſt, and is diſtant thirty-two leagues. The coaſt, from Cape Gavareea to the entrance of Awatſka Bay, takes a direction nearly North, and is eleven leagues in extent. It conſiſts of a chain of high, ragged cliffs, with detached rocks frequently lying off them. This coaſt, at a diſtance, preſents, in many parts, an appearance of bays or inlets, but on a nearer approach, the head-lands were found connected by low ground. 1779. October.

Cheepoonſkoi Noſs bears from the entrance of the bay, Eaſt North Eaſt a quarter Eaſt, and is twenty-five leagues diſtant. On this ſide, the ſhore is low and flat, with hills riſing behind, to a conſiderable height. In the latitude of Cape Gavareea, there is an error of twenty-one miles in the Ruſſian charts; its true latitude being 52° 21′.

This ſtriking difference of the land on each ſide Awatſka Bay, with their different bearings, are the beſt guides to ſteer for it, in coming from the Southward: and, in approaching it from the Northward, Cheepoonſkoi Noſs will make itſelf very conſpicuous; for it is a high projecting head-land, with a conſiderable extent of level ground, lower than the Noſs, uniting it to the continent. It preſents the ſame appearance, whether viewed from the North or South, and will warn the mariner not to be deceived, in imagining Awatſka Bay to lie in the bight, which the coaſt forms to the Northward of this Noſs; and which might be the caſe, from the ſtriking reſemblance there is between a conical hill within this bight or bay, and one to the South of Awatſka Bay.

I have been thus particular, in giving a minute deſcription of this coaſt, from our own experience of the want of it.

1779. October.

it. For had we been furniſhed with a tolerable account of the form of the coaſt, on each ſide of Awatſka Bay, we ſhould, on our firſt arrival upon it, have got ſafely within the bay two days before we did, and thereby have avoided part of the ſtormy weather, which came on when we were plying off the mouth of the harbour. Beſides, from the prevalence of fogs, in theſe ſeas, it muſt frequently happen, that an obſervation for aſcertaining the latitude cannot be got; to which we may add, that the deceptive appearances land makes, when covered with ſnow, and when viewed through an hazy atmoſphere, both which circumſtances prevail here during the greateſt part of the year, render the knowledge of a variety of diſcriminating objects the more neceſſary.

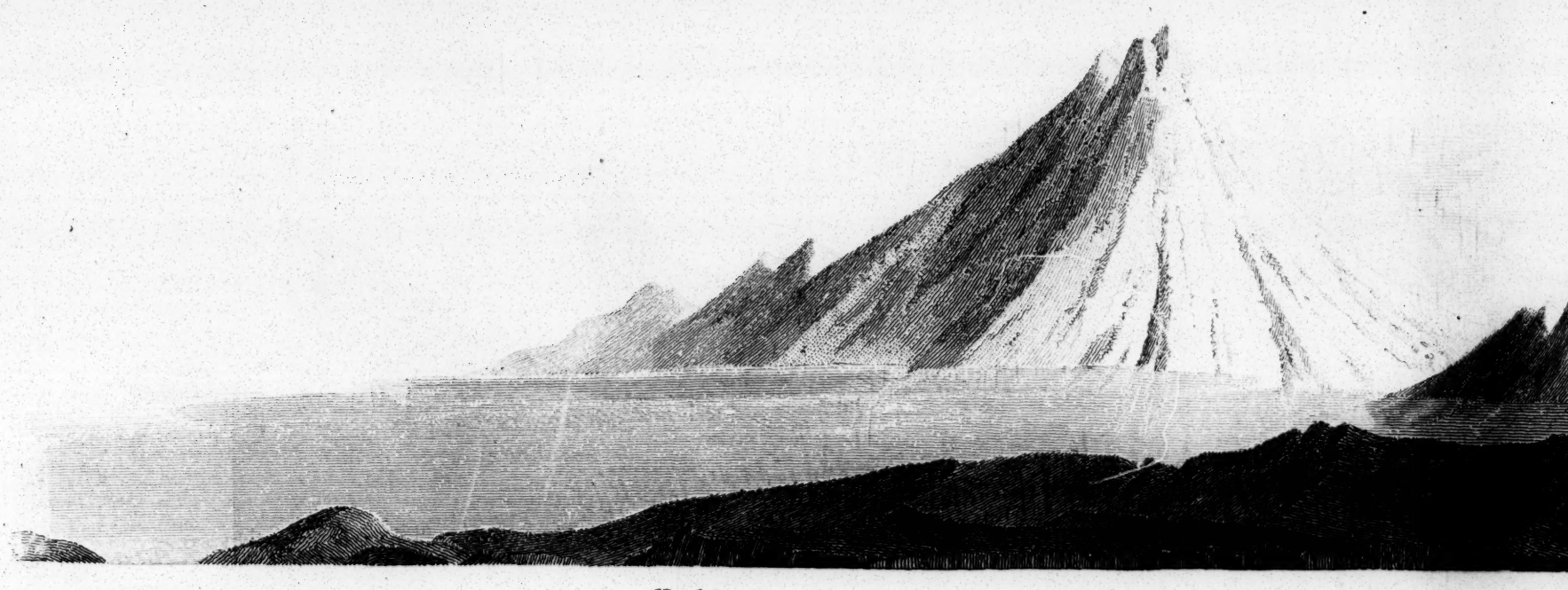
Should, however, the weather be clear enough to admit a view of the mountains on the coaſt in its neighbourhood, theſe will ſerve to point out the ſituation of Awatſka Bay, with a great deal of preciſion. For to the South of it are two high mountains; that which is neareſt the bay, is ſhaped like a ſugar-loaf; the other, which is farther inland, does not appear ſo high, and is flat at the top. To the North of the bay, are three very conſpicuous mountains; the Weſternmoſt is, to appearance, the higheſt; the next is the *volcano* mountain, which may be known from the ſmoke that iſſues from its top, and likewiſe from ſome high table-hills connected with it, and ſtretching to the Northward: theſe two are ſomewhat peaked. The third, and the moſt northerly, might perhaps be more properly called a cluſter of mountains, as it preſents to the ſight ſeveral flat tops.

When the navigator has got within the Capes, and into the outward bay, a perpendicular head-land, with a light-houſe



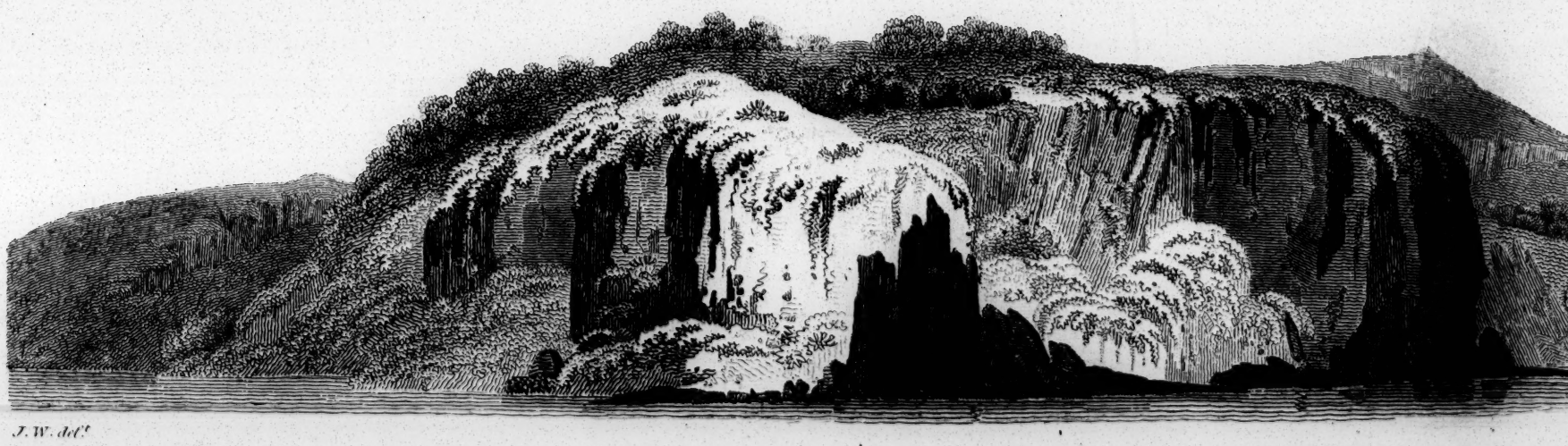
NWbW 4 Leag.s dist.:

Entrance of AWATSKA



Entrance of AWATSKA Bay

North head
3 miles distant



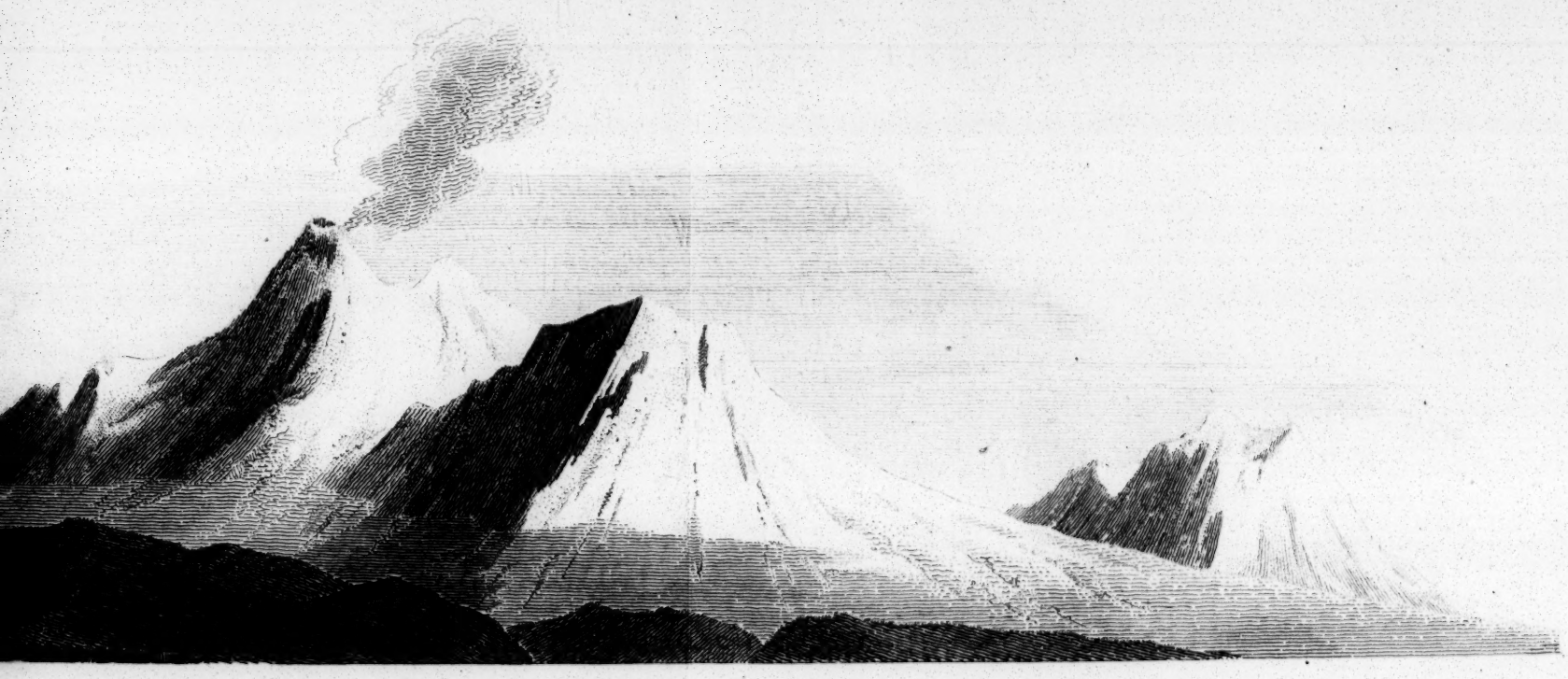
J. W. del.t

VIEW in the entrance of AWATSKA Bay when the

oaſt of *KAMTSCHATKA* .



Volcano *NbW* — *Wm Bligh del.*





han the light-Houſe *on* North Head *bore SEbS diſtant 2 miles* .

houſe erected upon it, will point out the entrance of the bay of Awatſka to the Northward. To the Eaſtward of this head-land lie many ſunken rocks, ſtretching into the ſea, to the diſtance of two or three miles; and which will ſhew themſelves, if there be but a moderate ſea or ſwell. Four miles to the South of the entrance lies a ſmall round iſland, very diſtinguiſhable from being principally compoſed of high pointed rocks, with one of them ſtrikingly remarkable, as being much larger, more peaked and perpendicular, than the reſt. 1779. October.

It is no way neceſſary to be equally particular in the deſcription of the bay itſelf, as of its approaches and environs; ſince no words can give the mariner ſo perfect an idea of it, as the annexed plan. From this it will appear, that the entrance is at firſt near three miles wide, and in the narroweſt part one mile and a half, and four miles long, in a North North Weſt direction. Within the mouth is a noble baſon of twenty-five miles circuit, with the capacious harbours of Tareinſka to the Weſt, of Rakoweena to the Eaſt, and the ſmall one of St. Peter and St. Paul, where we lay, to the North.

Tareinſka harbour is about three miles in breadth, and twelve in length; it ſtretches to the Eaſt South Eaſt, and is ſeparated from the ſea, at the bottom, by a narrow neck of land. The road into this harbour is perfectly free from rocks or ſhoals. We had never leſs than ſeven fathoms water, as far as our ſurvey extended; for we were not able to get to the bottom of the harbour on account of the ice.

The harbour of Rakoweena would deſerve the preference over the other two, if its entrance were not impeded by a ſhoal lying in the middle of the channel; which, in

1779. October. general, will make it neceſſary to warp in, unleſs there be a leading wind. It is from one mile to half a mile in width, and three miles long, running at firſt in a South Eaſt, and afterward in an Eaſterly direction. Its depth is from thirteen to three fathoms.

St. Peter and St. Paul's is one of the moſt convenient little harbours I ever ſaw. It will hold conveniently half a dozen ſhips, moored head and ſtern; and is fit for giving them any kind of repairs. The South ſide is formed by a low ſandy neck, exceedingly narrow, on which the *oſtrog* is built; and whoſe point may almoſt be touched by ſhips going in; having three fathoms water cloſe in with it. In the mid channel, which is no more than two hundred and ſeventy-eight feet acroſs, there is ſix fathoms and a half; the deepeſt water within is ſeven fathoms; and in every part over a muddy bottom. We found ſome inconvenience from the toughneſs of the ground, which conſtantly broke the meſſenger, and gave us a great deal of trouble in getting up the anchors. There is a watering-place at the head of the harbour.

The plan will likewiſe point out the ſhoal that is to be avoided, lying off the Eaſtern harbour, as well as the ſpit within the entrance, ſtretching from the South Weſt ſhore; and over which there is only three fathoms water. In order to ſteer clear of the latter, a ſmall iſland, or perhaps it may rather be called a large detached rock, lying on the Weſt ſhore of the entrance, is to be ſhut in with the land to the South of it; and, to ſteer clear of the former, the Three Needle Rocks, which lie on the Eaſt ſhore of the entrance near the light-houſe head, are to be kept open with the head-lands (or bluff-heads) that riſe to the Northward of the firſt ſmall bay, or bending, obſervable on the Eaſt ſide of the

the entrance. When arrived to the North of the North head-land of the Eaſtern harbour, the ſhoal is paſt. 1779. October.

In ſailing into the harbour of St. Peter and St. Paul, and approaching the village, it is neceſſary to keep in cloſe to the Eaſtern ſhore, in order to avoid a ſpit, which runs from the head-land to the South Weſt of the town.

Before I proceed to give a table of the reſult of our aſtronomical obſervations at this place, it may be proper to acquaint the Reader, that the time-keeper we had on board the Reſolution, which was an exact copy of that invented by Mr. Harriſon, and executed by Mr. Kendal, ſtopped on the 27th of April, a few days before we firſt came into Awatſka Bay. It had been always kept with the moſt ſcrupulous care during the voyage, having never been truſted for a moment into any other hands than thoſe of Captain Cook and mine. No accident could, therefore, have happened to it, to which we could attribute its ſtopping; nor could it have ariſen from the effects of intenſe cold, as the thermometer was very little below the freezing point. As ſoon as the diſcovery was made, I conſulted with Captain Clerke, what courſe it was beſt to purſue; whether to let it remain as it was, entirely uſeleſs to us, for the purpoſe of ſatisfying the curious at home, where it was ſure of being examined by proper judges, or ſuffer it to be inſpected by a ſeaman on board, who had ſerved a regular apprenticeſhip to a watch-maker in London; and appeared ſufficiently knowing in the buſineſs, from his ſucceſs in cleaning and repairing ſeveral watches ſince we had been out. The advantages we had derived from its accuracy made us extremely unwilling to be deprived of its uſe during the remaining part of the voyage; and that object appeared to us of much greater importance than the ſmall

1779. October.

degree of probability, which we underſtood was all that could be expected, of obtaining any material knowledge reſpecting its mechaniſm, by deferring the inſpection of it. At the ſame time, it ſhould be remembered, that the watch had already had a ſufficient trial, both in the former voyage, and during the three years we had now had it on board, to aſcertain its utility. On theſe conſiderations, we took the opportunity of the firſt clear day, after our arrival in Awatſka Bay, of opening the watch, which was done in the Captain's cabin, and in our preſence. The watch-maker found no part of the work broken; but, not being able to ſet it a-going, he proceeded to take off the cock and balance, and cleaned both the pivot-holes, which he found very foul, and the reſt of the work rather dirty; he alſo took off the dial-plate; and, between two teeth of the wheel that carries the ſecond-hand, found a piece of dirt, which he imagined to be the principal cauſe of its ſtopping. Having afterward put the work together, and oiled it as ſparingly as poſſible, the watch appeared to go free and well.

Having received orders the next day to go to Bolcheretſk, the time-keeper was left in the care of Mr. Bayly, to compare it with his watch and clock, in order to get its rate. On my return, I was told it had gone for ſome days with tolerable regularity, loſing only from fifteen to ſeventeen ſeconds a-day, when it ſtopped a ſecond time. It was again opened, and the cauſe of its ſtopping appeared to be owing to the man having put ſome part of the work badly together when he firſt opened it. Being again adjuſted, it was found to gain above a minute a day; and, in the attempt to alter the regulator and balance-ſpring, he broke the latter. He afterward made a new ſpring; but the watch now

now went ſo irregularly, that we made no farther uſe of it. The poor fellow was not leſs chagrined than we were, at our bad ſucceſs; which, however, I am convinced was more owing to the miſerable tools he was obliged to work with, and the ſtiffneſs his hands had contracted from his ordinary occupation, than to his want of ſkill. 1779. October.

For the ſatisfaction of thoſe who may wiſh to have a general view of its rate of going, I have added the following table.

The firſt and ſecond columns contain the dates when, and the names of the places where, its rate was obſerved. The third column contains the daily error of its rate, ſo found from mean time. The fourth column has the longitude of each place, according to the Greenwich rate; that is, calculated on a ſuppoſition that the time-keeper had not varied its rate from the time it left Greenwich. But as we had frequent opportunities of aſcertaining the variation of its daily error, or finding its new rate, the fifth column has the longitude according to its laſt rate, calculated from the true longitude of the place laſt departed from. The ſixth is the true longitude of the place deduced from aſtronomical obſervations made by ourſelves, and compared with thoſe made by others, whenever ſuch could be obtained. The ſeventh column ſhews the difference between the fourth column and the ſixth in ſpace; and the eighth the ſame difference in time. The ninth ſhews the number of months and days in which the error, thus determined, had been accumulating. The difference between the fifth and ſixth columns is found in the tenth, and ſhews the error of the time-keeper, according to its rate laſt found, in ſpace; and the eleventh, the ſame error in time. The twelfth contains the time elapſed in ſailing from the place where

1779. October. where the rate was laſt taken, to the place whoſe longitude is laſt determined. The thirteenth and fourteenth contain the ſtate of the air at the time of each obſervation.

As perſons, unaccuſtomed to calculations of this ſort, may find ſome difficulty in comprehending the nature of the table, the two following inſtances will more clearly explain it.

Thus, on the 24th October, 1776 (firſt column), at the Cape of Good Hope (ſecond column), we found the daily error in the rate of its going, to be 2″,26 (third column. The longitude of that place, calculated on a ſuppoſition that the rate of the time-keeper had continued the ſame from the time of our leaving Greenwich, that is, had a regular daily error of 1″,21, is found to be 18° 26′ 30″ Eaſt (fourth column). And as its rate at Greenwich is, in this inſtance, its lateſt rate, the longitude thus found is the ſame (fifth column). The true longitude of the place is 18° 23′ 15″ (ſixth column). From whence it appears, that in our run from Greenwich to the Cape, the watch would have led us into an error only of 3′ 15″ (ſeventh column), or three miles one quarter; or had varied 13″ of time (eighth column), in four months twenty-three days (ninth column), the period between our leaving Greenwich and our arrival at the Cape. As the Greenwich is the lateſt error, the tenth, eleventh, and twelfth columns will be the ſame with the ſeventh and ninth.

But, on the 22d of February, 1777 (firſt column), at Queen Charlotte's Sound, New Zealand (ſecond column), the daily error of its rate was found to be 2″,91 (third column). The longitude of this place, according to the Greenwich rate, is 175° 25′ (fourth column). But having found, at the Cape, that it had altered its rate from a daily error of 1″,21,

1779. October.

1″,21 to 2″,26 the longitude corrected by this new rate is found to be 174° 54′ 23″ (fifth column). The true longitude of the place being 174° 23′ 31″ (sixth column); it appears, that, in our run from Greenwich to New Zealand, the error would have been only 1° 1′ 29″ (seventh column), or sixty-one miles and a half, even if we had not had an opportunity of correcting its daily error; or, in other words, that the watch had varied 4′ 5″,3 (eighth column), in nine months four days (ninth column). But the longitude as given by its new rate, leaves an error of only 30′ 54″ (tenth column), near thirty-one miles, or, in time, 2′ 3″,6 (eleventh column); which has been accumulating during our run from the Cape to New Zealand, or in four months, nine days (twelfth column). The thirteenth and fourteenth columns require no explanation.

TABLE

TABLE of the Rate and Error of Mr. Kendal's Watch, on board the Reſolution.

I.	II.	III.	IV.	V.	VI.	VII.	VIII.	IX.	X.	XI.	XII.	XIII.		XIV.
TIME.	PLACE.	Error of daily Rate.	Longitude by Greenwich Rate.	Longitude by new Rate.	True Longitude.	Accumulated Error by Greenwich Rate, in Space.	Accumulated Error by Greenwich Rate, in Time.	Length of Time.	Error by new Rate, in Space.	Error by new Rate, in Time.	Length of Time.	Thermometer. Gr.	Thermometer. Leaſt	Barometer.
		//	° ′ ″	° ′ ″	° ′ ″	° ′ ″	H. ′ ″	Mo.Da.	° ′ ″	H. ′ ″	Mo.Da.	Height.		
1776.														
June 11.	Greenwich - -	— 1,21	0 0 0E.	0 0 0E.	0 0 0E.									
Oct. 24.	Cape of Good Hope* - -	— 2,26	18 26 30	18 26 30	18 23 15	+0 3 15	0 0 13,0	4 23	+ 0 3 15	0 0 13,0	4 23	84	63	30, 0
1777.														
Feb. 22.	Queen Charlotte's Sound, New Zealand	— 2,91	175 25 0	174 54 25	174 23 31	1 1 29	0 4 5,3	9 4	+ 0 30 54	0 2 3,6	4 9	73	53	30, 0
May 7.	Anamooka - -	+ 0,52	186 13 26	186 13 15	185 11 18	1 2 8	0 4 8,5	11 22	+ 1 1 57	0 4 7,8	2 18	83	74	30, 1
June 7.	Anamooka - -	— 0,54	186 8 28	186 12 43	185 11 18	0 57 10	0 3 48,6	12 25	+ 1 1 25	0 4 5,6	1 3	79	73	30,15
July 1.	Tongataboo -	— 1,78	185 48 50	184 53 0	184 55 18	0 53 32	0 3 34,1	13 21	— 0 2 18	0 0 9,2	0 24	85	69	30,15
Sept. 1.	Otaheite - -	— 1,54	211 41 26	210 39 8	210 22 28	1 18 58	0 5 15,8	15 27	+ 0 16 40	0 1 6,6	2 6	90	70	30, 1
Oct. 17.	Huaheine - -	— 2,30	210 14 52	208 50 24	208 52 24	1 22 28	0 5 29,8	17 17	— 0 2 0	0 0 8,0	1 18	90½	72	29, 9
Nov. 7.	Ulietea - - -	— 1,52	209 42 54	208 25 22	208 25 22	1 17 32	0 5 10,1	18 10	0 0 0	0 0 0,0	0 21	92	70	29, 7
1778.														
April 16.	Nootka - - -	— 7, 0	235 32 45	233 56 0	233 17 8	2 15 27	0 9 1,8	24 2	+ 0 28 42	0 2 34,8	5 20	65	41	30, 0
Oct. 14.	Samganoodha -	— 8, 8	197 44 15	193 12 35	193 31 20	4 12 55	0 16 51,6	30 15	— 0 18 45	0 1 15,0	6 13	57	36	30,15
1779.														
Feb. 2.	Owhyhee - -	— 9, 6	214 7 35	203 37 22	204 0 0	10 7 35	0 40 30,3	34 14	— 0 22 38	0 1 30,5	3 27	88	70	29, 8
May 1.	Saint Peter and Saint Paul, Kamtſchatka	T. K. ſtopt.	173 36 0	159 20 0	158 43 16	14 52 44	0 59 30,9	37 18	— 0 36 44	0 2 16,9	3 4			

* Anchoring-place in Table Bay.

From

1779. October.

From this view of the time-keeper it appears, that, for near two years, it altered its rate very inconſiderably, and therefore, that its error, according to the Greenwich rate, if we had had no opportunities of correcting it, would have amounted only to $2\frac{1}{4}°$. That afterward, at King George's Sound, or Nootka, it was found to have varied exceedingly; of courſe, the longitude, by its Greenwich rate, was becoming conſiderably erroneous. About this time, it ſhould be remarked, the thermometer was varying from 65° to 41°. The greateſt alteration we ever obſerved in the watch was, during the three weeks we were cruizing to the North; in which interval, it gave the longitude of the Eaſt Cape with a difference of twenty-eight miles. I have marked the longitude of Saint Peter and Saint Paul, as given by the time-keeper, notwithſtanding it ſtopped a few days before we arrived there; this I was enabled to do, from comparing the longitude it gave the day before it ſtopped, with that given by Mr. Bayly's watch, and allowing for the error of the latter.

The uſe of ſo accurate a meaſure of time is ſufficiently evident, from its furniſhing in itſelf the means of approximating to the longitude at ſea, as may be ſeen in the above table. But, beſides this, we were enabled, by the ſame means, to give a degree of accuracy to the lunar obſervations, which they cannot otherwiſe pretend to; and, at the ſame time, by reducing a number of thoſe obſervations to one time, obtain reſults approaching ſtill nearer the truth. In ſurveying coaſts, and aſcertaining the true poſitions of capes and head-lands, it reaches the utmoſt degree of practical exactneſs. On the other hand, it is to be obſerved, that lunar obſervations, in their turn, are abſolutely neceſſary, in

1779. October.

order to reap the greateſt poſſible advantages from the time-keeper; ſince, by aſcertaining the true longitude of places, they diſcover the error of its rate. The original obſervations, that were made in the courſe of this voyage, have been publiſhed by order of the board of longitude, and to thoſe I muſt refer the reader, for his further information on this ſubject.

N. B. The obſervatories were placed on the Weſt ſide of the village of Saint Peter and Saint Paul.

Latitude deduced from meridian zenith diſtances of the ſun, and of five ſtars to the South, and five to the North of the zenith - - -	53°	0′	38″	North.
Longitude deduced from one hundred and forty-ſix ſets of lunar obſervations - - - - -	158	43	16	Eaſt.
Longitude by time-keeper, according to its Greenwich rate - -	173	36	0	
Longitude by time-keeper, according to its rate found at Owhyhee -	159	20	0	
Variation of the compaſs, by azimuths taken with three compaſſes, made by Knight, Gregory, and Martin -	6	18	40	Eaſt.
Dip of the North pole of the magnetic needle, being a mean of the obſervations taken in June and September - - -	63	5	0	

It was high water, on the full and change of the moon, at thirty-ſix minutes paſt four, and the greateſt riſe was five

five feet eight inches. The tides were very regular every twelve hours. On the coaſt, near the bay, the flood came from the South, and the time of high-water was near two hours ſooner than in the harbour of Saint Peter and Saint Paul. 1779. October.

CHAP. VI.

General Account of Kamtſchatka. — Geographical Deſcription.—Rivers.—Soil.—Climate.—Volcanos.—Hot Springs.—Productions.—Vegetables.—Animals.—Birds.—Fiſh.

1779. October.

KAMTSCHATKA is the name of a peninſula ſituated on the Eaſtern coaſt of Aſia, running nearly North and South, from 52° to 61° North latitude; the longitude of its Southern extremity being 156° 45′ Eaſt. The iſthmus, which joins it to the continent on the North, lies between the Gulf of Olutorſk and the Gulf of Penſhinſk. Its Southern extremity is Cape Lopatka, a word ſignifying the bladebone of a man, and is ſo called from its ſuppoſed reſemblance to it. The ſhape of the whole peninſula is not unlike that of a ſhoe, widening from the toe (which we may ſuppoſe to be Cape Lopatka) toward the middle, and narrowing again toward the heel, the neck of land above-mentioned connecting it with the continent. Its greateſt breadth is from the mouth of the river Tigil to that of Kamtſchatka, and is computed to be two hundred and thirty-ſix miles, from whence it narrows very gradually toward each extremity.

It is bounded on the North by the country of the Koriacks; to the South and Eaſt, by the North Pacific Ocean; and

and to the Weſt, by the ſea of Okotzk. A chain of high mountains ſtretches the whole length of the country, from North to South, dividing it nearly into two equal parts, from whence a great number of rivers take their riſe, and empty themſelves, on each ſide, into the Pacific Ocean and the ſea of Okotzk. 1779. October.

There are three rivers of much greater magnitude than the reſt; the Bolchoireka, or great river, ſo called from *bolchoia*, which ſignifies great, and *reka*, a river; the river Kamtſchatka, and the Awatſka. The firſt empties itſelf into the ſea of Okotzk, and is navigable, for the Ruſſian galliots, upward of five leagues from its mouth, or within nine miles of Bolcheretſk, a town ſituated at the conflux of the Goltſoffka and the Biſtraia, which here loſe themſelves in the Bolchoireka. The Biſtraia itſelf is no inconſiderable river. It derives its ſource from the ſame mountain with the river Kamtſchatka, and, by taking a direct contrary courſe, affords the Kamtſchadales the means of tranſporting their goods by water, in ſmall canoes, almoſt acroſs the whole peninſula. The river Kamtſchatka, after maintaining a courſe of near three hundred miles from South to North, winds round to the Eaſtward, in which direction it empties itſelf into the ocean, a little to the Southward of Kamtſchatkoi Noſs. Near the mouth of the Kamtſchatka, to the North Weſt, lies the great lake called Nerpitſch, from *nerpi*, a Kamtſchadale word, ſignifying a ſeal, with which this lake abounds. About twenty miles up the river, reckoning from the mouth of the lake, is a fort called Niſhnei Kamtſchatka *oſtrog*, where the Ruſſians have built an hoſpital and barracks, and which, we were informed, is become the principal mart in this country.

The

1779. October.

The river Awatſka ariſes from the mountains ſituated between the Bolchoireka and the Biſtraia, and running, from North Weſt to South Eaſt, a courſe of one hundred miles, falls into the bay of Awatſka. The Tigil is likewiſe a river of conſiderable ſize, riſing amidſt ſome very high mountains, which lie under the ſame parallel with Kamtſchatkoi Noſs, and, running in an even courſe from South Eaſt to North Weſt, falls into the ſea of Okotzk. All the other rivers of this peninſula, which are almoſt infinite in number, are too ſmall to deſerve a particular enumeration.

If I may judge of the ſoil, from what I ſaw of its vegetable productions, I ſhould not heſitate in pronouncing it barren in the extreme. Neither in the neighbourhood of the bay, nor in the country I traverſed on my journey to Bolcheretſk, nor in any of our hunting expeditions, did I ever meet with the ſmalleſt ſpot of ground that reſembled what in England is called a good green turf; or that ſeemed as if it could be turned to any advantage, either in the way of paſturage, or other mode of cultivation. The face of the country in general was thinly covered with ſtunted trees, having a bottom of moſs, mixed with low weak heath. The whole bore a more ſtriking reſemblance to Newfoundland, than to any other part of the world I had ever ſeen.

It muſt however be obſerved, that I ſaw at Paratounca three or four ſtacks of ſweet and very fine-looking hay; and Major Behm informed me, that many parts of the peninſula, particularly the banks of the river Kamtſchatka and the Biſtraia, produce graſs of great height and ſtrength, which they cut twice in the ſummer; and that the hay is of a ſucculent quality, and particularly well adapted to the fattening

fattening of cattle. Indeed it ſhould appear, from the ſize and fatneſs of the thirty-ſix head that were ſent down to us from the Verchnei *oſtrog*, and which, we were told, were bred and fattened in the neighbourhood, that they muſt have had the advantage of both good paſtures and meadows. For it is worth our notice, that the firſt ſupply we received, conſiſting of twenty, came to us juſt at the cloſe of the winter, and before the ſnow was off the ground, and therefore probably had taſted nothing but hay for the ſeven preceding months. And this agrees with what is related by Kraſcheninikoff, that there is no part of the country equal in fertility to that which borders on the River Kamtſchatka; and that to the North and South it is much inferior both in point of ſoil and climate. He relates, that repeated experiments have been made in the culture of oats, barley, and rye, in different quarters near this river, which have generally ſucceeded; that, in particular, ſome perſons belonging to the convent of Jakutzk, who had ſettled in that part of the country, had ſown barley there, which had yielded an extraordinary increaſe; and he has no doubt but that wheat, in many parts, particularly near the ſource of the Biſtraia and Kamtſchatka, would grow as well as in the generality of countries ſituated in the ſame latitude. Perhaps the ſuperior fertility of the country here ſpoken of may, in a great meaſure, be accounted for, from its lying in that part of the peninſula, which is by much the wideſt, and conſequently fartheſt removed from the ſea, on each ſide. The moiſt chilling fogs, and drizzling weather, which prevail almoſt perpetually along the coaſt, muſt neceſſarily render the parts adjacent very unfit for all the purpoſes of agriculture.

1779. October.

It is natural to ſuppoſe, that the ſeverity of the climate muſt

1779. October.

muſt be in due proportion to the general ſterility of the ſoil, of which it is probably the cauſe. The firſt time we ſaw this country was in the beginning of May, 1779, when the whole face of it was covered with ſnow, from ſix to eight feet deep. On the 6th, we had ſnow, with the wind from the North Eaſt. On the 8th of May, at noon, the thermometer ſtood at 32°; and, the ſame day, ſome of our men were ſent on ſhore to try to cut wood; but the ſnow was ſtill ſo deep on the ground, as to render all their attempts fruitleſs. Nor was it found practicable to proceed in this neceſſary buſineſs, with all the efforts of a very ſtout party, till the 12th, at which time, the thaw began to advance gradually. The ſides of the hills were now in ſome places free from ſnow; and, by the beginning of June, it was generally melted from the low lands. On the 15th of June, the day we ſailed out of the harbour, the thermometer had never riſen higher than 58°, nor the barometer than 30° 04′. The winds blew almoſt invariably from the Eaſtward during our ſtay, and the South Eaſt was more prevalent than any other.

On our return, the 24th of Auguſt, the foliage of the trees, and all other ſorts of vegetation, ſeemed to be in the utmoſt ſtate of perfection. For the remainder of this month, and through September, the weather was very changeable, but in no reſpect ſevere. The winds, at the beginning of the month, were, for the moſt part, Eaſterly, after which they got round to the Weſt. The greateſt height of the thermometer was 65°, the loweſt 40°. The barometer's greateſt height 30°; its loweſt 29, 3. So that, upon the whole, during this month, an equal and moderate degree of temperature prevailed. But at the beginning of October, the tops of the hills were again covered with new-fallen ſnow, the wind continuing Weſterly.

In

In computing the ſeaſons, the ſpring ought certainly not to be taken into the account. From the middle of June, to the middle of September, may be properly ſaid to conſtitute the ſummer. October may be conſidered as an autumnal month; from thence, till the middle of June, it is perfect winter. It was toward the end of May that we made our journey between Bolcheretſk and Awatſka, over the ſnow in ſledges. 1779. October.

It is ſaid that the climate, in the country adjoining to the river Kamtſchatka, is not leſs ſerene and temperate, than in many parts of Siberia that are under the ſame latitude. This variation is probably owing to the ſame cauſes, to which the ſuperior fertility of the ſoil in thoſe parts has been before attributed. But it is not in the ſterility of the ground alone that the Kamtſchadales feel the unfavourable temperature of their climate. The uncertainty of the ſummer ſeaſon ſometimes prevents their laying up a ſufficient ſtock of dried fiſh for their winter's proviſion, and the moiſture of the air cauſes worms to breed in them, which not unfrequently deſtroy the greateſt part.

I do not remember that we had either thunder or lightning during our ſtay, excepting on the night of the eruption of the *volcano*; and, from the account of the inhabitants, they are very ſeldom troubled with ſtorms of this kind, and never but in a ſlight degree. The general ſeverity of the winter, as well as the dreadful hurricanes of wind and ſnow that ſeaſon brings along with it, cannot be queſtioned, from the ſubterraneous habitations the natives are under a neceſſity of retiring to, for warmth and ſecurity. Major Behm told us, that the cold and inclemency of the winter of 1779 was ſuch, that, for ſeveral weeks, all intercourſe between the inhabitants was entirely ſtopped, every one being afraid

1779. October.

to ſtir even from one houſe to another, for fear of being froſt-bitten. This extraordinary rigour of climate, in ſo low a latitude, may be accounted for, from its being ſituated to the Eaſt of an immenſe uncultivated tract of country, and from the prevalence of the Weſterly winds, blowing over ſo extenſive and cold a continent. The extraordinary violence and impetuoſity of the winds, is attributed to the ſubterraneous fires, the ſulphureous exhalations, and the general volcanic diſpoſition of the country.

This peninſula abounds in *volcanos*, of which only three have, for ſome time paſt, been ſubject to eruptions. We have already mentioned that which is ſituated in the neighbourhood of Awatſka. Beſides this, there are others not leſs remarkable, according to the account given of them by Kraſcheninikoff.

The *volcano* of Tolbatchick is ſituated on a neck of ground between the River of Kamtſchatka and Tolbatchick. The mountain, from the ſummit of which the eruptions proceed, is of a conſiderable height, and terminates in pointed rocks. In the beginning of the year 1739, there iſſued from it a whirlwind of flames, which reduced to aſhes the foreſts of the neighbouring mountains. This was ſucceeded by a cloud of ſmoke, which ſpread over and darkened the whole country, till it was diſſipated by a ſhower of cinders, that covered the ground to the diſtance of thirty miles. Mr. Kraſcheninikoff, who was at this time on a journey from Bolchoireka to the Kamtſchatka *oſtrog*, at no great diſtance from the mountain, relates, that the eruption was preceded by an alarming ſound in the woods, which he thought the forerunner of ſome dreadful ſtorm or hurricane, till three ſhocks of an earthquake, at about a minute's interval each, convinced him of its real cauſe; but that he was hindered

dered from approaching nearer the mountain, by the cinders that fell, and prevented him from proceeding on his journey. 1779. October.

The third *volcano* is on the top of the mountain of Kamtſchatka, which is mentioned as by far the higheſt in the peninſula. A thick ſmoke never ceaſes to aſcend from its ſummit, and it has frequent eruptions, of the moſt violent and dreadful kind, ſome of which were much talked of, and ſeemed to be freſh in the memories of the Kamtſchadales.

The country is likewiſe ſaid to contain numerous ſprings of hot water. The only one that I had an opportunity of ſeeing was at Natcheekin *oſtrog*, and hath been already deſcribed. Kraſcheninikoff makes mention of ſeveral others, and alſo of two very extraordinary pits or wells, at the bottom of which the water is ſeen to boil as in a caldron, with prodigious force and impetuoſity; at the ſame time a dreadful noiſe iſſues out of them, and ſo thick a vapour, that a man cannot ſee through it.

Of the trees which fell under our notice, the principal are the birch, the poplar, the alder (with the bark of which they ſtain their leather), many ſpecies of the willow, but all ſmall; and two ſorts of dwarfiſh pines or cedars *. One of theſe grows upon the coaſt, creeping along the ground, and ſeldom exceeds two feet in height. It was of this ſort we made our eſſence for beer, and found it excellent for the purpoſe. The other grows on the mountains, to a greater height, and bears a ſmall nut or apple. We were told by the old *Toion* at St. Peter and St. Paul, that Beering, during the time he lay in that harbour, firſt taught them the uſe of

* Kraſcheninikoff ſays, that the tree here ſpoken of, is a dwarf cedar, for that there is not a pine in the peninſula.

1779. October.

the decoction of theſe pines, and that it had proved a moſt excellent remedy for the ſcurvy; but, whether from the great ſcarcity of ſugar, or from what other cauſe, we could not learn, we were ſorry to find, that it was no longer in uſe amongſt them.

The birch was by far the moſt common tree we ſaw; and of this we remarked three ſorts. Two of them fit for timber, and differing only in the texture and colour of the bark; the third of a dwarfiſh kind. This tree is applied to a great variety of uſes by the inhabitants. The liquor which, on tapping, it yields in great abundance, they drink without mixture, or any preparation, as we had frequent opportunities of obſerving, upon our journey to Bolcheretſk; and found it, ourſelves, pleaſant and refreſhing, but ſomewhat purgative. The bark they convert into veſſels, for almoſt all their domeſtic and kitchen purpoſes; and it is of the wood of this tree the ſledges and canoes are alſo made *.

The birch, and every other kind of tree in the neighbourhood of the bay, were ſmall and ſtunted; and they are obliged to go many miles up into the country, for wood of a proper ſize to work into canoes, for the principal timbers of their *balagans*, and the like uſes.

Beſides the trees above mentioned, Kraſcheninikoff relates, that the larch grows on the banks of the River Kamtſchatka, and of thoſe that fall into it, but nowhere elſe; and that there are firs in the neighbourhood of the River Berezowa; that there is likewiſe the ſervice-tree *(padus foliis*

* Kraſcheninikoff ſays, that the natives likewiſe convert the bark into a pleaſant wholeſome food, by ſtripping it off whilſt it is young and green, and cutting it into long narrow ſtripes, like *vermicelli*, drying it, and ſtewing it afterward along with their *caviar*.

annuis);

annuis); and two ſpecies of the white-thorn, one bearing a red, the other a black berry. 1779. October.

Of the ſhrub kind, as junipers, the mountain-aſh, wild roſe-trees, and raſberry-buſhes, the country produces great abundance; together with a variety of berries; blue-berries of two ſorts, round and oval; partridge-berries; cran-berries; crow-berries, and black-berries. Theſe the natives gather at proper ſeaſons, and preſerve, by boiling them into a thick jam, without ſugar. They make no inconſiderable part of their winter proviſions, and are uſed as ſauce to their dried and ſalt fiſh; of which kind of food they are unqueſtionably excellent correctives. They likewiſe eat them by themſelves, in puddings, and various other ways, and make decoctions of them for their ordinary liquor.

We met with ſeveral wholeſome vegetables in a wild ſtate, and in great quantities, ſuch as wild celery, *angelica*, chervil, garlic, and onions. Upon ſome few patches of ground in the vallies, we found excellent turnips, and turnip-radiſhes. Their garden cultivation went no farther; yet from hence I am led to conclude, that many of the hardy ſorts of vegetables (ſuch at leaſt as puſh their roots downward), like carrots, parſnips, and beet, and perhaps potatoes, would thrive tolerably well. Major Behm told me, that ſome other ſorts of kitchen vegetables had been tried, but did not anſwer; that neither any of the cabbage or lettuce kind would ever head; and that peaſe and beans ſhot up very vigorous ſtalks, flowered and podded, but the pods never filled. He likewiſe told me, that in the experiments made by himſelf at Bolcheretſk, with different ſorts of farinaceous grain, there generally came up a very high and ſtrong blade, which eared, but that the ears never yielded flour.

This

1779. October.

This ſhort account of the vegetable productions reaches to ſuch parts of the country only as fell within our notice. In the neighbourhood of the Kamtſchatka River, where (as has been obſerved) both the ſoil and climate is by much the beſt in the whole peninſula, garden culture is attended to, and probably with great ſucceſs, as appears from our having received, at the ſame time with the ſecond drove of cattle from Verchnei, a preſent of cucumbers, of very large fine turnips, celery, and ſome other garden-ſtuff, of which I do not recollect the kinds.

There are two plants, which, from the great uſe made of them, merit a particular mention and deſcription. The firſt is called by the natives the *ſaranne*; and by botaniſts, *Lilium Kamtſkatienſe flore atro rubente* *. The ſtem is about the thickneſs of that of the tulip, and grows to the height of five inches, is of a purple colour toward the bottom, and green higher up, and hath, growing from it, two tier of leaves of an oval figure, the lower conſiſting of three leaves, the uppermoſt of four, in the form of a croſs: from the top of the ſtalk grows a ſingle flower, of an exceedingly dark red colour, in ſhape reſembling the flower of the narciſſus, only much ſmaller: from the centre of the flower, riſes a ſtyle of a triangular form, and obtuſe at the end, which is ſurrounded by ſix white *ſtamina*, whoſe extremities are yellow. The root is of the bulbous kind, and reſembles, in ſhape, that of garlic, being much of the ſame ſize, but rounder, and having, like that, four or five cloves hanging together. The plant grows wild, and in conſiderable abundance: the women are employed in collecting the roots at the beginning of Auguſt, which are afterward dried in the ſun, and then laid up for uſe. On our ſecond arrival, this

* Gmelin, p. 41. Steller enumerates five different ſpecies of this plant.

harveſt

harveſt was juſt over, and had fallen much ſhort of its uſual produce. It is a common obſervation, amongſt the Kamtſchadales, that the bounty of Providence never fails them, for that ſuch ſeaſons as are moſt hurtful to the *ſaranne*, are always the moſt favourable for fiſhing; and that, on the contrary, a bad fiſhing month is always made up by the exuberance of the *ſaranne* harveſt. It is uſed in cookery in various ways. When roaſted in embers, it ſupplies the place of bread, better than any thing the country affords. After being baked in an oven, and pounded, it becomes an excellent ſubſtitute for flour and meal of every ſort, and in this form is mixed in all their ſoups, and moſt of their other diſhes. It is eſteemed extremely nouriſhing; has a pleaſant bitter taſte, and may be eaten every day without cloying. We uſed to boil theſe roots, and eat them as potatoes, either alone, or with our meat, and found them very wholeſome and pleaſant. It has been already mentioned, that this uſeful plant grows alſo at Oonalaſhka, where the roots of it are uſed, and conſtitute a conſiderable part of their food, in like manner as in Kamtſchatka. 1779. October.

The other plant alluded to is called the *ſweet graſs*; the botanical deſcription is *Heracleum Sibericum foliis pinnatis, foliolis quinis, intermediis ſeſſilibus, corollulis uniformibus.* Hort. Upſal. 65. The time, I took particular notice of it, was in May, when it was about a foot and a half high, had much the appearance of ſedge, and was covered with a white down, or duſt, which looked exceedingly like the hoar-froſt hanging upon it, and might be rubbed off: it taſted as ſweet as ſugar; but was hot and pungent. The ſtalk is hollow, and conſiſts of three or four joints; from each of which ariſe large leaves, and, when at its full growth, is ſix feet high.

This

1779. October.

This plant was formerly a principal ingredient in the cookery of moſt of the Kamtſchadale diſhes; but ſince the Ruſſians got poſſeſſion of the country, it has been almoſt entirely appropriated to the purpoſe of diſtillation. The manner in which it is gathered, prepared, and afterward diſtilled, is as follows: having cut ſuch ſtalks as have leaves growing on them, of a proper age (the principal ſtem, by the time the plant has attained its full growth, having become too dry for their purpoſe), and ſcraped off with ſhells the downy ſubſtance on their ſurface, they are laid in ſmall heaps, till they begin to ſweat and ſmell. On growing dry again, they put them into ſacks made of matting; where, after remaining a few days, they are gradually covered with a ſweet ſaccharine powder, which exudes from the hollow of the ſtalk. From thirty-ſix pounds of the plant, in this ſtate, they obtain no more than a quarter of a pound of powder. The women, whoſe province it is to collect and prepare the materials, are obliged to defend their hands with gloves whilſt they are ſcraping the ſtalks, the rind they remove being of ſo acrid a quality, as to bliſter, and even ulcerate whatever it touches.

The *ſpirit* is drawn from the plant in this ſtate by the following proceſs. After ſteeping bundles of it in hot water, they promote its fermentation in a ſmall veſſel, by the help of berries of the *gimoloſt* *, or of the *golubitſa* †, being careful to cloſe up well the mouth of the veſſel, and to keep it in a warm place whilſt the fermentation is going on, which is generally ſo violent as to occaſion a conſiderable noiſe, and to agitate the veſſel in which it is contained. After draw-

* *Lonicera pedunculis biflоris, floribus infundibili formis, baccâ ſolitariâ, oblongâ, anguloſâ.* Gmel. Flor. Sib.

† *Myrtillus grandis cæruleus.*

ing

ing off this firſt liquor, they pour on more hot water, and make a ſecond in the ſame manner. They then pour both liquor and herbs into a copper ſtill, and draw off the ſpirit after the uſual method. The liquor, thus obtained, is of the ſtrength of brandy; and is called by the natives *raka*. Two pood (ſeventy-two pounds) of the plant yield generally one *vedro* (twenty-five pints) of *raka*. 1779. October.

Steller ſays, that the ſpirit diſtilled from this plant, unſcraped, is exceedingly prejudicial to the health, and produces the moſt ſudden and terrible nervous effects.

Beſides theſe, Kraſcheninikoff mentions a variety of other plants, from whence the inhabitants prepare ſeveral decoctions; and which, being mixed with their fiſh, make palatable and wholeſome ragouts. Such as the *kipri* *, with which is brewed a pleaſant common beverage; and, by boiling this plant and the *ſweet herb* together, in the proportion of one to five of the latter, and fermenting the liquor in the ordinary way, is obtained a ſtrong and excellent vinegar. The leaves of it are uſed inſtead of tea; and the pith is dried and mixed in many of their diſhes; the *morkovai* †, which is very like *angelica*; the *kotkorica* ‡, the root of which they eat indifferently, green or dried; the *ikoum* §; the *utchichlei* ‖, which is much eaten with fiſh: with many others.

It is ſaid, that the Kamtſchadales (before their acquaintance with fire-arms), poiſoned their ſpears and arrows with the juice of the root of the *zgate* ¶; and that wounds in-

* *Epilobium.*
† *Chærephyllum ſeminibus levibus.*
‡ *Tradeſcantia fructu molli edulo.*
§ *Biſtorta foliis ovatis, oblongis, acuminatis.*
‖ *Jacobea foliis cannabis.* Steller.
¶ *Anemonoides et ranunculus.*

1779. October.

flicted by them are equally deſtructive to land and marine animals. The Tſchutſki are reported to uſe the ſame drug for this purpoſe at preſent.

I ſhall conclude this part of the natural hiſtory of Kamtſchatka with an account, from the ſame author, of three plants, which furniſh the materials of all their manufactures. The firſt is the *triticum radice perenni ſpiculis binis lanuginoſis* *, which grows in abundance along the coaſt. Of the ſtraw of this graſs they make a ſtrong ſort of matting, which they uſe not only for their floors, but for ſacks, bed-clothes, curtains, and a variety of other domeſtic purpoſes. Of the ſame materials they alſo make very neat little bags and baſkets, of different forms, and for various uſes.

The plant called *bolotnaia*, which grows in the marſhes, and reſembles *cyperoides*, is gathered in the autumn, and carded like wool, with a comb made of the bones of the ſea-ſwallow; with this, in lieu of linen and woollen clothes, they ſwathe their new-born infants, and uſe it for a covering next the ſkin whilſt they are young. It is alſo made into a kind of wadding, and uſed for the purpoſe of giving additional warmth to various parts of their clothing.

There remains ſtill a vulgar and well-known plant, which, as it contributes more effectually to their ſubſiſtence than all the reſt put together, muſt not be paſſed over in ſilence. This is the nettle; which, as the country produces neither hemp nor flax, ſupplies the materials, of which are made their fiſhing-nets; and without which they could not poſſibly ſubſiſt. For this purpoſe they cut it down in Auguſt; and, after hanging it up in bundles in the ſhade, un-

* Gmel. Sib. Tom. i. p. 119. Tab. XXV.

der

der their *balagans*, the remainder of the ſummer, treat it like hemp. They then ſpin it into thread with their fingers, and twiſt it round a ſpindle; after which they twine ſeveral threads together, according to the different purpoſes for which it may be deſigned. 1779. October.

Though there is little doubt but that many parts of this peninſula would admit of ſuch cultivation as might contribute conſiderably to the comfort of the inhabitants, yet its real riches muſt always conſiſt in the number of wild animals it produces; and no labour can ever be turned to ſo good account as what is employed upon their furrieries. The animals, therefore, which ſupply theſe, come next to be conſidered: and theſe are, the common fox; the ſtoat, or *ermine*; the *zibeline*, or ſable; the *iſatis*, or arctic fox; the varying hare; the mountain rat, or earleſs marmot; the weaſel; the glutton, or *wolverene*; the *argali*, or wild ſheep; rein-deer; bears; wolves; dogs.

The fox * is the moſt general object of the chace; and they are found in great numbers, and of variety of colours. The moſt common is the ſame in ſpecies with the European, with this variation, that the colours are more bright and ſhining; ſome are of a dark cheſnut; others are ſtriped with dark-coloured bars; others have the belly black, and the reſt of the body of a light cheſnut. Some again are of a very dark brown; ſome black; others of a ſtone colour; and there are a few quite white; but theſe laſt are very ſcarce. Their fur is exceedingly thick and fine, and of a quality much ſuperior to thoſe either of Siberia or America. A variety of artifices are made uſe of by the hunters to catch this animal, which, in all climates, ſeems to preſerve the ſame character of craftineſs and cunning.

* *Canis vulpes.*

1779. October.

Traps of different ſorts, ſome calculated to fall upon them, others to catch them by the feet, others by the head, are amongſt the moſt common; to which may be added, ſeveral ingenious contrivances for taking them in nets. Poiſoned baits are likewiſe in uſe; and the *nux vomica* is the drug principally employed for this purpoſe. Before their knowledge of the Ruſſians, by which they became acquainted with fire-arms, they alſo carried bows and arrows to the chace. But ſince that period, almoſt every Kamtſchadale is provided with a rifle-barrel gun; and, though far from being dextrous in the uſe of it, its ſuperiority over the former inſtruments he is ready to acknowledge.

The ſables * of Kamtſchatka are ſaid to be conſiderably larger than thoſe of Siberia, and their fur much thicker and brighter, though not of ſo good a black as thoſe in the neighbourhood of the Olekma and the Vitime †, a circumſtance which depreciates their value much more than their ſuperiority in other reſpects enhances it. The ſables of the Tigil and Ouka are counted the beſt in Kamtſchatka; and a pair of theſe ſometimes ſell for thirty roubles (five pounds ſterling). The worſt are thoſe of the Southern extremity. The *apparatus* of the ſable hunters conſiſt of a rifle-barrel gun of an exceedingly ſmall bore, a net, and a few bricks: with the firſt they ſhoot them when they ſee them on the trees; the net is to ſurround the hollow trees in which, when purſued, they take refuge; and the bricks are heated, and put into the cavities, in order to ſmoke them out.

* *Muſtela zibellina.*

† Rivers emptying themſelves into the Lena, near its ſource.

I muſt

I muſt refer the Reader for an account of the *iſatis* *, or arctic fox, to Mr. Pennant's Arctic Zoology, as I never ſaw either the animal or the ſkin, which I underſtand they ſet no value upon. The varying hare † is alſo neglected on the ſame account. They are in great abundance; and, as is always the caſe with this ſpecies, turn quite white during the winter. Our ſhooting parties ſaw ſeveral of this colour the beginning of May, but found them ſo ſhy, that they were not able to get within gun-ſhot. 1779. October.

The mountain-rat, or earleſs marmot ‡, is a beautiful little animal, conſiderably ſmaller than a ſquirrel, and, like it, feeds upon roots, berries, the cedar-apple, &c. which it eats ſitting upon its hind-legs, and holding them up to its mouth with the paws. Its ſkin is much valued by the Kamtſchadales, is both warm and light, and of a bright ſhining colour, forming, like the plumage of ſome birds, various colours when viewed in different lights.

The ſtoat, or *ermine* §, is here held in no eſtimation, and, conſequently, never engages the attention of the hunters, becauſe, as I have heard, its fur is of an ordinary kind. I ſaw many of theſe little animals running about; and we bought ſeveral of their ſkins, which were of a bad white, and of a dirty yellow toward the belly. The common weaſel ‖ is alſo neglected, and for the ſame reaſon.

On the contrary, the ſkin of the glutton, or *wolverene* ¶, is here in the higheſt repute; inſomuch, that a Kamtſchadale looks upon himſelf as moſt richly attired, when a ſmall quantity of this fur is ſeen upon him. The women adorn their hair with its pats, which are white, and con-

* *Canis lagopus.* † *Lepus timidus.* ‡ *Mus citellus.*
§ *Muſtela erminea.* ‖ *Muſtela nivalis.* ¶ *Urſus luſcus.*

ſidered

1779. October.

ſidered as an extraordinary piece of finery; and they have a ſuperſtitious opinion, that the angels are clad with the ſkins of thoſe animals. It is ſaid, that this creature is eaſily tamed, and taught a number of pleaſant tricks *.

Having already had occaſion to ſpeak, as fully as my own knowledge enables me, of the bears, and the method of killing them, I ſhall only here obſerve, that all thoſe I ſaw were of a dun brown colour; that they are generally ſeen in companies of four or five together; that the time they are moſt abroad is during the ſeaſon that the fiſh (which is their principal food) are puſhing up from the ſea into the rivers, and that they are ſeldom viſible in the winter months †.

Their ſkins are exceedingly uſeful. They make both excellent warm matraſſes, and coverings for their beds; comfortable bonnets and gloves, and good collars for the dogs harneſs. Their fleſh, and particularly the fat, is conſidered as great delicacies.

The wolves are only ſeen in the winter; at which ſeaſon they prowl about, as I was told, in large companies, in ſearch of prey.

There are rein-deer, both wild and tame, in ſeveral parts of the peninſula, but none in the neighbourhood of Awatſka. It is ſomewhat ſingular, that this nation ſhould never

* Kraſcheninikoff relates, that this ſmall animal frequently deſtroys deer, and the wild mountain-ſheep, in the following way: they ſcatter at the bottom of trees bark and moſs, which thoſe animals are fond of; and whilſt they are picking it up, drop ſuddenly upon them, and faſtening behind the head, ſuck out their eyes.

† The Koriacks make uſe of a very ſimple method of catching bears. They ſuſpend, between the forks of a tree, a running nooſe, within which they faſten a bait, which the animal, endeavouring to pull away, is caught ſometimes by the neck, and ſometimes by the paw.

have

1779. October.

have uſed the rein-deer for the purpoſes of carriage, in the ſame manner, as their neighbours, both to the North and the Eaſtward. Their dogs, indeed, ſeem fully ſufficient for all the demands of the natives in their preſent ſtate; and the breed of Ruſſian horſes will, probably, increaſe with the future neceſſities of the country. But when it is recollected, that the uſe of dogs, in a great meaſure, precludes them from the advantage of bringing up any other domeſtic animals, it will appear the more extraordinary, that they ſhould not have adopted the ſervices of an animal ſo much more gentle as well as powerful.

The *argali*, or wild mountain-ſheep *, an animal, I believe, unknown in Europe (except in Corſica and Sardinia), is here in great plenty. Its ſkin is like the deer's, but in gait and general appearance, it partakes more of the goat. It has two large twiſted horns, ſometimes weighing, when at full growth, from twenty-five to thirty pounds, which, in running, it reſts upon its back. Theſe creatures are exceedingly nimble and ſwift, haunt only the moſt craggy and mountainous parts, and make their way among the ſteepeſt rocks with an agility that is aſtoniſhing. The natives work their horns into ſpoons, and ſmall cups and platters; and have frequently one of a ſmaller ſize hanging to a belt, which ſerves them to drink out of in their hunting expeditions. This animal is gregarious. I frequently taſted the fleſh of them, and thought it had a very ſweet and delicate flavour; but never had an opportunity of ſeeing one alive. I muſt, therefore, refer the Reader for a particular deſcription of this beautiful animal (for ſuch it is ſaid to be), to the Memoirs of the Academy of Peterſburg, Tom. iv. tab. xiii.

* *Capra ammon*, or wild ſheep. *Arct. Zool.* i. p. 12.

I have

1779. October.

I have already obſerved, that the dogs of this country are, in ſhape and mien, exceedingly like the Pomeranian, with this difference, that they are a great deal larger, and the hair ſomewhat coarſer. They are of a variety of colours; but the moſt general is a light dun, or dirty cream-colour. Toward the end of May, they are all turned looſe, and left to provide for themſelves through the ſummer, being ſure to return to their reſpective homes when the ſnow begins to fall. Their food, in the winter, conſiſts entirely of the head, entrails, and back bones of ſalmon; which are put aſide, and dried for that purpoſe; and with this diet they are fed but ſparingly. The number of dogs muſt needs be very great, ſince five are yoked to a ſledge, and a ſledge carries but one perſon; ſo that on our journey to Bolcheretſk, we required no fewer than an hundred and thirty-nine, at the two ſtages of Karatchin and Natcheekin. It is alſo to be remarked, that they never make uſe of bitches for the draft, nor dogs, but thoſe that are cut. The whelps are trained to this buſineſs, by being tied to ſtakes with light leathern thongs, which are made to ſtretch, and having their victuals placed at a proper diſtance out of their reach; ſo that, by conſtantly pulling and labouring, in order to come at their food, they acquire both the ſtrength of limbs, and the habit of drawing, that are neceſſary for their future deſtination.

The coaſt and bays of this country are frequented by almoſt every kind of Northern ſea-fowl; and amongſt the reſt are the ſea-eagles, but not, as at Oonalaſhka, in great numbers. The rivers inland (if I may judge from what I ſaw in our journey to Bolcheretſk), are ſtored with numerous flocks of wild-ducks of various ſpecies; one kind of which, in particular, has a moſt beautiful plumage, and is called, by

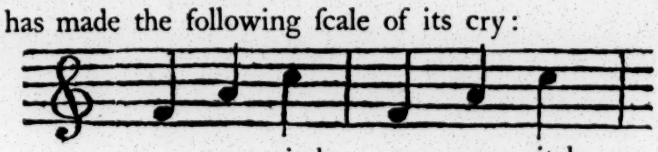
by the natives, *a-an-gitche*, a word intended to expreſs its cry, which is not leſs ſingular than agreeable, conſiſting of three diſtinct notes, riſing, at equal intervals, above each other *. 1779. October.

There is another ſpecies called the mountain duck †, which, Steller ſays, is peculiar to Kamtſchatka. The drake is covered with plumage of extraordinary beauty. Beſides theſe, we obſerved a variety of other water-fowl, which, from their ſize, ſeemed to be of the wild-gooſe kind.

In the woods through which we paſſed, were ſeen ſeveral eagles of a prodigious ſize; but of what ſpecies they were, I cannot pretend to determine. Theſe are ſaid to be of three different ſorts: the black eagle, with a white head, tail, and legs ‡; of which the eaglets are as white as ſnow: the white eagle, ſo called, though, in fact, it is of a light grey: and the lead, or ſtone coloured eagle §, which is the moſt common; and probably thoſe I ſaw were of this ſort. Of the hawk, falcon, and buſtard kind, there are great numbers.

This country likewiſe affords woodcocks, ſnipes, and two ſorts of grouſe, or moor-game. Swans are alſo ſaid to be in great plenty; and, in their entertainments, generally to make a part of the repaſt, though I do not remember to have ſeen one on any occaſion. The vaſt abundance of wild-fowl, with which the country is ſtored, was manifeſt

* Mr. Steller has made the following ſcale of its cry:



a - an - gitche a - an - gitche.

For a further account of this bird, I muſt refer the Reader to Kraſcheninikoff Vol. ii. part 4.

† *Anas picta, capite pulchrè faſciato.* Steller.

‡ *Falco leucocephalus.* § *Vultur albiulla.*

1779. October. from the numerous preſents we received from the *Toion* of St. Peter and St. Paul; and which ſometimes conſiſted of twenty brace.

We met with no amphibious ſea-animals on the coaſt, except ſeals, with which the bay of Awatſka ſwarmed; as they were, at this time, in purſuit of the ſalmon that were collecting in ſhoals, and ready to aſcend the rivers. Some of them are ſaid to purſue the fiſh into the freſh water, and to be found in moſt of the lakes which communicate with the ſea.

The ſea-otters * are exactly the ſame with thoſe we met with at Nootka Sound, which have been already fully deſcribed, and where they are in great plenty. They are alſo ſaid to have been formerly in equal abundance here; but, ſince the Ruſſians have opened a trade for their ſkins to China, where they are ſold at a price much beyond that of any other kind of fur, they have been hunted almoſt entirely out of the country. Amongſt the Kurile iſlands they are ſtill caught, though in no great numbers; but are of a ſuperior quality to thoſe of Kamtſchatka, or the American coaſt.

We are informed, that, on Mednoi and Beering's Iſland, ſcarce a ſea-otter is now to be found; though it appears from Muller †, that, in his time, they were exceedingly plentiful.

The Ruſſian voyagers make mention of a great variety of amphibious ſea-animals, which are ſaid to frequent theſe coaſts: the reaſon why we ſaw no other kinds might be, that this was the ſeaſon of their migration.

Not having it in my power to treat theſe articles more fully, I conclude them with the leſs regret, ſince the inge-

* *Muſtela lutris.* † Engliſh tranſlation, p. 59.

nious

nious Mr. Pennant has a work, almoſt ready for publication, intitled *Arctic Zoology*; in which the learned will receive full information concerning the animals of this peninſula. This gentleman has very obligingly communicated to me his Catalogue of Arctic Animals, with references to his Work, and permiſſion to inſert it. It will be found at the end of this Chapter; and I feel myſelf extremely happy in laying it before the Reader, and thereby preſenting him with, what could have been furniſhed from no other quarter, one entire view of Kamtſchadale zoology. 1779. October.

Fiſh may be conſidered as the ſtaple article of food with which Providence hath ſupplied the inhabitants of this peninſula; who, in general, muſt never expect to draw any conſiderable part of their ſuſtenance either from grain or cattle. It is true, the ſoil, as has been remarked, affords ſome good and nouriſhing roots, and every part of the country abounds in berries; but though theſe alone would be inſufficient for the ſupport of the people, yet, at the ſame time, they are neceſſary correctives of the putreſcent quality of their dried fiſh. In ſhort, fiſh may, with much greater juſtice, be here called the ſtaff of life, than bread is in other countries; ſince it appears, that neither the inhabitants, nor the only domeſtic animal they have, the dog, could exiſt without it.

Whales are frequently ſeen, both in the ſea of Okotzk, and on the ſide of the Eaſtern ocean, and, when caught, are turned to a variety of uſes. Of the ſkin they make the ſoles of their ſhoes, and ſtraps and thongs for various other purpoſes. The fleſh they eat, and the fat is carefully ſtored, both for kitchen uſe, and for their lamps. The whiſkers are found to be the beſt materials for ſewing to-

1779. October. gether the ſeams of their canoes; they likewiſe make nets of them for the larger kind of fiſh; and with the under jaw-bones their ſledges are ſhod. They likewiſe work the bones into knives; and formerly the chains with which their dogs are tied, were made of that material, though at preſent iron ones are generally uſed. The inteſtines they clean, then blow and dry like bladders, and it is in theſe their oil and greaſe is ſtored; and of the nerves and veins, which are both ſtrong, and ſlip readily, they make excellent ſnares; ſo that there is no part of the whale which here does not find its uſe.

From the middle of May, till our departure on the 24th of June, we caught great quantities of excellent flat fiſh, trout, and herrings. Upward of three hundred of the former, beſides a number of ſea-trout, were dragged out at one haul of the ſeine, the 15th of May. Theſe flat fiſh are firm, and of a good flavour, ſtudded upon the back with round prickly knobs, like turbot, and ſtreaked with dark brown lines, running from the head toward the tail. About the end of May the firſt herring ſeaſon begins. They approach in great ſhoals, but do not remain long on the coaſt. They had entirely left the bay before we ſailed out of it the firſt time, but were beginning to reviſit it again in October. It has been already mentioned, that the herrings were remarkably fine and large, and that we filled a great part of our empty caſks with them. The beginning of June, large quantities of excellent cod were taken; a part of which were likewiſe ſalted. We caught too, at different times, numbers of ſmall fiſh, much reſembling a ſmelt, and once drew out a wolf-fiſh.

Notwithſtanding this abundance of flat-fiſh, cod, and herring, it is on the ſalmon fiſhery alone that the Kamtſchadales

1779. October.

ſchadales depend for their winter proviſions. Of theſe, it is ſaid, by naturaliſts, there are to be found, on this coaſt, all the different ſpecies that are known to exiſt, and which the natives formerly characterized by the different months in which they aſcend the rivers. They ſay too, that though the ſhoals of different ſorts are ſeen to mount the rivers at the ſame time, yet they never mix with each other; that they always return to the ſame river in which they were bred, but not till the third ſummer; that neither the male nor female live to regain the ſea; that certain ſpecies frequent certain rivers, and are never found in others, though they empty themſelves nearly at the ſame place.

The firſt ſhoals of ſalmon begin to enter the mouth of the Awatſka about the middle of May; and this kind, which is called by the Kamtſchadales *Tchavitſi* *, is the largeſt and moſt valued. Their length is generally about three feet and a half; they are very deep in proportion, and their average weight is from thirty to forty pounds. The tail is not forked, but ſtraight. The back is of a dark blue, ſpotted with black; in other reſpects they are much like our common ſalmon. They aſcend the river with extraordinary velocity, inſomuch that the water is ſenſibly agitated by their motion; and the Kamtſchadales, who are always on the watch for them about the time they are expected, judge of their approach by this circumſtance, and immediately let drop their nets before them. We were preſented with one of the firſt that was caught, and given to underſtand that it was the greateſt compliment that could be paid us. Kraſcheninikoff relates, that formerly

* Conſult the introduction to the *Arctic Zoology* for a full account of the ſalmon tribe, which frequents *Kamtſchatka*.

the

1779. October.

the Kamtſchadales made a point of eating the firſt fiſh they took, with great rejoicings, and a variety of ſuperſtitious ceremonies; and that after the Ruſſians became their maſters, it was for a long time a conſtant ſubject of quarrel between them, to whom the firſt ſhould belong. The ſeaſon for fiſhing, for this ſpecies, laſts from the middle of May till the end of June.

The other ſort is of a ſmaller kind, weighing only from eight to ſixteen pounds; they are known by the general name of the red fiſh, and begin to collect in the bays, and at the mouths of the rivers, the beginning of June; from which time, till the end of September, they are caught in great quantities both upon the Eaſtern and Weſtern coaſt, where any freſh water falls into the ſea, and likewiſe all along the courſe of the rivers, to their very ſource. The manner in which they draw their nets within the bay of Awatſka, is as follows: They tie one end of the net to a large ſtone at the water's edge, they then puſh off in a canoe about twenty yards in a right line, dropping their net as they advance, after which they turn and run out the remainder of the net in a line parallel to the ſhore; in this poſition they wait, concealing themſelves very carefully in the boat, and keeping a ſharp look-out for the fiſh, which always direct their courſe cloſe in with the ſhore, and whoſe approach is announced by a rippling in the water, till they find that the ſhoal has advanced beyond the boat, when they ſhoot the canoe to ſhore in a direct line, and never fail of incloſing their prey. Seldom more than two men are employed to a net, who haul with facility, in this manner, ſeines larger than ours, to which we appoint a dozen. We at firſt met with very poor ſucceſs in our own method of hauling; but after the Kamtſchadales had very kindly

kindly put us in the way, we were not leſs ſucceſsful than themſelves. In the rivers, they ſhoot one net acroſs, and haul another down the ſtream to it. 1779. October.

The lakes that have a communication with the ſea, which was the caſe of all thoſe that I ſaw, abound with fiſh, that have very much the reſemblance of ſmall ſalmon, and are from four to ſix pounds weight. I could not underſtand that the inhabitants thought it worth their while to fiſh for them. As theſe lakes are not deep, they become an eaſy prey to the bears and dogs during the ſummer; and, if I might judge from the quantity of bones to be ſeen upon the banks, they devour vaſt numbers of them.

The inhabitants, for the moſt part, dry their ſalmon, and ſalt very little of it. Each fiſh is cut into three pieces, the belly-piece being firſt taken off, and afterward a ſlice along each ſide the back-bone. The former of theſe are dried and ſmoked, and eſteemed the fineſt part of the fiſh, and ſold, when we were at St. Peter and St. Paul's, at the rate of one hundred for a rouble. The latter are dried in the air, and either eaten whole as bread, or reduced to powder, of which they make paſte and cakes, that are not unpleaſant to the taſte. The head, tail, and bones, are hung up and dried for winter proviſion for the dogs.

1779. October.

List of the Animals found in Kamtschatka, communicated by Mr. PENNANT *.

**	Argali, wild sheep, Arct. Zool. Vol. I. p. 12.		*Capra ammon*, Lin. Syst.		97.
	Ibex, *or* wild goat	16.	*Capra ibex*		90.
**	Rein	22.	*Cervus tarandus*		93.
**	Wolf	38.	*Canis lupus*		58.
**	Dog	40.			
**	Arctic fox	42.	*Canis lagopus*		59.
**	European fox	45.	*Canis vulpes*		59.
	a. black	46.			
	b. cross	ib.			
**	Polar bear, in the Frozen sea only	55.	*Ursus arctos*		69.
**	Bear	57.	*Ursus arctos*		
**	Wolverene	66.	*Ursus luscus*		71.
**	Common weasel	75.	*Mustela nivalis*		69.
**	Stoat, *or* ermine	ibid.	*Mustela erminea*		68.
**	Sable	79.	*Mustela zibellina*		68.
	Common otter	86.	*Mustela lutra*		66.
**	Sea otter	88.	*Mustela lutris*		66.
**	Varying hare	94.	*Lepus timidus*		
	Alpine hare	97.			
**	Earless marmot	113.	*Mus citellus*		113.
	Bobak marmot	115.			
	Water rat	130.	*Mus amphibius*		82.
	Common mouse	131.	*Mus musculus*		83.

* The quadrupeds and birds mentioned in this part of the voyage are marked in this list with a double asterisk.

Oeconomic

1779. October.

	Oeconomic mouſe - -	134.		
	Red mouſe - -	136.		
	Ichelag mouſe - -	138.		
	Fœtid ſhrew - -	139.	*Sorex araneus* - -	74.
**	Walrus. Icy ſea - -	144..	*Trichechus roſmarus* -	49.
**	Common ſeal - -	151.	*Phoca vitulina* - -	56.
	Great ſeal - - -	159.		
	Leporine ſeal - -	161.		
	Harp ſeal - - -	163.		
	Rubbon ſeal. Kurile iſles	165.		
	Urſine ſeal - -	ibid.	*Phoca urſina* - -	58.
	Leonine ſeal - -	172.		
**	Whale-tailed manati -	177.		

There were no domeſtic animals in Kamtſchatka, till they were introduced by the Ruſſians. The dogs, which ſeem to be of wolfiſh deſcent, are aboriginal.

B I R D S.

LAND BIRDS.

I.	Sea eagle. Vol. II. p.	194.	*Falco oſſifragus* - -	124.
**	Cinereous eagle - -	214.	*Vultur albiulla* - -	123.
**	White-headed eagle -	196.	*Falco leucocephalus* -	ibid.
	Crying eagle - -	215.	(Latham, I. 38.)	
	Oſprey - - -	199.	*Falco haliætus* - -	129.
	Peregrine falcon - -	202.	(Latham, I. 73. *)	
	Goſhawk - - -	204.	*Falco palumbarius* -	130.
II.	Eagle owl - -	228.	*Strix bubo* - -	131.
	Snowy owl - -	233.	*Strix nyctea* - -	132.

* The birds which are not deſcribed by Linnæus, are referred to the Hiſtory of Birds, now publiſhing by Mr. Latham, Surgeon, in Dartford, Kent.

1779. October.	III.	Raven	246.	*Corvus corax*	155.
		Magpye	147.	*Corvus pica*	157.
		Nutcracker	252.	*Corvus caryocatactes*	157.
	IV.	Cuckoo	266.	*Cuculus canorus*	168.
	V.	Wryneck	267.	*Jynx torquilla*	172.
	VI.	Nuthatch	281.	*Sitta Europea*	177.
	VII.	White grous	308.	*Tetrao lagopus*	274.
		Wood grous	312.	*Tetrao urogallus*	273.
	VIII.	Water ouzel	332.	*Sturnus cinclus*	
	IX.	Fieldfare	340.	*Turdus pilaris*	291.
		Redwing thruſh	341.	*Turdus iliacus*	292.
		Kamtſchatkan	343.	(Latham, III. 28.)	
	X.	Greenfinch	353.	*Loxia chloris*	304.
	XI.	Golden bunting	367.	(Latham, II. 201.)	
	XII.	Leſſer red-headed linnet	379.	(Latham, II. 305.)	
	XIII.	Dun fly-catcher	390.	(Latham, II. 351.)	
	XIV.	Sky lark	394. A.	*Alauda arvenſis*	287.
		Wood lark	395. B.	*Alauda arborea*	287.
	XV.	White wagtail	396. E.	*Motacilla alba*	331.
		Yellow wagtail	396. F.	*Motacilla flava*	331.
		Tſchutſki wagtail	397. H.	(Latham, IV. 403.)	
	XVI.	Yellow wren	413.	*Motacilla trochilus*	338.
		Redſtart	416.	*Motacilla phœnicurus*	335.
		Longbilled	420.		
		Stapazina	421.	*Motacilla ſtapazina*	331.
		Awatſka	422.		
	XVII.	Marſh titmouſe	427.	*Parus paluſtris*	341.
	XVIII.	Chimney ſwallow	429.	*Hirundo ruſtica*	343.
		Martin	430.	*Hirundo urbica*	344.
		Sand martin	430.	*Hirundo riparia*	344.
	XIX.	European goatſucker	437.	*Caprimulgus Europeus*	346.

WATER FOWL.

1779. October.

Cloven-footed Water Fowl.

Crane - -	P. 453. A.	*Ardea grus* - -	334.
Curlew - -	P. 462. A.	*Scolopax arquata* -	242.
Whimbrel - -	P. 462. B.	*Scolopax phæopus* -	243.
Common ſandpiper	No. 388.	*Tringa hypoleucos* -	250.
Gambet - -	No. 394.	*Tringa gambetta* -	248.
Golden plover -	No. 399.	*Charadrius pluvialis* -	254.
Pied oyſter-catcher	No.	*Hæmatopus oſtralegus* -	257.

With pinnated Feet.

Plain phalarope

With webbed Feet.

Wandering albatroſs	No. 423.	*Diomedea exulans* - -	214.
Razor-bill auk -	No. 425.	*Alca torda* - -	210.
Puffin - -	No. 427.	*Alca arctica* - -	211.
Antient - -	No. 430.		
Pygmy - -	No. 431.		
Tufted - -	No. 432.		
Parroquet - -	No. 433.		
Creſted - -	No. 434.		
Duſky - -	No. 435.		
Fooliſh guillemot -	No. 436.	*Colymbus troille* - -	220.
Black guillemot -	No. 437.	*Colymbus grylle* - -	220.
Marbled guillemot	No. 438.		
Imber diver - -	No. 440.	*Colymbus immer* - -	222.
Speckled diver -	No. 441.		
Red-throated diver	No. 443.	*Colymbus ſeptentrionalis*	220.

1779. October.

Great tern - -	No. 448.	*Sterna hirundo*		
Kamtſchatkan -	P. 525.A.			
Black-headed gull	No. 455.	*Larus ridibundus*	-	225.
Kittiwake gull -	No. 456.	*Larus riſſa* -	-	224.
Ivory gull - -	No. 457.			
Arctic gull - -	No. 459.			
Tarrock - -	P. 533.D.	*Larus tridactylus*	-	224.
Red-legged - -	P. 533.E.			
Fulmar petrel -	No. 464.	*Procellaria glacialis*	-	213.
Stormy petrel -	No. 464.	*Procellaria pelagica*	-	212.
Kurile petrel - -	P. 536.A.			
Blue petrel *.	Preface.			
Gooſander merganſer	No. 465.	*Mergus merganſer*	-	208.
Smew - -	No. 468.	*Mergus albellus* -	-	209.
Whiſtling ſwan -	No. 469.	*Anas Cygnus ferus*	-	194.A.
Great gooſe - -	P. 570.			
Chineſe gooſe -	P. 571.	*Anas cygnoides* -	-	194.B.
Snow gooſe - -	No. 477.			
Brent gooſe - -	No. 478.	*Anas bernicla* -	-	198.
Eider duck - -	No. 480.	*Anas molliſſima* -	-	198.
Black duck - -	No. 483.	*Anas ſpectabilis* -	-	195.
Velvet duck - -	No. 481.	*Anas fuſca* -	-	196.
Shoveler - -	No. 485.	*Anas clypeata* -	-	200.
Golden eye - -	No. 486.	*Anas clangula* -	-	201.
Harlequin - -	No. 490.	*Anas hiſtrionica*	-	204.
Mallard - -	No. 494.	*Anas boſchas* -	-	205.
** Weſtern - -	No. 497.			
Pintail - -	No. 500.	*Anas acuta* -	-	202.
** Longtailed - -	No. 501.	*Anas glacialis* -	-	203.

* I never ſaw this, but it is mentioned by Mr. Ellis. I had omitted it in my zoologic part; but it is mentioned in p. cxlviii. of the introduction.

Morillon - -	P. 573. F.	*Anas glaucion* - -	201.	1779. October.
Shieldrake - -	P. 572. D.	*Anas tadorna* - -	195.	
Tufted - -	P. 573. G.	*Anas fuligula* - -	207.	
Falcated - -	P. 574. I.			
Garganey - -	P. 576. Q.	*Anas querquedula* -	263.	
Teal - -	P. 577. P.	*Anas crecia* - -	204.	
Corvorant - -	No. 509.	*Pelecanus carbo* - -	216.	
Violet corvorant -	P. 584. B.			
Red-faced corvorant	P. 584. C.			

CHAP.

CHAP. VII.

General Account of Kamtſchatka continued.—Of the Inhabitants.—Origin of the Kamtſchadales.—Diſcovered by the Ruſſians.—Abſtract of their Hiſtory.—Numbers.—Preſent State.—Of the Ruſſian Commerce in Kamtſchatka.—Of the Kamtſchadale Habitations and Dreſs.—Of the Kurile Iſlands.—The Koreki.—The Tſchutſki.

1779. October.

THE preſent inhabitants of Kamtſchatka are of three ſorts. The natives, or Kamtſchadales. The Ruſſians and Coſſacks: and a mixture of theſe two by marriage.

Mr. Steller, who reſided ſome time in this country, and ſeems to have taken great pains to gain information on this ſubject, is perſuaded, that the true Kamtſchadales are a people of great antiquity, and have for many ages inhabited this peninſula; and that they are originally deſcended from the Mungalians, and not either from the Tonguſian Tartars, as ſome, or the Japaneſe, as others have imagined.

The principal arguments, by which he ſupports theſe opinions, are: That there exiſts not among them the trace of a tradition of their having migrated from any other country: that they believe themſelves to have been created and placed in this very ſpot by their god Koutkou: that they

are

are the moſt favoured of his creatures; the moſt fortunate and happy of beings; and that their country is ſuperior to all others, affording means of gratification far beyond what are any where elſe to be met with: that they have a perfect knowledge of all the plants of the country, their virtues and uſes, which could not be acquired in a ſhort time; that their inſtruments and houſehold utenſils differ greatly from thoſe of any other nation, and are made with an extraordinary degree of neatneſs and dexterity, which implies that they are both of their own invention, and have been long in arriving at ſo great perfection: that antecedently to the arrival of the Ruſſians and Coſſacks among them, they had not the ſmalleſt knowledge of any people, except the Koreki: that it is but of late they had an intercourſe with the Kuriles, and ſtill later (and happened by means of a veſſel being ſhipwrecked on their coaſt) that they knew any thing of the Japaneſe; and, laſtly, that the country was very populous, at the time the Ruſſians firſt got footing in it. 1779. October.

The reaſons he alleges for ſuppoſing them to be originally deſcended from the Mungalians, are: That many words in their language have terminations ſimilar to thoſe of the Mungalian Chineſe, ſuch as, *ong*, *ing*, *oing*, *tching*, *tcha*, *tchoing*, *kſi*, *kſung*, &c.; and moreover, that the ſame principle of inflexion or derivation obtains in both languages: that they are in general under-ſized, as are the Mungalians: that their complexion, like theirs, is ſwarthy: that they have black hair, little beard, the face broad, the noſe ſhort and flat, the eyes ſmall and ſunk, the eye-brows thin, the belly pendant, the legs ſmall; all which are peculiarities that are to be found among the Mungalians. From the whole of which he draws this concluſion, that they fled for ſafety

1779. October.

ſafety to this peninſula, from the rapid advances of the Eaſtern conquerors; as the Laplanders, the Samoides, &c. were compelled to retreat to the extremities of the North, by the Europeans.

The Ruſſians having extended their conqueſts, and eſtabliſhed poſts and colonies along that immenſe extent of coaſt of the frozen ſea, from the Jeneſei to the Anadir, appointed commiſſaries for the purpoſe of exploring and ſubjecting the countries ſtill farther Eaſtward. They ſoon became acquainted with the wandering Koriacs inhabiting the North and North Eaſt coaſt of the ſea of Okotzk, and without difficulty made them tributary. Theſe being the immediate neighbours of the Kamtſchadales, and likewiſe in the habits of bartering with them, a knowledge of Kamtſchatka followed of courſe.

The honour of the firſt diſcovery is given to Feodot Alexeieff, a merchant, who is ſaid to have ſailed from the river Kovyma, round the peninſula of the Tſchutſki, in company with ſeven other veſſels, about the year 1648. The tradition goes, that being ſeparated from the reſt by a ſtorm, near the Tſchukotſkoi Noſs, he was driven upon the coaſt of Kamtſchatka, where he wintered; and the ſummer following coaſted round the promontory of Lopatka, into the ſea of Okotzk, and entered the mouth of the Tigil; but that he and his companions were cut off by the Koriacs, in endeavouring to paſs from thence by land to the Anadirſk. This, in part, is corroborated by the accounts of Simeon Deſhneff, who commanded one of the ſeven veſſels, and was thrown on ſhore at the mouth of the Anadir. Be this as it may, ſince theſe diſcoverers, if ſuch they were, did not live to make any report of what they had done, Volodimir Atlaſſoff, a Coſſack,

ſack, ſtands for the firſt acknowledged diſcoverer of Kamtſchatka *.

1779. October.

This perſon was ſent, in the year 1697, from the fort Jakutzk to the Anadirſk, in the quality of commiſſary, with inſtructions to call in the aſſiſtance of the Koriacs, with a view to the diſcovery of countries beyond theirs, and to the ſubjecting them to a tribute. In 1699, he penetrated, with about ſixty Ruſſian ſoldiers, and the ſame number of Coſſacks, into the heart of the peninſula, gained the Tigil, and from thence levying a tribute in furs, in his progreſs croſſed over to the River Kamtſchatka, on which he built the higher Kamtſchatka *oſtrog*, called Verchnei, where he left a garriſon of ſixteen Coſſacks, and returned to Jakutzk in 1700, with an immenſe quantity of rare and valuable tributary furs. Theſe he had the good ſenſe and policy to accompany to Moſcow, and, in recompence for his ſervices, was appointed Commander of the fort of Jakutzk, with farther orders to repair again to Kamtſchatka, having firſt drawn from the garriſon at Tobolſk a reinforcement of a hundred Coſſacks, with ammunition, and whatever elſe could give efficacy to the completion and ſettlement of his late diſcoveries. Advancing with this force toward the Anadirſk, he fell in with a bark on the River † Tunguſka, laden with Chineſe merchandize, which he pillaged; and, in conſequence of a remonſtrance from the ſufferers to the Ruſſian court, he was ſeized upon at Jakutzk, and thrown into priſon.

* It is proper to remark, that Atlaſſoff ſent an advanced party, under the command of a ſubaltern, called Lucas Moloſkoff, who certainly penetrated into Kamtſchatka, and returned with an account of his ſucceſs, before Atlaſſoff ſet out, and is therefore not unjuſtly mentioned as the Diſcoverer of Kamtſchatka.

† This river empties itſelf into the Jeneſei.

1779. October.

In the mean time, Potop Serioukoff, who had been left by Atlaſſoff, kept peaceable poſſeſſion of the garriſon of Verchnei; and though he had not a ſufficient force to compel the payment of a tribute from the natives, yet by his management and conciliating diſpoſition, he continued to carry on an advantageous traffic with them as a merchant. On his return to the Anadirſk, with the general good-will of the natives of Kamtſchatka, himſelf and party were attacked by the Koriacs, and unfortunately all cut off. This happened about 1703; and ſeveral other ſucceſſive commiſſaries were ſent into Kamtſchatka, with various ſucceſs, during the diſgrace and trial of Atlaſſoff.

In 1706, Atlaſſoff was reinſtated in his command, and appointed to conduct a ſecond expedition into Kamtſchatka, with inſtructions to gain upon the natives by all peaceable means, but on no pretence to have recourſe to force and compulſion: but, inſtead of attending to his orders, he not only, by repeated acts of cruelty and injuſtice, made the natives exceedingly hoſtile and averſe to their new governors, but likewiſe ſo far alienated the affections of his own people, that it ended in a mutiny of the Coſſacks, and their demand of another commander. The Coſſacks having carried their point, in diſplacing Atlaſſoff, ſeized upon his effects; and, after once taſting the ſweets of plunder, and of living without diſcipline or controul, in vain did his ſucceſſors attempt to reduce them to military diſcipline and ſubjection. Three ſucceſſive commanders were aſſaſſinated in their turn; and the Coſſacks, being thus in open rebellion to the Ruſſian government, and with arms in their hands, were let looſe upon the natives. The hiſtory of this country from that period, till the grand revolt of the Kamtſchadales in 1731, preſents one unvaried detail of maſſacres,

1779. October.

ſacres, revolts, and ſavage and ſanguinary rencounters between ſmall parties, from one end of the peninſula to the other.

What led to this revolt, was the diſcovery of a paſſage from Okotzk to the Bolchoireka, which was firſt made by Coſmo Sokoloff, in the year 1715. Hitherto the Ruſſians had no entrance into the country, but on the ſide of Anadirſk; ſo that the natives had frequent opportunities of both plundering the tribute, as it was carried by ſo long a journey out of the peninſula, and haraſſing the troops in their march into it. But by the diſcovery of this communication, there exiſted a ſafe and ſpeedy means, as well of exporting the tribute, as of importing troops and military ſtores into the very heart of the country; which the natives eaſily ſaw gave the Ruſſians ſo great an advantage, as muſt ſoon confirm their dominion, and therefore determined them to make one grand and immediate ſtruggle for their liberty. The moment reſolved upon, for carrying their deſigns into execution, was when Beering ſhould have ſet ſail, who was at this time on the coaſt with a ſmall ſquadron, and had diſpatched all the troops that could well be ſpared from the country, to join Powloutſki, in an expedition againſt the Tſchutſki. The opportunity was well choſen; and it is altogether ſurprizing, that this conſpiracy, which was ſo general, that every native in the peninſula is ſaid to have had his ſhare in it, was at the ſame time conducted with ſuch ſecrecy, that the Ruſſians had not the ſmalleſt ſuſpicion that any thing hoſtile to their intereſts was in agitation. Their other meaſures were equally well taken. They had a ſtrong body in readineſs to cut off all communication with the fort Anadirſk; and the Eaſtern coaſt was likewiſe lined with detached parties, with a view of ſeizing

1779. October. on any Ruſſians that might by accident arrive from Okotzk. Things were in this ſtate, when the commiſſary Cheekhaerdin marched from Verchnei with his tribute, eſcorted by the troops of the fort, for the mouth of the Kamtſchatka River, where a veſſel was lying to convey them to the Anadir. Beſides waiting for the departure of Beering, the revolt was to be ſuſpended till this veſſel ſhould be out at ſea, notice of which was to be given to the different Chiefs. Accordingly, the moment ſhe was out of ſight, they began to maſſacre every Ruſſian and Coſſack that came in their way, and to ſet fire to their houſes. A large body aſcended the River Kamtſchatka, made themſelves maſters of the fort and *oſtrog* the commiſſary had juſt quitted, put to death all that were in it, and, except the church and the fort, reduced the whole to aſhes. Here it was that they firſt learned that the Ruſſian veſſel, in which the commiſſary had embarked, was ſtill on the coaſt, which determined them to defend themſelves in the fort. The wind fortunately ſoon brought the veſſel back to the harbour; for had ſhe proceeded in her voyage, nothing probably could have prevented the utter extirpation of the Ruſſians. The Coſſacks finding, on their landing, that their houſes had been burnt to the ground, and their wives and children either maſſacred or carried off priſoners, were enraged to madneſs. They marched directly to the fort, which they attacked with great fury, and the natives as reſolutely defended, till at length the powder-magazine taking fire, the fort was blown up, together with moſt of thoſe that were in it. Various rencounters ſucceeded to this event, in which much blood was ſpilled on both ſides: at length, two of the principal leaders being ſlain, and the third (after diſpatching his wife and children, to prevent their falling into the enemy's

enemy's hand) having put an end to himſelf, peace was eſtabliſhed. 1779. October.

From that period every thing went on very peaceably, till the year 1740, when a few Ruſſians loſt their lives in a tumult, which was attended with no farther conſequences; and, except the inſurrection at Bolcheretſk in 1770 (which hath been already noticed), there has been no diſturbance ſince.

Though the quelling the rebellion of 1731 was attended with the loſs of a great number of inhabitants, yet I was informed, that the country had recovered itſelf, and was become more populous than ever, when, in the year 1767, the ſmall-pox, brought by a ſoldier from Okotzk, broke out among them for the firſt time, marking its progreſs with ravages not leſs dreadful than the plague, and ſeeming to threaten their entire extirpation. They compute that near twenty thouſand died of this diſorder in Kamtſchatka, the Koreki country, and the Kurile iſlands. The inhabitants of whole villages were ſwept away. Of this we had ſufficient proofs before our eyes. There are no leſs than eight *oſtrogs* ſcattered about the bay of Awatſka, all which, we were informed, had been fully inhabited, but are now entirely deſolate, except St. Peter and St. Paul; and even that contains no more than ſeven Kamtſchadales, who are tributary. At Paratounca *oſtrog* there are but thirty-ſix native inhabitants, men, women, and children, which, before it was viſited by the ſmall-pox, we were told, contained three hundred and ſixty. In our road to Bolcheretſk, we paſſed four extenſive *oſtrogs*, with not an inhabitant in them. In the preſent diminiſhed ſtate of the natives, with freſh ſupplies of Ruſſians and Coſſacks perpetually pouring in, and who intermix with them by marriage, it is probable, that in leſs than

1779. October.

than half a century there will be very few of them left. By Major Behm's account, there are not now more than three thouſand who pay tribute, the Kurile iſlanders included.

I underſtood that there are at this time, of the military, in the five forts of Nichnei, Verchnei, Tigil, Bolcheretſk, and St. Peter and St. Paul, about four hundred Ruſſians and Coſſacks, and near the ſame number at Ingiga, which, though to the North of the peninſula, is, I learned, at preſent under the Commander of Kamtſchatka; to theſe may be added the Ruſſian traders and emigrants, whoſe numbers are not very conſiderable.

The Ruſſian government, eſtabliſhed over this country, is mild and equitable, conſidered as a military one, in a very high degree. The natives are permitted to chooſe their own magiſtrates from among themſelves, in the way, and with the ſame powers they had ever been uſed. One of theſe, under the title of *Toion*, preſides over each *oſtrog*; is the referee in all differences; impoſes fines, and inflicts puniſhments for all crimes and miſdemeanors; referring to the governor of Kamtſchatka ſuch only as he does not chooſe, from their intricacy or heinouſneſs, to decide upon himſelf. The *Toion* has likewiſe the appointment of a civil officer, called a Corporal, who aſſiſts him in the execution of his office, and in his abſence acts as his deputy.

By an edict of the preſent Empreſs, no crime whatſoever can be puniſhed with death. But we were informed, that in caſes of murder (of which there are very few), the puniſhment of the *knout* is adminiſtered with ſuch ſeverity, that the offender, for the moſt part, dies under it.

The only tribute exacted (which can be conſidered as little

1779. October.

little more than an acknowledgment of the Ruſſian dominion over them) conſiſts, in ſome diſtricts, of a fox's ſkin, in others of a ſable's, and in the Kurile iſles of a ſea otter's; but as this is much the moſt valuable, one ſkin ſerves to pay the tribute of ſeveral perſons. The *Toions* collect the tribute in their reſpective diſtricts. Beſides the mildneſs of their government, the Ruſſians have a claim to every praiſe for the pains they have beſtowed, and which have been attended with great ſucceſs, in converting them to Chriſtianity, there remaining, at preſent, very few idolaters among them. If we may judge of the other miſſionaries, from the hoſpitable and benevolent paſtor of Paratounca (who is a native on the mother's ſide), more ſuitable perſons could not be ſet over this buſineſs. It is needleſs to add, that the religion taught is that of the Greek church. Schools are likewiſe eſtabliſhed in many of the *oſtrogs*, where the children of both the natives and Coſſacks are gratuitouſly inſtructed in the Ruſſian language.

The commerce of this country, as far as concerns the exports, is entirely confined to furs, and carried on principally by a company of merchants, inſtituted by the preſent Empreſs. This company originally conſiſted of twelve, and three have been lately added to it. They are indulged with certain priviłeges, and diſtinguiſhed by wearing a golden medal, as a mark of the Empreſs's encouragement and protection of the fur-trade. Beſides theſe, there are many inferior traders (particularly of the Coſſacks) ſcattered through the country. The principal merchants, for the time they are here, reſide at Bolcheretſk, or the Nichnei *oſtrog*, in which two places the trade almoſt wholly centers. Formerly this commerce was altogether carried on in the way of barter, but of late years every article is bought and ſold for

1779. October.

for ready money only; and we were ſurprized at the quantity of ſpecie in circulation in ſo poor a country. The furs ſell at a high price, and the ſituation and habits of life of the natives call for few articles in return. Our ſailors brought a great number of furs with them from the coaſt of America, and were not leſs aſtoniſhed than delighted with the quantity of ſilver the merchants paid down for them; but on finding neither gin-ſhops to reſort to, nor tobacco, or any thing elſe that they cared for, to be had for money, the roubles ſoon became troubleſome companions, and I often obſerved them kicking them about the deck. The merchant I have already had occaſion to mention, gave our men at firſt thirty roubles for a ſea-otter's ſkin, and for others in proportion; but finding that they had conſiderable quantities to diſpoſe of, and that he had men to deal with who did not know how to keep up the market, he afterward bought them for much leſs.

The articles of importation are principally European, but not confined to Ruſſian manufactures; many are Engliſh and Dutch; ſeveral likewiſe come from Siberia, Bucharia, the Calmucks, and China. They conſiſt of coarſe woollen and linen clothes, yarn ſtockings, bonnets, and gloves; thin Perſian ſilks; cottons, and pieces of nankeen, ſilk and cotton handkerchiefs; braſs coppers and pans, iron ſtoves, files, guns, powder and ſhot; hardware, ſuch as hatchets, bills, knives, ſciſſars, needles, looking-glaſſes; flour, ſugar; tanned hides, boots, &c. We had an opportunity of ſeeing a great many of theſe articles in the hands of a merchant, who came in the Empreſs's galliot from Okotzk; and I ſhall only obſerve generally, that they ſold for treble the price they might have been purchaſed for in England. And though the merchants have ſo large a profit upon theſe imported

imported goods, they have a ſtill larger upon the furs at Kiachta, upon the frontiers of China, which is the great market for them. The beſt ſea-otter ſkins ſell generally in Kamtſchatka, for about thirty roubles apiece. The Chineſe merchant at Kiachta purchaſes them at more than double that price, and ſells them again at Pekin at a great advance, where a farther profitable trade is made with ſome of them to Japan. If, therefore, a ſkin is worth thirty roubles in Kamtſchatka, to be tranſported firſt to Okotzk, thence to be conveyed by land to Kiachta, a diſtance of one thouſand three hundred and ſixty-four miles, thence on to Pekin, ſeven hundred and ſixty miles more, and after this to be tranſported to Japan, what a prodigiouſly advantageous trade might be carried on between this place and Japan, which is but about a fortnight's, at moſt three weeks, ſail from it!

1779. October.

All furs exported from hence acroſs the ſea of Okotzk, pay a duty of *ten per cent.* and ſables a duty of twelve. And all ſorts of merchandize, of whatever denomination, imported from Okotzk, pay half a rouble for every pood *.

The duties ariſing from the exports and imports, of which I could not learn the amount, are paid at Okotzk: but the tribute is collected at Bolcheretſk; and, I was informed by Major Behm, amounted in value to ten thouſand roubles annually.

There are ſix veſſels (of forty to fifty tons burthen) employed by the Empreſs between Okotzk and Bolcheretſk; five of which are appropriated to the tranſporting of ſtores and proviſions from Okotzk to Bolcheretſk; except that once in two or three years, ſome of them go round to Awat-

* Thirty-ſix pounds Engliſh.

1779. October.

ſka, and the Kamtſchatka River; the ſixth is only uſed as a packet-boat, and always kept in readineſs, and properly equipped for conveying diſpatches. Beſides theſe, there are about fourteen veſſels employed by the merchants in the fur-trade, amongſt the iſlands to the Eaſtward. One of theſe we found frozen up in the harbour of St. Peter and St. Paul, which was to ſail on a trading voyage to Oonalaſhka, as ſoon as the ſeaſon would permit.

It is here to be obſerved, that the moſt conſiderable and valuable part of the fur-trade is carried on with the iſlands that lie between Kamtſchatka and America. Theſe were firſt diſcovered by Beering, in 1741, and being found to abound with ſea-otters, the Ruſſian merchants became exceedingly eager in ſearching for the other iſlands ſeen by that navigator, to the South Eaſt of Kamtſchatka, called, in Muller's Map, the Iſlands of Seduction, St. Abraham, &c. In theſe expeditions they fell in with three groups of iſlands. The firſt about fifteen degrees to the Eaſt of Kamtſchatka, in 53° North latitude; the ſecond about twelve degrees to the Eaſtward of the former; and the third, Oonalaſhka, and the iſlands in its neighbourhood. Theſe trading adventurers advanced alſo as far Eaſt as Shumagin's Iſlands (ſo called by Beering), the largeſt of which is named Kodiak. But here, as well as on the continent at Alaſhka, they met with ſo warm a reception in their attempts to compel the payment of a tribute, that they never afterward ventured ſo far. However they conquered and made tributary the three groups before mentioned.

In the Ruſſian charts, the whole ſea between Kamtſchatka and America is covered with iſlands; for the adventurers in theſe expeditions frequently falling in with land, which they imagined did not agree with the ſituation of other laid

laid down by preceding voyagers, immediately concluded it muſt be a new diſcovery, and reported it as ſuch on their return; and, ſince the veſſels employed in theſe expeditions were uſually out three or four years, and oftentimes longer, theſe miſtakes were not in the way of being ſoon rectified. It is however now pretty certain, that the iſlands already enumerated are all that have yet been diſcovered, by the Ruſſians, in that ſea, to the Southward of 60° of latitude. 1779. October.

It is from theſe iſlands that the ſea-otter ſkins, the moſt valuable article of the fur-trade, are for the moſt part drawn; and as they are brought completely under the Ruſſian dominion, the merchants have ſettlements upon them, where their factors reſide, for the purpoſe of bartering with the natives. It was with a view to the farther increaſe and extenſion of this trade, that the Admiralty of Okotzk fitted out an expedition for the purpoſe of making diſcoveries to the North and North Eaſt of the iſlands above-mentioned, and gave the command of it, as I have already obſerved, to Lieutenant Synd. This gentleman, having directed his courſe too far to the Northward, failed in the object of his voyage; for, as we never ſaw the ſea-otter to the Northward of Briſtol Bay, it ſeems probable, that they ſhun thoſe latitudes where the larger kind of amphibious ſea-animals abound. This was the laſt expedition undertaken by the Ruſſians for proſecuting diſcoveries to the Eaſtward; but they will undoubtedly make a proper uſe of the advantages we have opened to them, by the diſcovery of Cook's river.

Notwithſtanding the general intercourſe that, for the laſt forty years, hath taken place between the natives, the Ruſſians, and Coſſacks, the former are not more diſtin-

1779. October.

guiſhed from the latter by their features and general figure, than by their habits and caſt of mind. Of the perſons of the natives, a deſcription hath been already given, and I ſhall only add, that their ſtature is much below the common ſize. This Major Behm attributes, in a great meaſure, to their marrying ſo early; both ſexes generally entering into the conjugal ſtate at the age of thirteen or fourteen. Their induſtry is abundantly conſpicuous, without being contraſted with the lazineſs of their Ruſſian and Coſſack inmates, who are fond of intermarrying with them, and, as it ſhould ſeem, for no other reaſon, but that they may be ſupported in ſloth and inactivity. To this want of bodily exertion may be attributed thoſe dreadful ſcorbutic complaints, which none of them eſcape; whilſt the natives, by conſtant exerciſe and toil in the open air, are entirely free from them.

Referring the reader, for an account of the manners, cuſtoms, and ſuperſtitions of the Kamtſchadales, at the time the Ruſſians became firſt acquainted with this country, to Kraſcheninikoff, I ſhall proceed to a deſcription of their habitations and dreſs.

The houſes (if they may be allowed that name) are of three diſtinct ſorts, *jourts*, *balagans*, and *loghouſes*, called here *iſbas*. The firſt are their winter, the ſecond their ſummer habitations; the third are altogether of Ruſſian introduction, and inhabited only by the better and wealthier ſort.

The *jourts*, or winter habitations, are conſtructed in the following manner: An oblong ſquare, of dimenſions proportioned to the number of perſons for whom it is intended (for it is proper to obſerve, that ſeveral families live together in the ſame *jourt*) is dug in the earth to the depth of about

about ſix feet. Within this ſpace, ſtrong poſts, or wooden pillars, are faſtened in the ground, at proper diſtances from each other, on which are extended the beams for the ſupport of the roof, which is formed by joiſts, reſting on the ground with one end, and on the beams with the other. The interſtices between the joiſts are filled up with a ſtrong wicker-work, and the whole covered with turf; ſo that a *jourt* has externally the appearance of a round ſquat hillock. A hole is left in the centre, which ſerves for chimney, window, and entrance, and the inhabitants paſs in and out by means of a ſtrong pole (inſtead of a ladder) notched juſt deep enough to afford a little holding to the toe. There is likewiſe another entrance in the ſide, even with the ground, for the convenience of the women; but if a man makes uſe of it, he ſubjects himſelf to the ſame diſgrace and deriſion, as a ſailor would, who deſcends through lubbers-hole. The *jourt* conſiſts of one apartment, of the form of an oblong ſquare. Along the ſides are extended broad platforms made of boards, and raiſed about ſix inches from the ground, which they uſe as ſeats, and on which they go to reſt, after ſtrewing them with mats and ſkins. On one ſide is the fire-place, and the ſide oppoſite is entirely ſet apart for the ſtowage of proviſions and kitchen utenſils. At their feaſts, and ceremonious entertainments, the hotter the *jourts* are made for the reception of the gueſts, the greater the compliment. We found them at all times ſo hot, as to make any length of ſtay in them to us intolerable. They betake themſelves to the *jourts* the middle of October; and, for the moſt part, continue in them till the middle of May.

1779. October.

The *balagans* are raiſed upon nine poſts, fixed into the earth in three rows, at equal diſtances from one another,

1779. October.

ther, and about thirteen feet high from the ſurface. At the height of between nine and ten feet, rafters are paſſed from poſt to poſt, and firmly ſecured by ſtrong ropes. On theſe rafters are laid the joiſts, and the whole being covered with turf, conſtitutes the platform or floor of the *balagan*. On this is raiſed a roof of a conical figure, by means of tall poles, faſtened down to the rafters at one end, and meeting together in a point at the top, and thatched over with ſtrong coarſe graſs. The *balagans* have two doors placed oppoſite each other, and they aſcend to them by the ſame ſort of ladders they uſe in the *jourts*. The lower part is left entirely open; and within it they dry their fiſh, roots, vegetables, and other articles of winter conſumption. The proportion of *jourts* to *balagans*, is as one to ſix; ſo that ſix families generally live together in one *jourt*.

The loghouſes *(iſbas)* are raiſed with long timbers piled horizontally, the ends being let into one another, and the ſeams caulked with moſs. The roof is ſloping like that of our common cottage-houſes, and thatched with coarſe graſs or ruſhes. The inſide conſiſts of three apartments. At one end is what may be called the entry, which runs the whole width and height of the houſe, and is the receptacle of their ſledges, harneſs, and other more bulky gears and houſehold ſtuff. This communicates with the middle and beſt apartment, furniſhed with broad benches, for the purpoſe, as hath been above mentioned, of both eating and ſleeping upon. Out of this is a door into the kitchen, one half of which is taken up by the oven or fire-place, ſo contrived, by being let into the wall that ſeparates the kitchen and the middle apartment, as to warm both at the ſame time. Over the middle apartment and kitchen are

two

1779. October.

two lofts, to which they aſcend by a ladder placed in the entry. There are two ſmall windows in each apartment, made of *talc*, and in the houſes of the poorer ſort, of fiſh-ſkin. The beams and boards of the cieling are dubbed ſmooth with a hatchet (for they are unacquainted with the plane), and from the effects of the ſmoke are as black and ſhining as jet.

A town of Kamtſchatka is called an *oſtrog*, and conſiſts of ſeveral of the three ſorts of houſes above deſcribed; but of which *balagans* are much the moſt numerous; and I muſt obſerve, that I never met with a houſe of any kind detached from an *oſtrog*. Saint Peter and Saint Paul conſiſts of ſeven loghouſes, or *iſbas*, nineteen *balagans*, and three *jourts*. Paratounca is of about the ſame ſize. Karatchin and Natcheekin contain fewer loghouſes, but full as many *jourts* and *balagans* as the former; from whence I conclude, that ſuch is the uſual ſize of the *oſtrogs*.

Having already had occaſion to mention the dreſs of the Kamtſchadale women, I ſhall here confine myſelf to a deſcription of that of the men.

The outermoſt garment is of the ſhape of a carter's frock. Thoſe worn in ſummer are of nankeen; in winter they are made of ſkins, moſt commonly of the deer or dog, tanned on one ſide, the hair being left on the other, which is worn innermoſt. Under this is a cloſe jacket of nankeen, or other cotton ſtuffs, and beneath that a ſhirt of thin Perſian ſilk, of a blue, red, or yellow colour. The remaining part of their dreſs conſiſts of a pair of tight trowſers, or long breeches, of leather, reaching down to the calf of the leg; of a pair of dog or deer ſkin boots, with the hair innermoſt; and of a fur cap, with two flaps, which are generally tied

1779. October.

tied up close to the head, but in bad weather are let to fall round the shoulders.

The fur dress presented to me by a son of Major Behm (as already mentioned) is one of those worn by the *Toions*, on ceremonious occasions. The form exactly resembles that of the common exterior garment just described. It is made of small triangular pieces of fur, chequered brown and white, and joined so neatly as to appear to be one skin. A border of six inches breadth, wrought with threads of different-coloured leather, and producing a rich effect, surrounds the bottom, to which is suspended a broad edging of the sea-otter skin. The sleeves are turned up with the same materials; and there is likewise an edging of it round the neck, and down the opening at the breast. The lining is of a smooth white skin. A cap, a pair of gloves, and boots, wrought with the utmost degree of neatness, and made of the same materials, constitute the remainder of this suit. The Russians in Kamtschatka wear the European dress; and the uniform of the troops quartered here, is of a dark green, faced with red.

As the people situated to the North and South of this country are yet imperfectly known, I shall conclude the account of Kamtschatka with such information concerning the Kurile Islands, and the Koreki and Tschutski, as I have been able to acquire.

The chain of islands, running in a South West direction from the Southern promontory of Kamtschatka to Japan, extending from latitude 51° to 45°, are called the Kuriles. They obtained this name from the inhabitants of the neighbourhood of Lopatka, who being themselves called Kuriles, gave their own name to these islands, on first becoming

coming acquainted with them. They are, according to Spanberg, twenty-two in number, without reckoning the very ſmall ones. The Northernmoſt, called Shoomſka, is not more than three leagues from the promontory Lopatka, and its inhabitants are a mixture of natives and Kamtſchadales. The next to the South, called Paramouſir, is much larger than Shoomſka, and inhabited by the true natives; their anceſtors, according to a tradition among them, having come from an iſland a little farther to the South, called Onecutan. Thoſe two iſlands were firſt viſited by the Ruſſians in 1713, and at the ſame time brought under their dominion. The others, in order, are at preſent made tributary, down to Ooſheſheer incluſive, as I am informed by the worthy Paſtor of Paratounca, who is their Miſſionary, and viſits them once in three years, and ſpeaks of the iſlanders in terms of the higheſt commendation, repreſenting them as a friendly, hoſpitable, generous, humane race of people, and excelling their Kamtſchadale neighbours, not leſs in the formation of their bodies, than in docility and quickneſs of underſtanding. Though Ooſheſheer is the Southernmoſt iſland that the Ruſſians have yet brought under their dominion, yet I underſtand that they trade to Ooroop, which is the eighteenth; and, according to their accounts, the only one where there is a good harbour for ſhips of burthen. Beyond this, to the South, lies Nadeegſda, which was repreſented to us by the Ruſſians, as inhabited by a race of men remarkably hairy, and who, like thoſe of Ooroop, live in a ſtate of entire independence *.

1779. October.

In

* Spanberg places the iſland here ſpoken of in 43° 50′ North latitude, and mentions his having watered upon it; and that this watering party brought off eight of the natives; of whom he relates the following circumſtances: That their bodies were co-

1779. October.

In the ſame direction, but inclining ſomething more to the Weſtward, lies a group of iſlands, which the Japaneſe call Jeſo; a name which they alſo give to the whole chain of iſlands between Kamtſchatka and Japan. The Southernmoſt, called Matmai, hath been long ſubject to the Japaneſe, and is fortified and garriſoned on the ſide toward the continent. The two iſlands to the North Eaſt of Matmai, Kunachir, and Zellany, and likewiſe the three ſtill farther to the North Eaſt, called the Three Siſters, are perfectly independent.

A trade of barter is carried on between Matmai and the iſlands laſt mentioned; and between thoſe again and the Kuriles, to the Northward; in which, for furs, dried fiſh, and oil, the latter get ſilk, cotton, iron, and Japaneſe articles of furniture *.

The inhabitants of as many of the iſlands as are brought under the Ruſſian dominion, are, at preſent, converted to Chriſtianity. And probably the time is not very diſtant,

vered all over with hair; that they wore a looſe ſtriped ſilk gown, reaching as low as their ankles; and that ſome of them had ſilver rings pendant from the ears: that, on ſpying a live cock on deck, they fell on their knees before it; and likewiſe, before the preſents that were brought out to them, cloſing and ſtretching forth their hands, and bowing their heads, at the ſame time, down to the ground; that, except the peculiarity of their hairineſs, they reſembled the other Kurile iſlanders in their features and figure, and ſpoke the ſame language. The journal of the ſhip Caſtricom alſo mentions this circumſtance, of the inhabitants of the country diſcovered by them, and called Jeſo, being hairy all over the body.

* This accounts for what Kraſcheninikoff ſays, that he got from Paramouſir a japanned table and vaſe, a ſcymeter, and a ſilver ring, which he ſent to the cabinet of her Imperial Majeſty at Peterſburg. And if what Mr. Steller mentions, on the authority of a Kurile, who was interpreter to Spanberg in his voyage to Japan, is to be credited, that nearly the ſame language is ſpoken at Kunaſhir and Paramouſir, it cannot be queſtioned, that ſome intercourſe has always ſubſiſted between the inhabitants of this extenſive chain of iſlands.

when

when a friendly and profitable intercourſe will be brought about between Kamtſchatka and the whole of this chain of iſlands; and which will draw after it a communication with Japan itſelf. This may eventually be greatly facilitated by a circumſtance related to me by Major Behm, that ſeveral Ruſſians, who had been taught the Japaneſe language, by two men belonging to a veſſel of that nation, which had been * ſhipwrecked on the coaſt of Kamtſchatka, had been ſent among thoſe iſlands.

1779. October.

The

* The veſſel here ſpoken of was from Satſma, a port in Japan, bound for another Japaneſe port, called Azaka, and laden with rice, cotton, and ſilks. She ſailed with a favourable wind; but, before ſhe reached her deſtination, was driven out to ſea by a violent ſtorm, which carried away her maſts and rudder.

On the ſtorm's abating, not one of the crew, which conſiſted of ſeventeen (having probably never made other than coaſting voyages), knew where they were, or what courſe to ſteer. After remaining in this ſituation ſix months, they were driven on ſhore near the promontory Lopatka; and having caſt out an anchor, began to carry on ſhore ſuch articles as were neceſſary to their exiſtence. They next erected a tent, and had remained in it twenty-three days, without ſeeing a human being; when chance conducted a Coſſack officer, called Andrew Chinnikoff, with a few Kamtſchadales, to their habitation. The poor unfortunate Japaneſe, overwhelmed with joy at the ſight of fellow-creatures, made the moſt ſignificant tenders, they were able, of friendſhip and affection; and preſented their viſiters with ſilks, ſabres, and a part of whatever elſe they had brought from the ſhip. The treacherous Chinnikoff made reciprocal returns of kindneſs and goodwill; and, after remaining with them long enough to make ſuch obſervations as ſuited his deſigns, withdrew from them in the night. The Japaneſe, finding that their viſiters did not return, knew not what courſe to take. In deſpair they manned their boat, and were rowing along the coaſt in ſearch of a habitation, when they came up with their veſſel, which had been driven aſhore; and found Chinnikoff and his companions pillaging her, and pulling her in pieces for the ſake of the iron. This ſight determined them to continue their courſe, which Chinnikoff perceiving, ordered his men to purſue and maſſacre them. The unfortunate Japaneſe, ſeeing a canoe in purſuit, and which they could not eſcape, apprehended what was to follow. Some of them leaped into the ſea; others, in vain, had recourſe to prayers and intreaties. They were all maſſacred but two, by the very ſabres they had preſented to their ſuppoſed friends a few days before. One of the two was a boy about eleven years old, named Gowga, who had accompanied his father, the

1779. October.

The advantages that would accrue to the Ruſſians by an immediate trade to Japan, have been already adverted to, and are too many, and too obvious, to need inſiſting upon.

The Koreki country includes two diſtinct nations, called the Wandering and Fixed Koriacs.

The former inhabit the Northern part of the iſthmus of Kamtſchatka, and the whole coaſt of the Eaſtern ocean, from thence to the Anadir.

The country of the Wandering Koriacs ſtretches along the North Eaſt of the ſea of Okotzk to the river Penſkina, and Weſtward toward the river Kovyma.

The Fixed Koriacs have a ſtrong reſemblance to the Kamtſchadales; and, like them, depend altogether on fiſhing for ſubſiſtence. Their dreſs and habitations are of the ſame kind. They are tributary to the Ruſſians, and under the diſtrict of the Ingiga.

The Wandering Koriacs occupy themſelves entirely in breeding and paſturing deer, of which they are ſaid to poſſeſs immenſe numbers; and that it is no unuſual thing for an individual Chief to have a herd of four or five thouſand. They deſpiſe fiſh, and live entirely on deer. They have no *balagans*; and their only habitations are

ſhip's pilot, to learn navigation; the other was a middle-aged man, the ſupercargo, and called Soſa.

Chinnikoff ſoon met with the puniſhment due to his crimes. The two ſtrangers were conducted to Peterſburg, where they were ſent to the academy, with proper inſtructors and attendants; and ſeveral young men were, at the ſame time, put about them for the purpoſe of learning the Japaneſe language.

They were thrown on the coaſt of Kamtſchatka in 1730. The younger ſurvived the abſence from his country five, the other ſix years. Their portraits are to be ſeen in the cabinet of the empreſs at Peterſburg.—Vid. Kraſcheninikoff, Vol. ii. part 4. Fr. Ed.

like the Kamtſchadale *jourts*, with this difference, that they are covered with raw deer-ſkins in winter, and tanned ones in ſummer. Their ſledges are drawn by deer, and never by dogs; which, like the latter, are likewiſe always ſpayed, in order to be trained to this buſineſs. The draft deer paſture in company with the others; and when they are wanted, the herdſmen make uſe of a certain cry, which they inſtantly obey, by coming out of the herd. 1779. October.

The prieſt of Paratounca informed me, that the two nations of the Koriacs, and the Tſchutſki, ſpeak different dialects of the ſame language; and that it bears not the ſmalleſt reſemblance to the Kamtſchadale.

The country of the Tſchutſki is bounded on the South by the Anadir, and extends along the coaſt to the Tſchutſkoi Noſs. Like the Wandering Koriacs, their attention is principally confined to their deer, of which their country affords great numbers, both tame and wild. They are a ſtout, well-made, bold, warlike race of people; redoubtable neighbours to both nations of the Koriacs, who often feel the effects of their depredatory incurſions. The Ruſſians have, for many years, been uſing their endeavours to bring them under their dominion; and, after loſing a great many men in their different expeditions for this purpoſe, have not been able to effect it.

I ſhall here conclude this article, ſince all we can ſay of this people, on our own knowledge, hath been laid before the Reader in the preceding Volume.

CHAP.

CHAP. VIII.

Plan of our future Proceedings.—Courſe to the Southward, along the Coaſt of Kamtſchatka.—Cape Lopatka.—Paſs the Iſlands Shoomſka and Paramouſir.—Driven to the Eaſtward of the Kuriles.—Singular Situation with reſpect to the pretended Diſcoveries of former Navigators.—Fruitleſs Attempts to reach the Iſlands North of Japan.—Geographical Concluſions.—View of the Coaſt of Japan.—Run along the Eaſt Side.—Paſs two Japaneſe Veſſels.—Driven off the Coaſt by contrary Winds.—Extraordinary Effect of Currents.—Steer for the Baſhees.—Paſs large Quantities of Pumice Stone.—Diſcover Sulphur Iſland.—Paſs the Pratas.—Iſles of Lema, and Ladrone Iſland.—Chineſe Pilot taken on board the Reſolution.—Journals of the Officers and Men ſecured.

1779. October. Saturday 9. OUR inſtructions from the Board of Admiralty having left a diſcretionary power with the commanding Officer of the expedition, in caſe of failure in the ſearch of a paſſage from the Pacific into the Atlantic Ocean, to return to England, by whatever route he ſhould think beſt for the farther improvement of geography; Captain Gore demanded of the principal officers their ſentiments, in writing, reſpecting the manner in which theſe orders might moſt effectually be obeyed. The reſult of our opinions, which

1779. October.

which he had the ſatisfaction to find unanimous, and entirely coinciding with his own, was, that the condition of the ſhips, of the ſails and cordage, made it unſafe to attempt, at ſo advanced a ſeaſon of the year, to navigate the ſea between Japan and Aſia; which would otherwiſe have afforded the largeſt field for diſcovery; that it was therefore adviſeable to keep to the Eaſtward of that iſland, and in our way thither to run along the Kuriles, and examine more particularly the iſlands that lie neareſt the Northern coaſt of Japan, which are repreſented as of a conſiderable ſize, and independent of the Ruſſian and Japaneſe governments. Should we be ſo fortunate as to find in theſe any ſafe and commodious harbours, we conceived they might be of importance, either as places of ſhelter for any future navigators, who may be employed in exploring the ſeas, or as the means of opening a commercial intercourſe among the neighbouring dominions of the two empires. Our next object was to ſurvey the coaſt of the Japaneſe Iſlands, and afterward to make the coaſt of China, as far to the Northward as we were able, and run along it to Macao.

This plan being adopted, I received orders from Captain Gore, in caſe of ſeparation, to proceed immediately to Macao; and at ſix o'clock in the evening of the 9th of October, having cleared the entrance of Awatſka Bay, we ſteered to the South Eaſt, with the wind North Weſt and by Weſt. At midnight we had a dead calm, which continued till noon of the 10th; the light-houſe, at this time, bearing North half Weſt, diſtant five leagues, and Cape Gavareea South by Weſt half Weſt. Being luckily in ſoundings of ſixty and ſeventy fathoms water, we employed our time very profitably in catching cod, which were exceedingly

Saturday 9.

Sunday 10.

1779. October. ingly fine and plentiful; and at three in the afternoon, a breeze ſprung up from the Weſt, with which we ſtood along the coaſt to the Southward. A head-land, bearing South by Weſt, now opened with Cape Gavareea, lying about ſeven leagues beyond it. Between them are two narrow but deep inlets, which may probably unite behind what appears to be an high iſland. The coaſt of theſe inlets is ſteep and cliffy. The hills break abruptly, and form chaſms and deep vallies, which are well wooded. Between Cape Gavareea (which lies in latitude 52° 21′, longitude 158° 38′) and Awatſka Bay, there are appearances of ſeveral inlets, which at firſt ſight may flatter the mariner with hopes of finding ſhelter and ſafe anchorage: but the Ruſſian pilots aſſured us, that there are none capable of admitting veſſels of the ſmalleſt ſize, as the low land fills up the ſpaces that appear vacant between the high projecting head-lands. Toward evening, it again became calm; but, at midnight, we had a light breeze from the North, which increaſed gradually to a
Monday 11. ſtrong gale; and at noon, the next day, we found ourſelves in latitude 52° 4′, longitude 158° 31′, when Cape Gavareea bore North by Weſt one quarter Weſt; the South extreme South Weſt half Weſt. We were at this time diſtant from the neareſt ſhore about three leagues, and ſaw the whole country inland covered with ſnow. A point of land to the Southward, which we place in latitude 51° 54′, formed the North ſide of a deep bay, called Achachinſkoi, in the diſtant bottom of which we ſuppoſed a large river to empty itſelf, from the land behind being ſo unuſually low. South of Achachinſkoi Bay, the land is not ſo rugged and barren as that part of the country which we had before paſſed.

During

1779. October. Tueſday 12.

During the night we had variable winds and rain; but at four in the morning of the 12th, it began to blow ſo ſtrong, from the North Eaſt, as to oblige us to double-reef the top-ſails, and make it prudent to ſtand more off the ſhore. At ſix, the weather becoming more moderate and fair, we again made ſail, and ſtood in for the land. At noon, our latitude was 51° 0′, longitude 157° 25′. The Northernmoſt land in ſight, being the point we have mentioned as firſt opening with Cape Gavareea, bore North North Eaſt. A head-land, with a flat top, which is in latitude 51° 27′, and makes the South point of an inlet, called Girowara, bore North one quarter Eaſt, and the Southernmoſt land in ſight Weſt three quarters North, diſtant ſix leagues. At this time we could juſt perceive low land ſtretching from the Southern extreme; but the wind veering round to the North Weſt, we could not get a nearer view of it. At ſix in the afternoon, we ſaw, from the maſt-head, Cape Lopatka, the Southernmoſt extremity of Kamtſchatka. It is a very low flat Cape, ſloping gradually from the high level land that we ſaw at noon, and bore Weſt half North, about five leagues diſtant; and the high land North Weſt by Weſt half Weſt. As this point of land forms ſo marked an object in the geography of the Eaſtern coaſt of Aſia, we were glad to be able, by an accurate obſervation, and ſeveral good angles, to determine its preciſe ſituation, which is in latitude 51° 0′, longitude 156° 45′. To the North Weſt of it we ſaw a remarkable high mountain, the top of which loſes itſelf in the clouds; and, at the ſame time, the firſt of the Kurile Iſlands, called Shoomſka, appeared in ſight, bearing Weſt half South. The paſſage between this iſland and Cape Lopatka, the Ruſſians deſcribe as being three miles broad, and very dangerous, on account of the ra-

1779. October. pidity of the tides, and the ſunk rocks that are off the Cape. From Cape Gavareea to Lopatka, the coaſt trends South Eaſt. South of Achachinſkoi, the land is not ſo high and broken as between that Bay and the mouth of Awatſka, being only of a moderate elevation toward the ſea, with hills gradually riſing farther back in the country. The coaſt is ſteep and bold, and full of white chalky patches.

At noon, the weather falling again to a calm, afforded us an opportunity of catching ſome fine cod. We were, at this time, in forty fathoms water, and about five or ſix leagues from Cape Lopatka. Both in the fore and afternoon, we had obſervations, with different compaſſes, for the variation, and found it to be 5° 20′ Eaſt.

We ſtood on all night, under an eaſy ſail, to the South South Weſt, having the wind Weſterly. At midnight we ſounded, and had ſixty fathoms; and, at day-break of the

Wedneſ. 13. 13th, we ſaw the ſecond of the Kurile Iſlands (called by the Ruſſians Paramouſir), extending from North Weſt by Weſt, to Weſt half South. This land is very high, and almoſt entirely covered with ſnow. At noon, the extremes bore from North North Weſt half Weſt, to Weſt North Weſt half Weſt; and a high peaked mountain, from which ſome thought they ſaw ſmoke iſſuing, North Weſt by Weſt half Weſt, about twelve or fourteen leagues diſtant. At this time our latitude, by obſervation, was 49° 49′, and our longitude 157° 0′. In the courſe of the day we ſaw many gulls and albatroſſes, and ſeveral whales.

Paramouſir is the largeſt of the Kuriles under the dominion of Ruſſia, and well deſerves a more accurate ſurvey, than we were at this time allowed to take. For, in the afternoon, the gale increaſing from the Weſt, we were never able

able to approach it nearer than we had done at noon; and were, therefore, obliged to be contented with endeavouring to aſcertain its ſituation at that diſtance. We place the South end of the iſland in latitude 49° 58′; the North end in latitude 50° 46′, and in longitude 10′ Weſt of Lopatka; and as this poſition is found not to differ materially from that given by the Ruſſians, it is probably very near the truth. Whilſt we were abreaſt of this iſland, we had a very heavy ſwell from the North Eaſt, though the wind had, for ſome time, been from the Weſtward; a circumſtance which we have already remarked more than once during the courſe of our voyage. In the night we tried for ſoundings, but found no ground with fifty fathoms of line. 1779. October.

On the 14th and 15th, the wind blowing ſteadily and freſh from the Weſtward, we were obliged to ſtand to the Southward; and conſequently hindered from ſeeing any more of the Kurile iſlands. At noon of the 16th, the latitude, by obſervation, was 45° 27′; the longitude, deduced from a number of lunar obſervations taken during the three days paſt, 155° 30′. The variation 4° 30′ Eaſt. In this ſituation, we were almoſt ſurrounded by the ſuppoſed diſcoveries of former navigators, and uncertain to which we ſhould turn ourſelves. To the Southward and the South Weſt were placed, in the French charts, a group of five iſlands, called the Three Siſters, Zellany, and Kunaſhir. We were about ten leagues, according to the ſame maps, to the Weſtward of the land of De Gama, which we had paſſed to the Eaſtward in April laſt, at a diſtance rather leſs than this, without ſeeing any appearance of it; from which circumſtance we may now conclude, that, if ſuch land exiſt at all, it muſt be an iſland of a very inconſiderable Thurſday 14. Friday 15. Saturday 16.

1779. October.

ſize *. On the other hand, if we give credit to the original poſition of this land, fixed by Texiera †, it lay to the Weſt by South; and as the Company's Land ‡, Staten Iſland §, and the famous land of Jeſo ||, were alſo ſuppoſed to lie nearly

* From Muller's account of the courſe ſteered by Captain Spanberg, in his route from Kamtſchatka to Japan, it appears, that he muſt alſo undoubtedly have ſeen De Gama's Land, if it really has the extent given it in Mr. d'Anville's maps. Walton, who commanded a veſſel in the ſame expedition, ſeems alſo to have looked in vain for this land on his return from Japan; and three years afterward, on account of ſome doubts that had ariſen reſpecting Spanberg's courſe, Beering went directly in ſearch of it, as low as the latitude of 46°.—See *Voyages et Decouvertes*, &c. p. 210, & ſeq.

† See Book VI. Chap. i. p. 180.

‡ This land was ſeen by the Dutchmen who ſailed in the Caſtricom and Breſkes, and imagined by them to be part of the continent of America. There now remains ſcarce any doubt of its being the iſlands of Ooroop and Nadeegſda.—See the Journals of the Caſtricom and Breſkes, publiſhed by Wetzer.

§ This land was alſo diſcovered by the Caſtricom; and, from its ſituation, as deſcribed in the journal of that veſſel, it appears to be the iſlands of the Three Siſters.

|| The country of Jeſo, which has ſo long been a ſtumbling-block to our modern geographers, was firſt brought to the knowledge of Europeans by the Dutch veſſels mentioned in the preceding notes. The name appears, from the earlieſt accounts, to have been well known, both to the Japaneſe and the Kamtſchadales; and uſed by them, indiſcriminately, for all the iſlands lying between Kamtſchatka and Japan. It has ſince been applied to a large imaginary iſland, or continent, ſuppoſed to have been diſcovered by the Caſtricom and Breſkes; and it may not, therefore, be improper to conſider the grounds of this miſtake, as far as can be collected from the Journals of that expedition. The object of the voyage, in which thoſe ſhips were engaged, was to explore the Eaſtern ſhore of Tartary; but, being ſeparated by a ſtorm off the South Eaſt point of Japan, they ſailed in different tracks along the Eaſt ſide of that iſland; and, having paſſed its Northern extremity, proceeded ſingly on their intended expedition.

The Caſtricom, commanded by De Vries, ſteering Northward, fell in with land on the third day, in latitude 42°. He ſailed along the South Eaſt coaſt about ſixty leagues in a *conſtant fog*; and, having anchored in various places, held a friendly intercourſe with the inhabitants. Thus far the Journal. Now, as the iſlands of Matimai, Kunaſhir, and Zellany appear, from Captain Spanberg's Diſcoveries, to lie exactly in this ſituation, there

can

nearly in the ſame direction, together with the group firſt mentioned, according to the Ruſſian charts, we thought this courſe deſerved the preference, and accordingly hauled round to the Weſtward, the wind having ſhifted, in the afternoon, to the Northward. During this day we ſaw large flocks of gulls, ſeveral albatroſſes, fulmars, and a number of fiſh, which our ſailors called grampuſes; but, as far as we could judge from the appearance of thoſe that paſſed cloſe by the ſhips, we imagined them to be the *kaſatka*, or ſword-fiſh, deſcribed by Kraſcheninikoff, to whom I refer the Reader, for a curious account of the manner in which they attack the whales. In the evening, a viſit from a ſmall land-bird, about the ſize of a gold-finch, and reſembling that bird in ſhape and plumage, made us keep a good look-out for land. However, at mid-

1779. October.

can be no doubt of their being the ſame land; and the circumſtance of the fog ſufficiently accounts for the error of De Vries, in imagining them to be one continent; without having recourſe to the ſuppoſition of an earthquake, by which Mr. Muller, from his deſire to reconcile the opinion generally received, with the later Ruſſian diſcoveries, conceives the ſeveral parts to have been ſeparated. The Journal then proceeds to give an account of the diſcovery of Staten Iſland and Company's Land, of which I have already given my opinion, and ſhall have occaſion to ſpeak hereafter. Having paſſed through the Straits of De Vries, ſays the Journal, they entered a vaſt, wild, and tempeſtuous ſea, in which they ſteered, through miſts and darkneſs, to the 48° latitude North; after which they were driven by contrary winds to the Southward, and again fell in with land to the Weſtward, in latitude 45°, which they unaccountably ſtill imagined to be part of the continent of Jeſo; whereas, whoever examines Janſen's map of their diſcoveries (which appears to be exceedingly accurate, as far as his information went), will, I believe, have no doubt, that they were, at this time, on the coaſt of Tartary. Having traced this land four degrees to the Northward, they returned to the Southward through the Straits they had paſſed before.

It is not neceſſary to trouble the Reader with the Journal of the Breſkes, as it contains no new matter, and has been already republiſhed, and very ſatisfactorily animadverted upon by Mr. Muller.—*Voyages from Aſia to America*, &c. Engliſh Tranſlation, p. 78.

night,

1779. October. night, on trying for ſoundings, we found no ground with forty-five fathoms of line.

Sunday 17. On the 17th, at noon, we were in latitude 45° 7′, by obſervation, longitude 154° 0′. The wind now again coming to the Weſtward, obliged us to ſteer a more Southerly courſe; and, at midnight, it blew from that quarter a freſh gale, accompanied with heavy rain. In the morning, we ſaw another land-bird, and many flocks of gulls and peterels bending their courſe to the South Weſt. The heavy North Eaſt ſwell, with which we had conſtantly laboured ſince our departure from Lopatka, now ceaſed, and changed ſuddenly to the South Eaſt. In the forenoon of

Monday 18. the 18th, we paſſed great quantities of rock-weed, from which, and the flights of birds above mentioned, we conjectured we were at no great diſtance from the Southernmoſt of the Kuriles; and, at the ſame time, the wind coming round to the South, enabled us to ſtand in for it. At two, we ſet ſtudding-ſails, and ſteered Weſt; but the wind increaſing to a gale, ſoon obliged us to double reef the topſails; and, at midnight, we judged it neceſſary to try for ſoundings. Accordingly we hove to; but, finding no bottom at ſeventy-five fathoms, we were encouraged to perſevere, and again bore away Weſt, with the wind at South

Tueſday 19. Eaſt. This courſe we kept till two in the morning, when the weather becoming thick, we hauled our wind, and ſteered to the South Weſt till five, when a violent ſtorm reduced us to our courſes.

Notwithſtanding the unfavourable ſtate of the weather left us little proſpect of making the land, we ſtill kept this object anxiouſly in view; and, at day-light, ventured to ſteer Weſt by South, and continued to ſtand on in this direction till ten in the forenoon, when the wind, ſuddenly

ſhifting

ſhifting to the South Weſt, brought with it clear weather. Of this we had ſcarcely taken advantage, by ſetting the top-ſails, and letting out the reefs, when it began to blow ſo ſtrong from this quarter, that we were forced to cloſe-reeve again; and, at noon, the wind ſhifting two points to the Weſt, rendered it vain to keep any longer on this tack. We therefore put about, and ſteered to the Southward. At this time, our latitude, by obſervation, was 44° 12′, and longitude 150° 40′; ſo that, after all our efforts, we had the mortification to find ourſelves, according to the Ruſſian charts, upon a meridian with Nadeegſda, which they make the Southernmoſt of the Kurile iſlands, and about twenty leagues to the Southward. 1779. October.

But, though the violent and contrary winds we had met with during the laſt ſix days, prevented our getting in with theſe iſlands, yet the courſe we had been obliged to hold, is not without its geographical advantages. For the group of iſlands, conſiſting of the Three Siſters, Kunaſhir, and Zellany (which, in D'Anville's maps, are placed in the track we had juſt croſſed) being, by this means, demonſtratively removed from that ſituation, an additional proof is obtained of their lying to the Weſtward, where Spanberg actually places them, between the longitude 142° and 147°. But as this ſpace is occupied, in the French charts, by part of the ſuppoſed land of Jeſo and Staten Iſland, Mr. Muller's opinion becomes extremely probable, that they are all the ſame lands; and, as no reaſons appear for doubting Spanberg's accuracy, we have ventured, in our general map, to reinſtate the Three Siſters, Zellany, and Kunaſhir, in their proper ſituation, and have entirely omitted the reſt. When the Reader recollects the manner in which the Ruſſians have multiplied the iſlands of the Northern Archipelago, from

1779. October. from the want of accuracy in determining their real ſituation, and the deſire men naturally feel of propagating new diſcoveries, he will not be ſurprized, that the ſame cauſes ſhould produce the ſame effects. It is thus that the Jeſoian lands, which appear, both from the accounts of the Japaneſe, and the earlieſt Ruſſian traditions, to be no other than the Southern Kurile iſlands, have been ſuppoſed diſtinct from the latter. The land of De Gama is next on record; and was originally placed nearly in the ſame ſituation with thoſe juſt mentioned; but was removed, as has been already ſuggeſted, to make room for Staten Iſland, and the Company's Land; and as Jeſo, and the Southernmoſt of the Kuriles, had alſo poſſeſſion of this ſpace, that nothing might be loſt, they were provided for, the former a little to the Weſtward, and the latter to the Eaſtward.

As the iſlands of Zellany and Kunaſhir, according to the Ruſſian charts, were ſtill to the Southward, we were not without hopes of being able to make them, and therefore kept our head as much to the Weſtward as the wind would Wedneſ. 20. permit. On the 20th, at noon, we were in latitude 43° 47′, and longitude 150° 30′; and ſteering Weſt by South, with a moderate breeze from South Eaſt, and probably not more than twenty-four leagues to the Eaſtward of Zellany, when our good fortune again deſerted us. For, at three o'clock in the afternoon, the wind, veering round to the North Weſt, began to blow ſo ſtrong, that we were brought under our foreſail and mizen ſtay-ſail. We had very heavy ſqualls, and hard rain, during the next twenty-four hours; after which, the horizon clearing a little, and the weather growing moderate, we were enabled to ſet the topſails; but the wind, ſtill continuing to blow from the North Weſt, baffled

baffled all our endeavours to make the land, and obliged us, at laſt, to give up all further thoughts of diſcovery to the North of Japan. We ſubmitted to this diſappointment with the greater reluctance, as the accounts that are given of the inhabitants of theſe iſlands, mentioned at the end of the laſt Chapter, had excited in us the greater curioſity to viſit them. 1779. October.

In the afternoon, the leach-rope of the Reſolution's fore-top-ſail gave way, and ſplit the ſail. As this accident had often happened to us in Captain Cook's life-time, he had ordered the foot and leach-ropes of the topſails to be taken out, and larger fixed in their ſtead; and as theſe alſo proved unequal to the ſtrain that was on them, it is evident, that the proper proportion of ſtrength between thoſe ropes and the ſail is exceedingly miſcalculated in our ſervice. This day a land-bird perched on the rigging, and was taken; it was larger than a ſparrow, but, in other reſpects, very like one.

The gale now abated gradually; ſo that, in the morning of the 22d, we let out the reefs of the topſails, and made more ſail. At noon, we were in latitude 40° 58′, and longitude 148° 17′; the variation 3° Eaſt. In the afternoon, another little wanderer from the land pitched on the ſhip, and was ſo worn out with fatigue, that it ſuffered itſelf to be taken immediately, and died a few hours afterward. It was not bigger than a wren, had a tuft of yellow feathers on its head, and the reſt of its plumage like that of the linnet. The ſparrow, being ſtronger, lived a long time. Theſe birds plainly indicating, that we could not be at any great diſtance from the land, and the wind, after varying a little, fixing in the evening at North, our hopes of making the land again revived, and we hauled up to the Weſt Friday 22.

1779. October. North Weſt, in which direction, the Southernmoſt iſlands, ſeen by Spanberg, and ſaid to be inhabited by hairy men, lay at the diſtance of about fifty leagues. But the wind not keeping pace with our wiſhes, blew in ſuch light airs,

Saturday 23. that we made little way, till eight the next morning, when we had a freſh breeze from the South South Weſt, with which we continued to ſteer Weſt North Weſt till the evening. At noon, we were in latitude 40° 35′, longitude 146° 45′; the latter deduced from ſeveral lunar obſervations taken during the night. The variation of the needle we found to be 17′ Eaſt. In the evening, we had ſtrong ſqually gales attended with rain, and having paſſed, in the courſe of the day, ſeveral patches of green graſs, and ſeen a ſhag, many ſmall land birds, and flocks of gulls, it was not thought prudent, with all theſe ſigns of the vicinity of land, to ſtand on during the whole night. We therefore tacked at midnight, and ſteered a few hours to the South

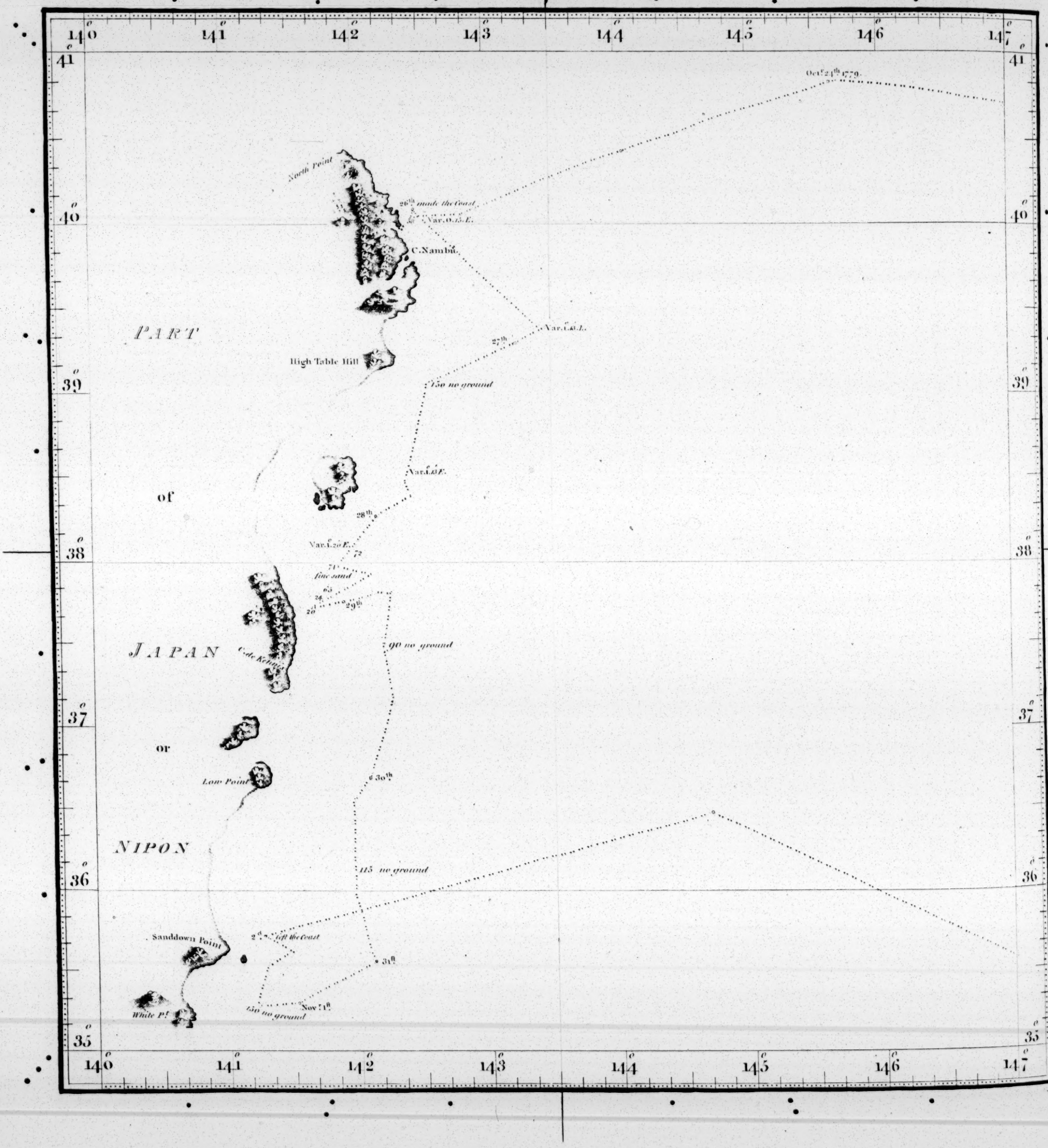
Sunday 24. Eaſt, and at four in the morning of the 24th, again directed our courſe to the Weſt North Weſt, and carried a preſs of ſail till ſeven in the evening, when the wind ſhifted from South South Weſt to North, and blew a freſh gale. At this time we were in the latitude of 40° 57′, and the longitude of 145° 20′.

This ſecond diſappointment in our endeavours to get to the North Weſt, together with the boiſterous weather we had met with, and the little likelihood, at this time of the year, of its becoming more favourable to our views, were Captain Gore's motives for now finally giving up all farther ſearch for the iſlands to the North of Japan, and for ſhaping a courſe Weſt South Weſt, for the North part of that iſland. In the night, the wind ſhifted to the North Eaſt, and blew a freſh gale, with hard rain, and hazy weather, which,

B L

View of the Coast of JAPAN when we first saw it; The Hill A bearing West 3 miles distant.





which, by noon of the 25th, brought us to the latitude of 40° 18′, in the longitude 144° 0′. To-day we ſaw flights of wild ducks, a pigeon lighted on our rigging, and many birds, like linnets, flew about us with a degree of vigour that ſeemed to prove, they had not been long upon the wing. We alſo paſſed patches of long graſs, and a piece either of ſugar-cane or bamboo. Theſe ſigns, that land was at no great diſtance, induced us to try for ſoundings; but we found no ground with ninety fathoms of line. Toward evening, the wind by degrees ſhifted round to the South, with which we ſtill kept on to the Weſt South Weſt; and at day-break of the 26th, we had the pleaſure of deſcrying high land to the Weſtward, which proved to be Japan. At eight, it extended from North Weſt to South by Weſt, diſtant three or four leagues. A low flat cape bore North Weſt three-quarters Weſt, and ſeemed to make the South part of the entrance of a bay. Toward the South extreme, a conical ſhaped hill bore South by Weſt three-quarters Weſt. To the Northward of this hill there appeared to be a very deep inlet, the North ſide of the entrance into which is formed by a low point of land, and, as well as we could judge by our glaſſes, has a ſmall iſland near it to the Southward.

1779. October. Monday 25. Tueſday 26.

We ſtood on till nine, when we were within two leagues of the land, bearing Weſt three-quarters South, and had ſoundings of fifty-eight fathoms, with a bottom of very fine ſand. We now tacked and ſtood off; but the wind dying away, at noon we had got no farther than three leagues from the coaſt, which extended from North Weſt by North three-quarters Weſt, to South half Eaſt, and was, for the moſt part, bold and cliffy. The low cape to the Northward bore North Weſt by Weſt, ſix leagues diſtant;

1779. October. and the North point of the inlet South, three-quarters Weſt. The latitude, by obſervation, was 40° 5′, and longitude 142° 28′. The Northernmoſt land in ſight, we judged to be the Northern extremity of Japan *. It is lower than any other part; and, from the range of the high lands that were ſeen over it from the maſt-head, the coaſt appeared evidently to incline round to the Weſtward. The North point of the inlet we ſuppoſed to be Cape Nambu, and the town to be ſituated in a break of the high land, toward which the inlet ſeemed to direct itſelf †. The country is of a moderate height, conſiſts of a double range of mountains; it abounds with wood, and has a pleaſing variety of hills and dales. We ſaw the ſmoke of ſeveral towns or villages, and many houſes near the ſhore, in pleaſant and cultivated ſituations.

During the calm, being willing to make the beſt uſe of our time, we put our fiſhing lines overboard, in ſixty fathoms water, but without any ſucceſs. As this was the only amuſement our circumſtances admitted, the diſappointment was always very ſenſibly felt, and made us look back with regret to the cod-banks of the dreary regions we had left, which had ſupplied us with ſo many wholeſome meals, and, by the diverſion they afforded, had given a variety to the weariſome ſucceſſion of gales and calms, and the tedi-

* The only authentic ſurvey of the Eaſtern coaſt of Japan, with which I am acquainted, is that publiſhed by Janſen in his Atlas, and compiled with great accuracy from the charts and journals of the Caſtricom and Breſkes. I have therefore adopted, wherever the identity of the ſituations could be nearly aſcertained, the names given in that map to the correſponding points and head-lands ſeen by us along the coaſt.

Janſen places the Northern extremity of Japan in latitude 40° 15′. The point ſeen by us was in latitude 40° 27′.

† This town is called by Janſen, Nabo.

ous

ous repetition of the ſame nautical obſervations. At two in the afternoon, the breeze freſhened from the Southward, and, by four, had brought us under cloſe-reefed topſails, and obliged us to ſtand off to the South Eaſt. In conſequence of this courſe, and the hazineſs of the weather, the land ſoon diſappeared. We kept on all night, and till eight the next morning, when the wind coming round to the North, and growing moderate, we made ſail, and ſteered Weſt South Weſt, toward the land; but did not make it till three in the afternoon, when it extended from North Weſt half Weſt to Weſt. The Northernmoſt extreme being a continuation of the high land, which was the Southernmoſt we had ſeen the day before; the land to the Weſt we conceived to be the Hofe Tafel Berg (the High Table Hill) of Janſen. Between the two extremes, the coaſt was low and ſcarcely perceptible, except from the maſt-head. We ſtood on toward the coaſt till eight, when we were about five leagues diſtant; and having ſhortened ſail for the night, ſteered to the Southward, ſounding every four hours; but never found ground with one hundred and ſixty fathoms of line.

1779. October.

Wedneſ. 27.

On the 28th, at ſix in the morning, we again ſaw land, twelve leagues to the Southward of that ſeen the preceding day, extending from Weſt South Weſt to Weſt by North. We ſteered South Weſt obliquely with the ſhore; and, at ten, ſaw more land open to the South Weſt. To the Weſtward of this land, which is low and flat, are two iſlands, as we judged, though ſome doubts were entertained, whether they might not be connected with the adjacent low ground. The hazy weather, joined to our diſtance, prevented us alſo from determining, whether there are any inlets or harbours between the projecting points, which ſeem here to promiſe good

Thurſday 28.

1779. October. good ſhelter. At noon, the North extreme bore North Weſt by North, and a high peaked hill, over a ſteep head-land, Weſt by North, diſtant five leagues. Our latitude at this time, by obſervation, was 38° 16′, longitude 142° 9′. The mean of the variation, from obſervations taken both in the fore and afternoon, was 1° 20′ Eaſt.

At half paſt three in the afternoon, we loſt ſight of the land; and, from its breaking off ſo ſuddenly, conjectured, that what we had ſeen this day is an iſland, or, perhaps, a cluſter of iſlands, lying off the main land of Japan; but as the iſlands, called by Janſen the Schildpads, and by Mr. D'Anville Matſima, though laid down nearly in the ſame ſituation, are not equal in extent to the land ſeen by us, we muſt leave this point undecided. Having kept a South Weſt courſe during the remaining part of the day, we found ourſelves, at midnight, in ſeventy fathoms water, over a bottom of fine dark brown ſand. We therefore hauled up

Friday 29. to the Eaſtward, till morning, when we ſaw the land again, about eleven leagues to the Southward of that which we had ſeen the day before; and at eight, we were within ſix or ſeven miles of the ſhore, having carried in regular ſoundings from ſixty-five to twenty fathoms, over coarſe ſand and gravel. Unluckily there was a haze over the land, which hindered our diſtinguiſhing ſmall objects on it. The coaſt is ſtraight and unbroken, and runs nearly in a North and South direction. Toward the ſea the ground is low, but riſes gradually into hills of a moderate height, whoſe tops are tolerably even, and covered with wood.

At nine o'clock, the wind ſhifting to the Southward, and the ſky lowring, we tacked and ſtood off to the Eaſt, and ſoon after, we ſaw a veſſel, cloſe in with the land, ſtanding along the ſhore to the Northward, and another in the offing, coming

coming down on us before the wind. Objects of any kind, belonging to a country ſo famous, and yet ſo little known, it will be eaſily conceived, muſt have excited a general curioſity, and accordingly every ſoul on board was upon deck in an inſtant, to gaze at them. As the veſſel to windward approached us, ſhe hauled farther off ſhore; upon which, fearing that we ſhould alarm them by the appearance of a purſuit, we brought the ſhips to, and ſhe paſſed ahead of us, at the diſtance of about half a mile. It would have been eaſy for us to have ſpoken with them; but perceiving, by their manœuvres, that they were much frightened, Captain Gore was not willing to augment their terrors; and, thinking that we ſhould have many better opportunities of communication with this people, ſuffered them to go off without interruption. Our diſtance did not permit us to remark any particulars regarding the men on board, who ſeemed to be about ſix in number, eſpecially as the hazineſs of the weather precluded the uſe of our glaſſes. According to the beſt conjectures we were able to form, the veſſel was about forty tons burthen. She had but one maſt, on which was hoiſted a ſquare ſail, extended by a yard aloft, the braces of which worked forward. Half-way down the ſail, came three pieces of black cloth, at equal diſtances from each other. The veſſel was higher at each end than in the midſhip; and we imagined, from her appearance and form, that it was impoſſible for her to ſail any otherwiſe than large.

1779. October.

At noon the wind freſhened, and brought with it a good deal of rain; by three, it had increaſed ſo much, that we were reduced to our courſes; at the ſame time, the ſea ran as high as any one on board ever remembered to have ſeen it. If the Japaneſe veſſels are, as Kæmpfer deſcribes them,

open

1779. October. open in the ſtern, it would not have been poſſible for thoſe we ſaw, to have ſurvived the fury of this ſtorm; but, as the appearance of the weather, all the preceding part of the day, foretold its coming, and one of the ſloops had, notwithſtanding, ſtood far out to ſea, we may ſafely conclude, that they are perfectly capable of bearing a gale of wind. Spanberg indeed deſcribes two kinds of Japaneſe veſſels; one anſwering to the above deſcription of Kæmpfer; the other, which he calls buſſes, and in which, he ſays, they make their voyages to the neighbouring iſlands, exactly correſponds with thoſe we ſaw *.

At eight in the evening, the gale ſhifted to the Weſt, without abating the leaſt in violence, and by raiſing a ſudden ſwell, in a contrary direction to that which prevailed before, occaſioned the ſhips to ſtrain and labour exceedingly. During the ſtorm, ſeveral of the ſails were ſplit on board the Reſolution. Indeed they had been ſo long bent, and were worn ſo thin, that this accident had of late happened to us almoſt daily, in both ſhips; eſpecially when, being ſtiff and heavy with the rain, they became leſs able to bear the ſhocks of the violent and variable winds we at this time experienced. The gale at length growing moderate, and ſettling to the Weſt, we kept upon a wind to the Southward;

Saturday 30. and at nine in the morning of the 30th, we ſaw the land, at the diſtance of about fifteen leagues, bearing from Weſt by North to North Weſt one quarter Weſt. It appeared in detached parts; but whether they were ſmall iſlands, or parts of Japan, our diſtance did not enable us to determine. At noon, it extended from North Weſt to Weſt, the neareſt land being about thirteen leagues diſtant, beyond which the coaſt ſeemed to run in a Weſterly direction. The lati-

* Vide Muller, Fr. ed. page 215.

tude,

tude, by obſervation, was 36° 41′, longitude 142° 6′. The point to the Northward, which was ſuppoſed to be near the Southernmoſt land ſeen the day before, we conjectured to be Cape de Kennis, and the break to the Southward of this point, to be the mouth of the river on which the town of Giffima is ſaid to be ſituated. The next Cape is probably that called in the Dutch charts Boomtje's Point; and the Southernmoſt, off which we were abreaſt at noon, we ſuppoſe to be near Low Point *, and that we were at too great a diſtance to ſee the low land, in which it probably terminates, to the Eaſtward. 1779. October.

In the afternoon, the wind veering round to the North Eaſt, we ſtood to the Southward, at the diſtance of about eighteen leagues from the ſhore, trying for ſoundings, as we went along, but finding none with one hundred and fifteen fathoms of line. At two the next morning, it ſhifted to Weſt, attended with rain and lightning, and blowing in heavy ſqualls. During the courſe of the day, we had ſeveral ſmall birds of a brown plumage, reſembling linnets, flying about us, which had been forced off the land by the ſtrong Weſterly gales; but toward the evening, the wind coming to the North Weſt, we ſhaped our courſe, along with them, to Weſt South Weſt, in order to regain the coaſt. In the morning of the 1ſt of November, the wind again ſhifted to South Eaſt, and bringing with it fair weather, we got forty-two ſets of diſtances of the moon from the ſun and ſtars, with four different quadrants, each ſet conſiſting of ſix obſervations; theſe agreeing pretty nearly with each other, fix our ſituation at noon the ſame day, with great accuracy, in longitude 141° 32′, the latitude, by obſervation, was 35° 17′. We found an error of latitude, Sunday 31. November. Monday 1.

* *Lage Hoeck*, or Low Point, is placed by Janſen in latitude 36° 40′.

1779. November. in our reckonings of the preceding day, of eight miles, and in this day's of ſeventeen; from whence, and from our being much more to the Eaſtward than we expected, we concluded, that there had been a ſtrong current from the South Weſt.

At two in the afternoon, we again made the land to the Weſtward, at the diſtance of about twelve leagues; the Southernmoſt land in ſight, which we ſuppoſed to be White Point *, bore Weſt South Weſt half Weſt; a hummock to the Northward, which had the appearance of being an iſland, bore North North Weſt half Weſt, within which we ſaw from the maſt-head low land, which we took to be Sand-down Point †. We ſtood in toward the land, till half paſt five, when we hauled our wind to the Southward. At this time we ſaw a number of Japaneſe veſſels, cloſe in with the land, ſeveral ſeemingly engaged in fiſhing, and others ſtanding along ſhore. We now diſcovered to the Weſtward a remarkably high mountain, with a round top, riſing far inland. There is no high ground near it, the coaſt being of a moderate elevation, and, as far as we could judge, from the hazineſs of the horizon, much broken by ſmall inlets. But to the Southward of the hummock iſland before mentioned, there appeared, at a great diſtance, within the country, a ridge of hills, ſtretching in a direction toward the mountain, and probably joining with it. As this is the moſt remarkable hill on the coaſt, we could have wiſhed to have ſettled its ſituation exactly; but having only had this ſingle view, were obliged to be contented with ſuch accuracy as our circumſtances would allow. Its latitude therefore we conceive to be 35° 20′, its longitude, eſtimated

* *Witte Hoeck*, placed by Janſen in latitude 35° 24′.

† *Sanduynege Hoeck*, in latitude 35° 55′. Janſen.

by

by its diſtance from the ſhips, at this time fifteen leagues, 140° 26′. 1779. November.

As the Dutch charts make the coaſt of Japan extend about ten leagues to the South Weſt of White Point, at eight we tacked, and ſtood off to the Eaſtward, in order to weather the point. At midnight, we again tacked to the South Weſt, expecting to fall in with the coaſt to the Southward, but were ſurprized, in the morning at eight, to ſee the hummock, at the diſtance only of three leagues, bearing Weſt North Weſt. Tueſday 2. We began, at firſt, to doubt the evidence of our ſenſes, and afterward to ſuſpect ſome deception from a ſimilarity of land; but, at noon, we found ourſelves, by obſervation, to be actually in latitude 35° 43′, at a time when our reckonings gave us 34° 48′. So that, during the eight hours in which we ſuppoſed we had made a courſe of nine leagues to the South Weſt, we had in reality been carried eight leagues from the poſition we left, in a direction diametrically oppoſite; which made, on the whole, in that ſhort ſpace of time, a difference, in our reckoning, of ſeventeen leagues. From this error, we calculated, that the current had ſet to the North Eaſt by North, at the rate of at leaſt five miles an hour. Our longitude, at this time, was 141° 16′.

The weather having now the ſame threatening appearance as on the 29th of October, which was followed by ſo ſudden and ſevere a gale, and the wind continuing at South South Eaſt, it was thought prudent to leave the ſhore, and ſtand off to the Eaſtward, to prevent our being entangled with the land. Nor were we wrong in our prognoſtications; for it ſoon afterward began, and continued till next day, to blow a heavy gale, accompanied with hazy and rainy weather. In the morning of the 3d, we found our- Wedneſ. 3.

1779. November. ſelves, by our reckoning, upward of fifty leagues from the land; which circumſtance, together with the very extraordinary effect of currents we had before experienced, the late ſeaſon of the year, the unſettled ſtate of the weather, and the little likelihood of any change for the better, made Captain Gore reſolve to leave Japan altogether, and proſecute our voyage to China; hoping, that as the track he meant to purſue had never yet been explored, he ſhould be able to make amends, by ſome new diſcovery, for the diſappointments we had met with on this coaſt.

If the reader ſhould be of opinion that we quitted this object too haſtily, in addition to the facts already ſtated, it ought to be remarked, that Kæmpfer deſcribes the coaſt of Japan as the moſt dangerous in the whole world *; that it would have been equally dangerous, in caſe of diſtreſs, to run into any of their harbours; where we know, from the beſt authorities, that the averſion of the inhabitants to any intercourſe with ſtrangers, has led them to commit the moſt atrocious barbarities; that our ſhips were in a leaky condition; that our ſails were worn out, and unable to withſtand a gale of wind; and that the rigging was ſo rotten as to require conſtant and perpetual repairs.

As the ſtrong currents, which ſet along the Eaſtern coaſt of Japan, may be of dangerous conſequence to the navigator, who is not aware of their extraordinary rapidity, I ſhall take leave of this iſland, with a ſummary account of their force and direction, as obſerved by us from the 1ſt to the 8th of November. On the 1ſt, at which time we were about eighteen leagues to the Eaſtward of White Point, the current ſet North Eaſt and by North, at the rate of three miles an hour; on the 2d, as we approached the ſhore, we

* See Kæmpfer's Hiſt. of Japan, Vol. I. p. 92, 93, 94, and 102.

found

found it continuing in the ſame direction, but increaſed in its rapidity to five miles an hour; as we left the ſhore it again became more moderate, and inclined to the Eaſtward; on the 3d, at the diſtance of ſixty leagues, it ſet to the Eaſt North Eaſt, three miles an hour; on the 4th and 5th, it turned to the Southward, and at one hundred and twenty leagues from the land, its direction was South Eaſt, and its rate not more than a mile and half an hour: on the 6th and 7th, it again ſhifted round to the North Eaſt, its force gradually diminiſhing till the 8th; when we could no longer perceive any at all. 1779. November.

During the 4th and 5th, we continued our courſe to the South Eaſt, having very unſettled weather, attended with much lightning and rain. On both days we paſſed great quantities of pumice-ſtone, ſeveral pieces of which we took up, and found to weigh from one ounce to three pounds. We conjectured that theſe ſtones had been thrown into the ſea, by eruptions of various dates, as many of them were covered with barnacles, and others quite bare. At the ſame time, we ſaw two wild ducks, and ſeveral ſmall land birds, and had many porpuſſes playing round us. Thurſday 4. Friday 5.

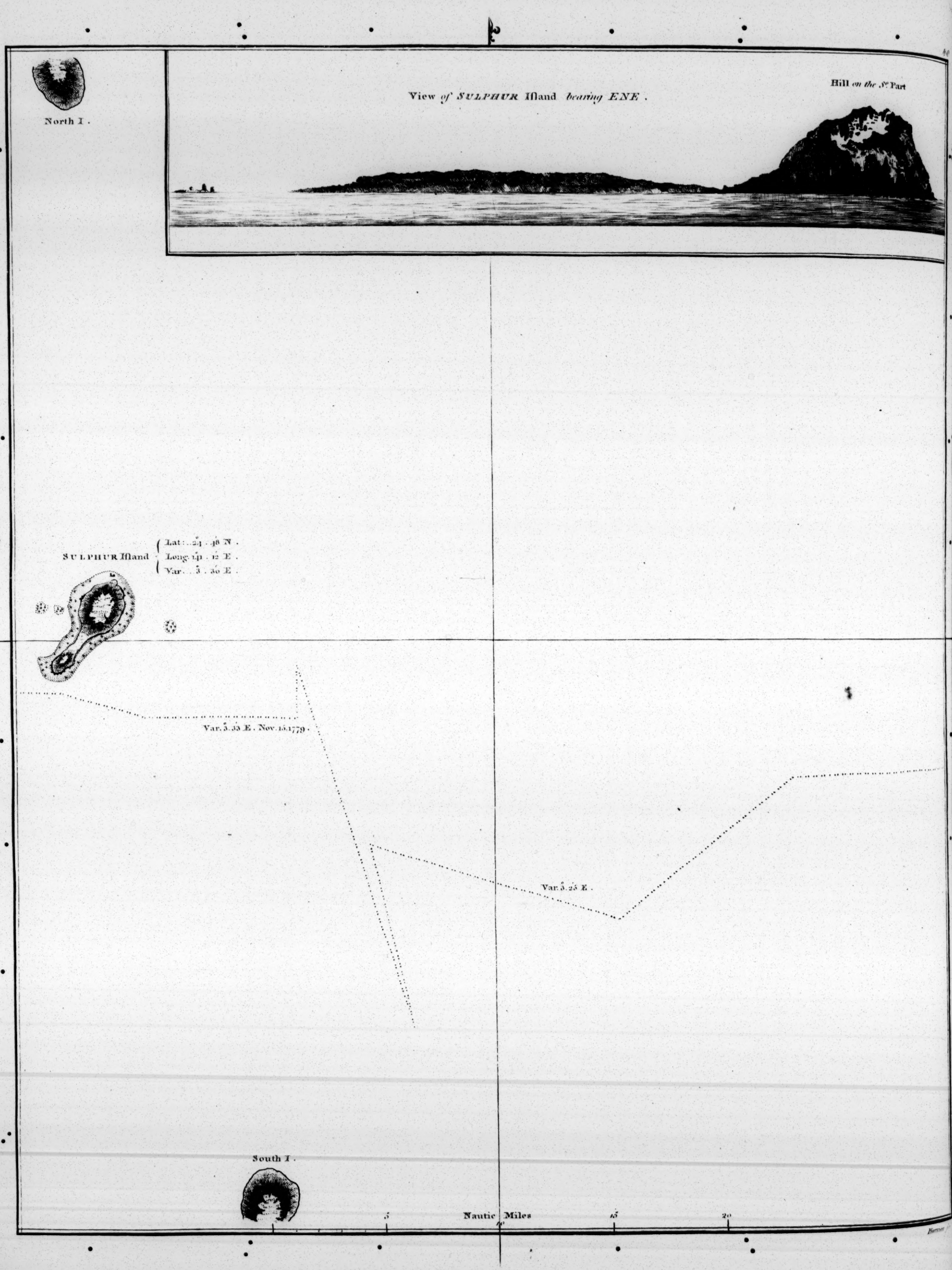
On the 6th, at day-light, we altered our courſe to the South South Weſt; but at eight in the evening, we were taken back, and obliged to ſteer to the South Eaſt. On the 7th, at noon, we ſaw a ſmall land bird, our latitude, by obſervation, at this time, being 33° 52′, and longitude 148° 42′. On the 9th, we were in latitude 31° 46′, longitude 146° 20′, when we again ſaw a ſmall land bird, a tropic bird, porpuſſes, flying fiſhes, and had a great ſwell from the Eaſt South Eaſt. We continued our courſe to the South Weſt, having the winds from the Northward, without any remarkable occurrence, till the 12th, when we had a moſt violent Saturday 6. Sunday 7. Tueſday 9. Friday 12.

1779. November. violent gale of wind from the ſame quarter, which reduced us to the fore-ſail, and mizen ſtay-ſail; and, as the weather was ſo hazy, that we were not able to ſee a cable's length before us, and many ſhoals and ſmall iſlands are laid down in our charts, in this part of the ocean, we brought to, with our heads to the South Weſt. At noon, the latitude, by account, was 27° 36′, longitude 144° 25′. In the morning
Saturday 13. of the 13th, the wind ſhifting round to the North Weſt, brought with it fair weather; but though we were at this time nearly in the ſituation given to the iſland of St. Juan, we ſaw no appearance of land. We now bore away to the South Weſt, and ſet the top-ſails, the gale ſtill continuing with great violence. At noon, the latitude, by obſervation, was 26° 0′, longitude 143° 40′, and variation 3° 50′ Eaſt. In the afternoon, we ſaw flying fiſh, and dolphins, alſo tropic birds, and albatroſſes. We ſtill continued to paſs much pumice-ſtone: indeed, the prodigious quantities of this ſubſtance, which float in the ſea, between Japan and the Baſhee Iſlands, ſeem to indicate, that ſome great volcanic convulſion muſt have happened in this part of the Pacific Ocean; and, conſequently, give ſome degree of probability to the opinion of Mr. Muller, which I have already had occaſion to mention, reſpecting the ſeparation of the continent of Jeſo, and the diſappearance of Company's Land, and Staten Iſland.

At ſix in the afternoon, we altered our courſe to the Weſt South Weſt, Captain Gore judging it uſeleſs to ſteer any longer to the South South Weſt, as we were near the meridian of the Ladrones, or Marianne Iſlands, and at no great diſtance from the track of the Manilla ſhips. In the
Sunday 14. morning of the 14th, the weather became fine, and the wind, which was moderate, gradually ſhifted to the North

Eaſt,

B L


North I.
View of SULPHUR Island bearing ENE.
Hill on the Sᵉ Part
SULPHUR Island
Lat: 24° 48' N.
Long. 141° 12' E.
Var. 3° 30' E.
Var. 3° 33' E. Nov. 15. 1779.
Var. 3° 25' E.
South I.
Nautic Miles
5
10
15
20

East, and proved to be the trade wind. At ten, Mr. Trevenen, one of the young gentlemen who came along with me into the Diſcovery, ſaw land appearing, like a peaked mountain, and bearing South Weſt. At noon, the latitude, by obſervation, was 24° 37′, longitude 142° 2′. The land, which we now diſcovered to be an iſland, bore South Weſt half Weſt, diſtant eight or ten leagues; and at two in the afternoon, we ſaw another to the Weſt North Weſt. This ſecond iſland, when ſeen at a diſtance, has the appearance of two; the South point conſiſting of a high conical hill, joined by a narrow neck to the Northern land, which is of a moderate height. As this was evidently of greater extent than the iſland to the South, we altered our courſe toward it. At four, it bore North Weſt by Weſt; but, not having day-light ſufficient to examine the coaſt, we ſtood upon our tacks during the night. 1779. November.

On the 15th, at ſix in the morning, we bore away for the South point of the larger iſland, at which time we diſcovered another high iſland, bearing North three quarters Weſt, the South iſland being on the ſame rhomb line, and the South point of the iſland ahead, Weſt by North. At nine, we were abreaſt, and within a mile of the middle iſland, but Captain Gore, finding that a boat could not land without ſome danger from the great ſurf that broke on the ſhore, kept on his courſe to the Weſtward. At noon, our latitude, by obſervation, was 24° 50′, longitude 140° 56′ Eaſt. Monday 15.

This iſland is about five miles long, in a North North Eaſt, and South South Weſt direction. The South point is a high barren hill, flattiſh at the top, and, when ſeen from the Weſt South Weſt, preſents an evident volcanic crater.

The

1779. November. The earth, rock, or ſand, for it was not eaſy to diſtinguiſh of which its ſurface is compoſed, exhibited various colours, and a conſiderable part we conjectured to be ſulphur, both from its appearance to the eye, and the ſtrong ſulphureous ſmell which we perceived, as we approached the point. Some of the officers on board the Reſolution, which paſſed nearer the land, thought they ſaw ſteams riſing from the top of the hill. From theſe circumſtances, Captain Gore gave it the name of *Sulphur Iſland*. A low, narrow, neck of land connects this hill with the South end of the iſland, which ſpreads out into a circumference of three or four leagues, and is of a moderate height. The part near the iſthmus has ſome buſhes on it, and has a green appearance, but thoſe to the North Eaſt are very barren, and full of large detached rocks, many of which were exceedingly white. Very dangerous breakers extend two miles and a half to the Eaſt, and two miles to the Weſt, off the middle part of the iſland, on which the ſea broke with great violence.

The North and South Iſlands appeared to us as ſingle mountains of a conſiderable height; the former peaked, and of a conical ſhape; the latter more ſquare and flat at the top. Sulphur Iſland we place in latitude 24° 48′, longitude 141° 12′. The North iſland in latitude 25° 14′, longitude 141° 10′. The South Iſland in latitude 24° 22′, and longitude 141° 20′. The variation obſerved was 3° 30′ Eaſt.

Captain Gore now directed his courſe to the Weſt South Weſt, for the Baſhee Iſlands, hoping to procure, at them, ſuch a ſupply of refreſhments as would help to ſhorten his ſtay in Macao. Theſe iſlands were viſited by Dampier, who

who gives a very favourable account, both of the civility of the inhabitants, and of the plenty of hogs and vegetables, with which the country abounds: they were afterward ſeen by Byron and Wallis, who paſſed them without landing. 1779. November.

In order to extend our view, in the day-time, the ſhips ſpread between two and three leagues from each other, and during the night, we went under an eaſy ſail; ſo that it was ſcarcely poſſible to paſs any land that lay in the neighbourhood of our courſe. In this manner we proceeded, without any occurrence worth remarking, with a freſh breeze from the North Eaſt, till the 22d, when it increaſed to a ſtrong gale, with violent ſqualls of wind and rain, which brought us under cloſe-reefed top-ſails. Monday 22.

At noon of the 23d, the latitude, by account, was 21° 5′, and longitude 123° 20′; at ſix in the evening, being now only twenty-one leagues from the Baſhee iſlands, according to the ſituation in Mr. Dalrymple's map, and the weather ſqually attended with a thick haze, we hauled our wind to the North North Weſt, and handed the fore top-ſail. Tueſday 23.

During the whole of the 24th it rained inceſſantly, and the wind ſtill blew a ſtorm; a heavy ſea rolled down on us from the North, and in the afternoon we had violent flaſhes of lightning from the ſame quarter. We continued upon a wind to the North North Weſt till nine o'clock, when we tacked, and ſtood to the South South Eaſt, till four in the morning of the 25th, and then wore. During the night, there was an eclipſe of the moon, but the rain prevented our making any obſervation; unfortunately, at the time of the greateſt darkneſs, a ſeaman, in ſtowing the main-top-maſt ſtay-ſail, fell overboard, but laying hold of a Wedneſ. 24. Thurſday 25.

1779. November. rope, which providentially was hanging out of the fore-chains into the water, and the ſhip being quickly brought in the wind, he was got on board without any other hurt than a ſlight bruiſe on his ſhoulder. At eight, the weather clearing, we bore away, but the wind blew ſtill ſo ſtrong, that we carried no other ſail than the fore-ſail, and the main-top-ſail cloſe reeft. About this time we ſaw a land bird reſembling a thruſh, and a ſugar-cane; at noon, the latitude, by obſervation, was 21° 35′, and longitude 121° 35′.

As our ſituation in longitude was now to the Weſt of the Baſhee, according to Mr. Dalrymple's maps, I perceived that Captain Gore was governed, in the courſe he was ſteering, by the opinions of Commodore Byron and Captain Wallis, with whom he ſailed when they paſſed theſe iſlands. The former placing it near four degrees to the Weſtward, or in longitude 118° 14′. In conſequence of this opinion, at two, we ſtood to the Southward, with a view of getting into the ſame parallel of latitude with the iſlands, before we ran down our longitude. At ſix, we were nearly in that ſituation, and conſequently ought to have been in ſight of land, according to Mr. Wallis's account, who places the Baſhees near three degrees more to the Eaſtward than Mr. Byron. The gale, at this time, had not in the leaſt abated; and Captain Gore, ſtill conceiving that the iſlands muſt undoubtedly lie to the Weſtward, brought the ſhips to, with their heads to the North Weſt, under the fore-ſail and ballanced mizen.

Friday 26. At ſix in the morning of the 26th, the wind having conſiderably abated, we bore away Weſt; ſet the top-ſails, and let out the reefs. At noon, the latitude, by obſervation, was 21° 12′, and longitude 120° 25′. We ſaw, this day, a flock

flock of ducks, and many tropic birds, alſo dolphins and porpuſſes, and ſtill continued to paſs ſeveral pumice-ſtones. We ſpent the night upon our tacks, and, at ſix in the morning of the 27th, again bore away Weſt in ſearch of the Baſhees. 1779. November. Saturday 27.

I now began to be a little apprehenſive, leſt, in ſearching for thoſe iſlands, we ſhould get ſo much to the Southward as to be obliged to paſs to leeward of the Pratas. In this caſe, it might have been exceedingly difficult for ſuch bad-ſailing ſhips as ours to fetch Macao, particularly ſhould the wind continue to blow, as it now did, from the North North Eaſt and North. As I had ſome doubts whether Mr. Dalrymple's charts were on board the Reſolution, I made ſail and hailed her; and having acquainted Captain Gore with the poſition of theſe ſhoals, and my apprehenſions of being driven to the Southward, he informed me that he ſhould continue on his courſe for the day, as he was ſtill in hopes of finding Admiral Byron's longitude right; and therefore ordered me to ſpread a few miles to the South.

At noon, the weather became hazy; the latitude, by reckoning, was 21° 2′, and longitude 118° 30′; and at ſix, having got to the Weſtward of the Baſhees, by Mr. Byron's account, Captain Gore hauled his wind to the North Weſt, under an eaſy ſail, the wind blowing very ſtrong, and there being every appearance of a dirty boiſterous night. At four in the morning of the 28th, we ſaw the Reſolution, then half a mile ahead of us, wear, and immediately perceived breakers cloſe under our lee. At day-light, we ſaw the iſland of Prata; and at half paſt ſix we wore again, and ſtood toward the ſhoal, and finding we could not weather it, bore away, and ran to leeward. As we paſſed the South Sunday 28.

1779. November. ſide, within a mile of the reef, we obſerved two remarkable patches on the edge of the breakers, that looked like wrecks. At noon, the latitude found by double altitudes was 20° 39′, longitude 116° 45′. The iſland bore North three quarters Eaſt, diſtant three or four leagues. On the South Weſt ſide of the reef, and near the South end of the iſland, we thought we ſaw, from the maſt-head, openings in the reef, which promiſed ſafe anchorage.

The Prata ſhoal is of a conſiderable extent, being ſix leagues from North to South, and ſtretching three or four leagues to the Eaſtward of the iſland; its limit to the Weſtward we were not in a ſituation to determine. The North Eaſt extremity we place in latitude 20° 58′, and longitude 117°; and the South Weſt in latitude 20° 45′, and longitude 116° 44′.

For the remaining part of the day we carried a preſs of ſail, and kept the wind, which was North Eaſt by North, in order to ſecure our paſſage to Macao. It was fortunate, that toward evening the wind favoured us, by changing two points more to the Eaſt; for had the wind and weather continued the ſame as during the preceding week, I doubt whether we could have fetched that port, in which caſe we muſt have born away for Batavia; a place we all dreaded exceedingly, from the ſad havoc the unhealthineſs of the climate had made in the crews of the former ſhips that had been out on diſcovery, and had touched there.

Monday 29. In the forenoon of the 29th, we paſſed ſeveral Chineſe fiſhing boats, who eyed us with great indifference. They fiſh with a large dredge-net, ſhaped like a hollow cone, having a flat iron rim fixed to the lower part of its mouth. The net is made faſt with cords to the head and ſtern of the boat, which being left to drive with the wind, draws the

the net after it with the iron part dragging along the bottom. We were ſorry to find the ſea covered with the wrecks of boats that had been loſt, as we conjectured, in the late boiſterous weather. At noon, we were in latitude, by obſervation, 22° 1′, having run one hundred and ten miles upon a North Weſt courſe ſince the preceding noon. Being now nearly in the latitude of the Lema Iſlands, we bore away Weſt by North, and after running twenty-two miles, ſaw one of them nine or ten leagues to the Weſtward. At ſix, the extremes of the iſlands in ſight bore North North Weſt half Weſt, and Weſt North Weſt half Weſt; diſtant from the neareſt four or five leagues; the depth of water twenty-two fathoms, over a ſoft muddy bottom. We now ſhortened ſail, and kept upon our tacks for the night. By Mr. Bayly's time-keeper, the Grand Lema bore from the Prata Iſland, North 60° Weſt, one hundred and fifty-three miles; and by our run, North 57° Weſt, one hundred and forty-ſix miles. 1779. November.

In the morning of the 30th, we ran along the Lema Iſles, which, like all the other iſlands on this coaſt, are without wood, and, as far as we could obſerve, without cultivation. At ſeven o'clock, we had preciſely the ſame view of theſe iſlands, as is repreſented in a plate of Lord Anſon's voyage. At nine o'clock, a Chineſe boat, which had been before with the Reſolution, came along-ſide, and wanted to put on board us a pilot, which however we declined, as it was our buſineſs to follow our conſort. We ſoon after paſſed the rock marked R, in Lord Anſon's Plate; but, inſtead of hauling up to the Northward of the grand Ladrone Iſland, as was done in the Centurion, we proceeded to leeward. Tueſday 30.

It is hardly neceſſary to caution the mariner not to take

1779. November.

take this courſe, as the danger is ſufficiently obvious; for ſhould the wind blow ſtrong, and the current ſet with it, it will be extremely difficult to fetch Macao. Indeed we might, with great ſafety, by the direction of Mr. Dalrymple's map, have gone either entirely to the North of the Lema iſles, or between them, and made the wind fair for Macao. Our fears of miſſing this port, and being forced to Batavia, added to the ſtrong and eager deſires of hearing news from Europe, made us rejoice to ſee the Reſolution ſoon after fire a gun, and hoiſt her colours as a ſignal for a pilot. On repeating the ſignal, we ſaw an excellent race between four Chineſe boats; and Captain Gore, having engaged with the man who arrived firſt, to carry the ſhip to the Typa, for thirty dollars, ſent me word, that, as we could eaſily follow, that expence might be ſaved to us. Soon after, a ſecond pilot getting on board the Reſolution, inſiſted on conducting the ſhip, and, without further ceremony, laid hold of the wheel, and began to order the ſails to be trimmed. This occaſioned a violent diſpute, which at laſt was compromiſed, by their agreeing to go ſhares in the money. At noon, the latitude, by obſervation, was 21° 57′ North, and longitude 114° 2′ Eaſt; the grand Ladrone iſland extending from North Weſt half North, to North half Weſt, diſtant four miles. The land of which the bearings are here given, we conceived to be one iſland; but afterward found the Weſtern part to be the iſland marked *z* in Mr. Dalrymple's chart of part of the coaſt of China, &c. which, at that time, we unfortunately had not on board.

In obedience to the inſtructions given to Captain Cook by the Board of Admiralty, it now became neceſſary to demand of the officers and men their Journals, and what other

other papers they might have in their poſſeſſion, relating to the hiſtory of our voyage. The execution of theſe orders ſeemed to require ſome delicacy, as well as firmneſs. I could not be ignorant, that the greateſt part of our officers, and ſeveral of the ſeamen, had amuſed themſelves with writing accounts of our proceedings for their own private ſatisfaction, or that of their friends, which they might be unwilling, in their preſent form, to have ſubmitted to the inſpection of ſtrangers. On the other hand, I could not, conſiſtently with the inſtructions we had received, leave in their cuſtody papers, which, either from careleſſneſs or deſign, might fall into the hands of printers, and give riſe to ſpurious and imperfect accounts of the voyage, to the diſcredit of our labours, and perhaps to the prejudice of officers, who, though innocent, might be ſuſpected of having been the authors of ſuch publications. As ſoon, therefore, as I had aſſembled the ſhip's company on deck, I acquainted them with the orders we had received, and the reaſons which, I thought, ought to induce them to yield a ready obedience. At the ſame time, I told them, that any papers which they were deſirous not to have ſent to the Admiralty, ſhould be ſealed up in their preſence, and kept in my own cuſtody, till the intentions of the Board, with regard to the publication of the Hiſtory of the Voyage, were fulfilled; after which, they ſhould faithfully be reſtored back to them.

1779. November.

It is with the greateſt ſatisfaction I can relate, that my propoſals met with the approbation, and the cheerful compliance both of the officers and men; and I am perſuaded, that every ſcrap of paper, containing any tranſactions relating

1779. November. lating to the voyage, were given up. Indeed it is doing bare juſtice to the ſeamen of this ſhip to declare, that they were the moſt obedient, and the beſt-diſpoſed men I ever knew, though almoſt all of them were very young, and had never before ſerved in a ſhip of war.

CHAP.

BL

SKETCH of the TYPA and MACAO.

Typa { Lat. 22°. 9'. N.
Lon. 113°. 48'. E.
Var.n 0. 19'. W. 1780.

It was high water *on the* full *and* Change *of the* Moon
at 5h. 15m. *in the* Typa *and*
at 5. 50. *in* Macao Harbour } *the greatest* rise 6 feet.

Illa Verde

dry at low water

Harbour

MACAO

Macao Road

Shoal Point

Rocky head

References.

A. A line *for sailing into the* Harbour *the* rocky Point B open *between* Point C & Point D.

E. *In going into the* Typa *keep the south shore on board till the* Monastry F *opens over* Rocky head G *in the* line E; *then steer for* Shoal Point *and* ⊕ *in* 4 *fathems water.*

N.B. The Harbour *of* Macao *is drawn by the Eye and the* Soundings *taken at* low water.

Nautic Miles.

CHAP. IX.

Working up to Macao.—A Chineſe Comprador.—Sent on Shore to viſit the Portugueze Governor.—Effects of the Intelligence we received from Europe.—Anchor in the Typa.—Paſſage up to Canton.—Bocca Tygris.—Wampû.—Deſcription of a Sampane.—Reception at the Engliſh Factory.—Inſtance of the ſuſpicious Character of the Chineſe.—Of their Mode of trading.—Of the City of Canton.—Its Size.—Population.—Number of Sampanes.—Military Force.—Of the Streets and Houſes.—Viſit to a Chineſe.—Return to Macao.—Great Demand for the Sea-otter Skins.—Plan of a Voyage for opening a Fur Trade on the Weſtern Coaſt of America, and proſecuting further Diſcoveries in the Neighbourhood of Japan.—Departure from Macao.—Price of Proviſions in China.

1779. November. Tueſday 30. December. Wedneſ. 1.

WE kept working to windward till ſix in the evening, when we came to anchor, by the direction of the Chineſe pilot on board the Reſolution, who imagined the tide was ſetting againſt us. In this, however, he was much deceived; as we found, upon making the experiment, that it ſet to the Northward till ten o'clock. The next morning he fell into a ſimilar miſtake; for, at five, on the appearance of ſlack water, he gave orders to get under way; but the ignorance he had diſcovered, having put us

1779. December. on our guard, we choſe to be convinced, by our own obſervations, before we weighed; and, on trying the tide, we found a ſtrong under-tow, which obliged us to keep faſt till eleven o'clock. From theſe circumſtances it appears, that the tide had run down twelve hours.

During the afternoon, we kept ſtanding on our tacks, between the iſland of Potoe, and the Grand Ladrone, having paſſed to the Eaſtward of the former. At nine o'clock, the tide beginning to ebb, we again came to anchor in ſix fathoms water; the town of Macao bearing North Weſt, three leagues diſtant; and the iſland of Potoe South half Weſt, two leagues diſtant. This iſland lies two leagues to the North North Weſt of the iſland marked *Z* in Mr. Dalrymple's chart, which we, at firſt, took to be part of the Grand Ladrone. It is ſmall and rocky; and off the Weſt end there is ſaid to be foul ground, though we paſſed near it without perceiving any.

Thurſday 2. In the forenoon of the 2d, one of the Chineſe contractors, who are called *Compradors*, went on board the Reſolution, and ſold to Captain Gore two hundred pounds weight of beef, together with a conſiderable quantity of greens, oranges, and eggs. A proportionable ſhare of theſe articles was ſent to the Diſcovery; and an agreement made with the man to furniſh us with a daily ſupply, for which, however, he inſiſted on being paid before-hand.

Our pilot, pretending he could carry the ſhips no farther, Captain Gore was obliged to diſcharge him, and we were left to our own guidance.

At two in the afternoon, the tide flowing, we weighed, and worked to windward; and, at ſeven, anchored in three and a half fathoms of water, Macao bearing Weſt, three miles diſtant. This ſituation was, indeed, very ineligible, being

being expoſed to the North Eaſt, and having ſhoal water, not more than two fathoms and a half deep, to leeward; but as no nautical deſcription is given, in Lord Anſon's voyage, of the harbour in which the Centurion anchored, and Mr. Dalrymple's general map, which was the only one on board, was on too ſmall a ſcale to ſerve for our direction, the ſhips were obliged to remain there all night. 1779. December.

In the evening, Captain Gore ſent me on ſhore to viſit the Portugueze Governor, and to requeſt his aſſiſtance in procuring refreſhments for our crews, which he thought might be done on more reaſonable terms than the *Comprador* would undertake to furniſh them. At the ſame time, I took a liſt of the naval ſtores, of which both veſſels were greatly in want, with an intention of proceeding immediately to Canton, and applying to the ſervants of the Eaſt India Company, who were, at that time, reſident there. On my arrival at the citadel, the Fort-major informed me, that the Governor was ſick, and not able to ſee company; but that we might be aſſured of receiving every aſſiſtance in their power. This, however, I underſtood would be very inconſiderable, as they were entirely dependent on the Chineſe, even for their daily ſubſiſtence. Indeed, the anſwer returned to the firſt requeſt I made, gave me a ſufficient proof of the fallen ſtate of the Portugueze power; for, on my acquainting the Major with my deſire of proceeding immediately to Canton, he told me, that they could not venture to furniſh me with a boat, till leave was obtained from the *Hoppo*, or officer of the cuſtoms; and that the application for this purpoſe muſt be made to the Chineſe government at Canton.

The mortification I felt at meeting with this unexpected

1779. December. delay, could only be equalled by the extreme impatience with which we had ſo long waited for an opportunity of receiving intelligence from Europe. It often happens, that in the eager purſuit of an object, we overlook the eaſieſt and moſt obvious means of attaining it. This was actually my caſe at preſent; for I was returning under great dejection to the ſhip, when the Portugueze officer, who attended me, aſked me, if I did not mean to viſit the Engliſh gentlemen at Macao. I need not add with what tranſport I received the information this queſtion conveyed to me; nor the anxious hopes and fears, the conflict between curioſity and apprehenſion, which paſſed in my mind, as we walked toward the houſe of one of our countrymen.

In this ſtate of agitation, it was not ſurprizing, that our reception, though no way deficient in civility or kindneſs, ſhould appear cold and formal. In our inquiries, as far as they related to objects of private concern, we met, as was indeed to be expected, with little or no ſatisfaction; but the events of a public nature, which had happened ſince our departure, and now, for the firſt time, burſt all at once upon us, overwhelmed every other feeling, and left us, for ſome time, almoſt without the power of reflection. For ſeveral days we continued queſtioning each other about the truth of what we had heard, as if deſirous of ſeeking, in doubt and ſuſpence, for that relief and conſolation, which the reality of our calamities appeared totally to exclude. Theſe ſenſations were ſucceeded by the moſt poignant regret at finding ourſelves cut off, at ſuch a diſtance, from the ſcene where, we imagined, the fate of fleets and armies was every moment deciding.

The intelligence we had juſt received of the ſtate of affairs

fairs in Europe, made us the more exceedingly anxious to haſten our departure as much as poſſible; and I, therefore, renewed my attempt to procure a paſſage to Canton, but without effect. The difficulty ariſing from the eſtabliſhed policy of the country, I was now told, would probably be much increaſed by an incident that had happened a few weeks before our arrival. Captain Panton, in the Seahorſe, a ſhip of war of twenty-four guns, had been ſent from Madras, to urge the payment of a debt owing by the Chineſe merchants of Canton to private Britiſh ſubjects in the Eaſt Indies and Europe, which, including the principal and compound intereſt, amounted, I underſtood, to near a million ſterling. For this purpoſe, he had orders to inſiſt on an audience with the Viceroy of Canton, which, after ſome delay, and not without recourſe being had to threats, was, at length, obtained. The anſwer he received, on the ſubject of his miſſion, was fair and ſatisfactory; but, immediately after his departure, an edict was ſtuck up on the houſes of the Europeans, and in the public places of the city, forbidding all foreigners, on any pretence, to lend money to the ſubjects of the Emperor. 1779. December.

This meaſure had occaſioned very ſerious alarms at Canton. The Chineſe merchants, who had incurred the debt contrary to the commercial laws of their own country, and denied, in part, the juſtice of the demand, were afraid that intelligence of this would be carried to Pekin; and that the Emperor, who has the character of a juſt and rigid prince, might puniſh them with the loſs of their fortunes, if not of their lives. On the other hand, the Select Committee, to whom the cauſe of the claimants was ſtrongly recommended by the Preſidency of Madras, were extremely apprehenſive,

1779. December. apprehenſive, leſt they ſhould embroil themſelves with the Chineſe government at Canton; and, by that means, bring, perhaps, irreparable miſchief on the Company's affairs in China. For I was further informed, that the *Mandarins* were always ready to take occaſion, even on the ſlighteſt grounds, to put a ſtop to their trading; and that it was often with great difficulty, and never without certain expence, that they could get ſuch reſtraints taken off. Theſe impoſitions were daily increaſing; and, indeed, I found it a prevailing opinion, in all the European factories, that they ſhould ſoon be reduced either to quit the commerce of that country, or to bear the ſame indignities to which the Dutch are ſubjected in Japan.

The arrival of the Reſolution and Diſcovery, at ſuch a time, could not fail of occaſioning freſh alarms; and, therefore, finding there was no probability of my proceeding to Canton, I diſpatched a letter to the Engliſh ſupercargoes, to acquaint them with the cauſe of our putting into the Typa, to requeſt their aſſiſtance in procuring me a paſſport, and in forwarding the ſtores we wanted, of which I ſent them a liſt, as expeditiouſly as poſſible.

Friday 3. The next morning I was accompanied on board by our countryman, who pointing out to us the ſituation of the Typa, we weighed at half paſt ſix, and ſtood toward it; but the wind failing, we came to, at eight, in three and a half fathoms water; Macao bearing Weſt North Weſt, three miles diſtant; the Grand Ladrone South Eaſt by South. The Reſolution here ſaluted the Portugueze fort with eleven guns, which were returned by the ſame num-

Saturday 4. ber. Early on the 4th, we again weighed, and ſtood into the

the Typa, and moored with the ſtream anchor and cable to the Weſtward. 1779. December.

The *Comprador*, whom we at firſt engaged with, having diſappeared with a ſmall ſum of money, which had been given him to purchaſe proviſions, we contracted with another, who continued to ſupply both ſhips, during our whole ſtay. This was done ſecretly, and in the night-time, under pretence, that it was contrary to the regulations of the port; but we ſuſpected all this caution to have been uſed with a view either of enhancing the price of the articles he furniſhed, or of ſecuring to himſelf the profits of his employment, without being obliged to ſhare them with the *Mandarins*.

On the 9th, Captain Gore received an anſwer from the Committee of the Engliſh Supercargoes at Canton, in which they aſſured him, that their beſt endeavours ſhould be uſed to procure the ſupplies we ſtood in need of, as expeditiouſly as poſſible; and that a paſſport ſhould be ſent for one of his officers, hoping, at the ſame time, that we were ſufficiently acquainted with the character of the Chineſe Government, to attribute any delays, that might unavoidably happen, to their true cauſe. Thurſday 9.

The day following, an Engliſh merchant, from one of our ſettlements in the Eaſt Indies, applied to Captain Gore for the aſſiſtance of a few hands to navigate a veſſel he had purchaſed at Macao, up to Canton. Captain Gore judging this a good opportunity for me to proceed to that place, gave orders that I ſhould take along with me my Second Lieutenant, the Lieutenant of marines, and ten ſeamen. Though this was not preciſely the mode in which I could have wiſhed to viſit Canton, yet as it was very uncertain when the paſſport might arrive, and my preſence might Friday 10.

1779. December. might contribute materially to the expediting of our ſupplies, I did not heſitate to put myſelf on board, having left orders with Mr. Williamſon, to get the Diſcovery ready for ſea as ſoon as poſſible, and to make ſuch additions and alterations in her upper works, as might contribute to make her more defenſible. That the ſeries of our aſtronomical obſervations might ſuffer no interruption by my abſence, I intruſted the care of continuing them to Mr. Trevenen, in whoſe abilities and diligence I could repoſe an intire confidence.

Saturday 11. We left the harbour of Macao on the 11th of December, and ſailing round the South Eaſtern extremity of the iſland, we ſteered to the Northward, leaving, as we paſſed along, Lantao, Lintin, and ſeveral ſmaller iſlands, to the right. All theſe iſlands, as well as that of Macao, which lie to the left, are entirely without wood; the land is high and barren, and uninhabited, except occaſionally by fiſhermen. As we approached the Bocca Tygris, which is thirteen leagues from Macao, the Chineſe coaſt appears to the Eaſtward in ſteep white cliffs; the two forts, commanding the mouth of the river, are exactly in the ſame ſtate as when Lord Anſon was here; that on the left is a fine old caſtle, ſurrounded by a grove of trees, and has an agreeable romantic appearance.

We were here viſited by an officer of the cuſtoms; on which occaſion the owner of the veſſel, being apprehenſive that, if we were diſcovered on board, it would occaſion ſome alarm, and might be attended with diſagreeable conſequences, begged us to retire into the cabin below.

The breadth of the river above theſe forts is variable, the banks being low and flat, and ſubject to be overflowed by the tide to a great extent. The ground on each ſide is level,

and

and laid out in rice fields; but as we advanced, it roſe gradually into hills of conſiderable declivity, the ſides of which are cut into terraces, and planted with ſweet potatoes, ſugar-canes, yams, plantains, and the cotton-tree. We ſaw many lofty *pagodas*, ſcattered over the country, and ſeveral towns at a diſtance, ſome of which appeared to be of a conſiderable ſize. 1779. December.

We did not arrive at Wampû, which is only nine leagues from the Bocca Tygris, till the 18th, our progreſs having been retarded by contrary winds, and the lightneſs of the veſſel. Wampû is a ſmall Chineſe town, off which the ſhips of the different nations, who trade here, lie, in order to take in their lading. The river, higher up, is ſaid by M. Sonnerat not to be deep enough to admit heavy-laden veſſels, even if the policy of the Chineſe had ſuffered the Europeans to navigate them up to Canton; but this circumſtance I cannot take upon me to decide on, as no ſtranger, I believe, has been permitted to inform himſelf with certainty of the truth. The ſmall iſlands, that lie oppoſite to the town, are allotted to the ſeveral factories, who have built warehouſes for the reception of the merchandize that is brought down from Canton. Saturday 18.

From Wampû, I immediately proceeded in a *ſampane*, or Chineſe boat, to Canton, which is about two leagues and a half higher up the river. Theſe boats are the neateſt and moſt convenient for paſſengers I ever ſaw. They are of various ſizes, almoſt flat at the bottom, very broad upon the beam, and narrow at the head and ſtern, which are raiſed and ornamented; the middle, where we ſat, was arched over with a roof of bamboo, which may be raiſed or lowered at pleaſure; in the ſides were ſmall windows with ſhutters, and the apartment was furniſhed with hand-

1779. December.

ſome mats, chairs, and tables. In the ſtern was placed a ſmall waxen idol, in a caſe of gilt leather, before which ſtood a pot containing lighted tapers made of dry chips, or matches, and gum. The hire of this boat was a Spaniſh dollar.

I reached Canton a little after it was dark, and landed at the Engliſh factory, where, though my arrival was very unexpected, I was received with every mark of attention and civility. The Select Committee, at this time, conſiſted of Mr. Fitzhugh the Preſident, Mr. Bevan and Mr. Rapier. They immediately gave me an account of ſuch ſtores as the India ſhips were able to afford us; and though I have not the ſmalleſt doubt, that the Commanders were deſirous of aſſiſting us with every thing they could ſpare, conſiſtently with a regard to their own ſafety, and the intereſt of their employers, yet it was a great diſappointment to me to find in their liſt ſcarcely any articles of cordage or canvaſs, of both which we ſtood principally in need. It was, however, ſome conſolation to underſtand, that the ſtores were in readineſs for ſhipping, and that the proviſions we required might be had at a day's notice. Wiſhing therefore to make my ſtay here as ſhort as poſſible, I requeſted the gentlemen to procure junks or boats for me the next day, with an intention of leaving Canton the following one; but I was ſoon informed, that a buſineſs of that kind was not to be tranſacted ſo rapidly in this country; that leave muſt be firſt procured from the Viceroy; that the *Hoppo*, or principal officer of the cuſtoms, muſt be applied to for *chops*, or permits; and that theſe favours were not granted without mature deliberation; in ſhort, that patience was an indiſpenſable virtue in China; and that they hoped to have the pleaſure of making the factory agreeable to me, for a few

few days longer than I ſeemed willing to favour them with my company. 1779. December.

Though I was not much diſpoſed to reliſh this compliment, yet I could not help being diverted with an incident that occurred very opportunely to convince me of the truth of their repreſentations, and of the ſuſpicious character of the Chineſe. The reader will recollect, that it was now about fifteen days ſince Captain Gore had written to the factory, to deſire their aſſiſtance in procuring leave for one of his officers to paſs to Canton. In conſequence of this application, they had engaged one of the principal Chineſe merchants of the place, to intereſt himſelf in our favour, and to ſolicit the buſineſs with the Viceroy. This perſon came to viſit the Preſident, whilſt we were talking on the ſubject, and with great ſatisfaction and complacency in his countenance acquainted him, that he had at laſt ſucceeded in his applications, and that a paſſport for one of the officers of the *Ladrone* ſhip (or pirate) would be ready in a few days. The Preſident immediately told him not to give himſelf any farther trouble, as the officer, pointing to me, was already arrived. It is impoſſible to deſcribe the terror, which ſeized the old man on hearing this intelligence. His head ſunk upon his breaſt, and the ſofa on which he was ſitting ſhook, from the violence of his agitation. Whether the *Ladrone* ſhip was the object of his apprehenſions, or his own government, I could not diſcover; but after continuing in this deplorable ſtate a few minutes, Mr. Bevan bade him not deſpair, and recounted to him the manner in which I had paſſed from Macao, the reaſons of my journey to Canton, and my wiſhes to leave it as ſoon as poſſible. This laſt circumſtance ſeemed particularly agreeable to him, and gave me hopes, that I ſhould find

1779. December.

him equally diſpoſed to haſten my departure; and yet, as ſoon as he had recovered the courage to ſpeak, he began to recount the unavoidable delays that would occur in my buſineſs, the difficulty of gaining admittance to the Vice-roy, the jealouſies and ſuſpicions of the *Mandarins*, reſpecting our real deſigns, which had riſen, he ſaid, to an extraordinary height, from the ſtrange account we had given of ourſelves.

After waiting ſeveral days, with great impatience, for the event of our application, without underſtanding that the matter was at all advanced toward a concluſion, I applied to the Commander of an Engliſh country ſhip, who was to ſail on the 25th, and who offered to take the men and ſtores on board, and to lie to, if the weather ſhould permit, off Macao, till we could ſend boats to take them out of his ſhip. At the ſame time he apprized me of the danger there might be of his being driven with them out to ſea. Whilſt I was doubting what meaſures to purſue, the Commander of another country ſhip brought me a letter from Captain Gore, in which he acquainted me, that he had engaged him to bring us down from Canton, and to deliver the ſtores we had procured, at his own riſk, in the Typa. All our difficulties being thus removed, I had leiſure to attend to the purchaſe of our proviſions and ſtores, which was completed on the 26th; and the day following, the whole ſtock was ſent on board.

As Canton was likely to be the moſt advantageous market for furs, I was deſired by Captain Gore to carry with me about twenty ſea-otters ſkins, chiefly the property of our deceaſed Commanders, and to diſpoſe of them at the beſt price I could procure; a commiſſion, which gave me an opportunity of becoming a little acquainted with the genius

nius of the Chineſe for trade. Having acquainted ſome of the Engliſh ſupercargoes with theſe circumſtances, I deſired them to recommend me to ſome Chineſe merchant of credit and reputation, who would at once offer me a fair and reaſonable price. I was accordingly directed to a member of the *Hong*, a ſociety of the principal merchants of the place, who being fully informed of the nature of the buſineſs, appeared ſenſible of the delicacy of my ſituation; aſſured me, I might depend on his integrity; and that, in a caſe of this ſort, he ſhould conſider himſelf merely as an agent, without looking for any profit to himſelf. Having laid my goods before him, he examined them with great care, over and over again, and at laſt told me, that he could not venture to offer more than three hundred dollars for them. As I knew, from the price our ſkins had ſold for in Kamtſchatka, that he had not offered me one half their value, I found myſelf under the neceſſity of driving a bargain. In my turn, I therefore demanded one thouſand; my Chineſe then advanced to five hundred; then offered me a private preſent of tea and porcelain, amounting to one hundred more; then the ſame ſum in money; and, laſtly, roſe to ſeven hundred dollars, on which I fell to nine hundred. Here, each ſide declaring he would not recede, we parted; but the Chineſe ſoon returned with a liſt of India goods, which he now propoſed I ſhould take in exchange, and which, I was afterward told, would have amounted in value, if honeſtly delivered, to double the ſum he had before offered. Finding I did not chooſe to deal in this mode, he propoſed as his *ultimatum*, that we ſhould divide the difference, which, being tired of the conteſt, I conſented to, and received the eight hundred dollars.

1779. December.

The ill health, which at this time I laboured under, left me

1779. December.

me little reaſon to lament the very narrow limits, within which the policy of the Chineſe obliges every European at Canton to confine his curioſity. I ſhould otherwiſe have felt exceedingly tantalized with living under the walls of ſo great a city, full of objects of novelty, without being able to enter it. The accounts given of this place by *Peres* le Comte and Du Halde, are in every one's hand. Theſe authors have lately been accuſed of great exaggeration by M. Sonnerat; for which reaſon the following obſervations, collected from the information with which I have been obligingly furniſhed by ſeveral Engliſh gentlemen, who were a long time reſident at Canton, may not be unacceptable to the Public.

Canton, including the old and new town, and the ſuburbs, is about ten miles in circuit. With reſpect to its population, if one may judge of the whole, from what is ſeen in the ſuburbs, I ſhould conceive it to fall conſiderably ſhort of an European town of the ſame magnitude. Le Comte eſtimated the number of inhabitants at one million five hundred thouſand; Du Halde at one million; and M. Sonnerat ſays he has aſcertained them to be no more than ſeventy-five thouſand*: but, as this gentleman has not favoured us with the grounds on which his calculation was founded; and, beſides, appears as deſirous of depreciating every thing that relates to the Chineſe, as the Jeſuits may be of magnifying, his opinion certainly admits of ſome doubt. The following circumſtances may perhaps lead the reader to form a judgment with tolerable accuracy on this ſubject.

* J'ai *verifié* moi-même, avec pluſieurs Chinois, la population de Canton, de la ville de Tartare, & de celle de Battaux, &c. *Voyage aux Indes, &c*, par M. Sonnerat, Tom. II. p. 14.

A Chineſe

1779. December.

A Chineſe houſe, undoubtedly, occupies more ſpace than is uſually taken up by houſes in Europe: but the proportion ſuggeſted by M. Sonnerat, of four or five to one, certainly goes much beyond the truth. To this ſhould be added, that a great many houſes, in the ſuburbs of Canton, are occupied, for commercial purpoſes only, by merchants and rich tradeſmen, whoſe families live entirely within the city. On the other hand, a Chineſe family appears to conſiſt, on an average, of more perſons than an European. A *Mandarin*, according to his rank and ſubſtance, has from five to twenty wives. A merchant, from three to five. One of this claſs at Canton, had, indeed, twenty-five wives, and thirty-ſix children; but this was mentioned to me as a very extraordinary inſtance. An opulent tradeſman has uſually two; and the lower claſs of people very rarely more than one. Their ſervants are at leaſt double in number to thoſe employed by perſons of the ſame condition in Europe. If, then, we ſuppoſe a Chineſe family one-third larger, and an European houſe two-thirds leſs, than each other, a Chineſe city will contain only half the number of inhabitants contained in a European town of the ſame ſize. According to theſe *data*, the city and ſuburbs of Canton may probably contain about one hundred and fifty thouſand.

With reſpect to the number of inhabited *Sampanes*, I found different opinions were entertained; but none placing them lower than forty thouſand. They are moored in rows cloſe to each other, with a narrow paſſage, at intervals, for the boats to paſs up and down the river. As the Tygris, at Canton, is ſomewhat wider than the Thames, at London; and the whole river is covered in this manner for the extent of at leaſt a mile; this account of their number does not appear

1779. December.

appear to me, in the leaſt, exaggerated; and if it be allowed, the number of inhabitants in the Sampanes alone (for each of them contains one family), muſt amount to nearly three times the number ſuppoſed by M. Sonnerat to be in the whole city.

The military force of the province, of which Canton is the capital, amounts to fifty thouſand men. It is ſaid that twenty thouſand are ſtationed in and about the city; and, as a proof of this, I was aſſured, that, on the occaſion of ſome diſturbance that had happened at Canton, thirty thouſand men were drawn together within the ſpace of a few hours.

The ſtreets are long, and moſt of them narrow and irregular; but well paved with large ſtones; and, for the moſt part, kept exceedingly clean. The houſes are built of brick, one ſtory high, having generally two or three courts backward, in which are the ware-houſes for merchandize, and, in the houſes within the city, the apartments for the women. A very few of the meaneſt ſort are built of wood.

The houſes belonging to the European factors, are built on an handſome quay, with a regular façade of two ſtories toward the river, and diſpoſed, within, partly after the European, and partly after the Chineſe manner. Adjoining to theſe are a number of houſes, belonging to the Chineſe, and hired out to the commanders of ſhips, and merchants, who make an occaſional ſtay. As no European is allowed to bring his wife to Canton, the Engliſh ſupercargoes live together, at a common table, which is kept by the company, and have each a ſeparate apartment, conſiſting of three or four rooms. The time of their reſidence ſeldom exceeds eight months annually; and as they are pretty conſtantly

1779. December.

ſtantly employed, during that time, in the ſervice of the Company, they may ſubmit, with the leſs regret, to the reſtraints they are kept under. They very rarely pay any viſits within the walls of Canton, except on public occaſions. Indeed, nothing gave me ſo unfavourable an idea of the character of the Chineſe, as to find, that, amongſt ſo many perſons of liberal minds, and amiable manners, ſome of whom have reſided in that country for near fifteen years together, they have never formed any friendſhip or ſocial connection. As ſoon as the laſt ſhip quits Wampû, they are all obliged to retire to Macao; but, as a proof of the excellent police of the country, they leave all the money they poſſeſs in *ſpecie* behind them, which, I was told, ſometimes amounted to one hundred thouſand pounds ſterling, and for which they had no other ſecurity than the ſeals of the merchants of the *Hong*, the viceroy, and *Mandarins*.

During my ſtay at Canton, I was carried, by one of the Engliſh gentlemen, to viſit a perſon of the firſt conſequence in the place. We were received in a long room or gallery, at the upper end of which ſtood a table, with a large chair behind it, and a row of chairs extending from it on each ſide down the room. Being previouſly inſtructed, that the point of civility conſiſted in remaining as long unſeated as poſſible, I readily acquitted myſelf of this piece of *etiquette*; after which we were entertained with tea, and ſome preſerved and freſh fruits. Our hoſt was very fat, with a heavy dull countenance, and of great gravity in his deportment. He ſpoke a little broken Engliſh and Portugueze; and, after we had taken our refreſhment, he carried us about his houſe and garden; and having ſhewed us all the improvements he was making, we took our leave.

1779. December. Having procured an account of the price of proviſions at Canton, as ſettled for the year 1780, which the reader will find at the end of this Chapter, I have only to obſerve, that the different articles are ſuppoſed to be the beſt of the kind; and that the natives purchaſe the ſame for nearly one-third leſs than the price, which in the liſt is fixed only for ſtrangers.

I had hitherto intended, as well to avoid the trouble and delay of applying for paſſports, as to ſave the unneceſſary expence of hiring a *Sampane*, which I underſtood amounted at leaſt to twelve pounds ſterling, to go along with the ſtores to Macao, in the country merchant's ſhip I have before mentioned: but having received an invitation from two Engliſh gentlemen, who had obtained paſſports for four, I accepted, along with Mr. Philips, their offer of places in a Chineſe boat, and left Mr. Lannyon to take care of the men and ſtores, which were to ſail the next day. In the evening

Sunday 26. of the 26th, I took my leave of the ſupercargoes, having thanked them for their many obliging favours; amongſt which I muſt not forget to mention an handſome preſent of tea for the uſe of the ſhips companies, and a large collection of Engliſh periodical publications. The latter we found a valuable acquiſition, as they both ſerved to amuſe our impatience, during our tedious voyage home, and enabled us to return not total ſtrangers to what had been tranſacting in our native country. At one o'clock, the next

Monday 27. morning, we left Canton, and arrived at Macao about the

Tueſday 28. ſame hour the day following, having paſſed down a channel, which lies to the Weſtward of that by which we had come up.

During our abſence, a briſk trade had been carrying on with the Chineſe, for the ſea-otter ſkins, which had, every day,

day, been riſing in their value. One of our ſeamen ſold his ſtock, alone, for eight hundred dollars; and a few prime ſkins, which were clean, and had been well preſerved, were ſold for one hundred and twenty each. The whole amount of the value, in *ſpecie* and goods, that was got for the furs, in both ſhips, I am confident, did not fall ſhort of two thouſand pounds ſterling; and it was generally ſuppoſed, that at leaſt two-thirds of the quantity we had originally got from the Americans, were ſpoiled and worn out, or had been given away, and otherwiſe diſpoſed of, in Kamtſchatka. When, in addition to theſe facts, it is remembered, that the furs were, at firſt, collected without our having any idea of their real value; that the greateſt part had been worn by the Indians, from whom we purchaſed them; that they were afterward preſerved with little care, and frequently uſed for bed-clothes, and other purpoſes, during our cruize to the North; and that, probably, we had never got the full value for them in China; the advantages that might be derived from a voyage to that part of the American coaſt, undertaken with commercial views, appear to me of a degree of importance ſufficient to call for the attention of the Public. 1779. December.

The rage with which our ſeamen were poſſeſſed to return to Cook's River, and, by another cargo of ſkins, to make their fortunes, at one time, was not far ſhort of mutiny; and I muſt own, I could not help indulging myſelf in a project, which the diſappointment we had ſuffered, in being obliged to leave the Japaneſe Archipelago, and the Northern coaſt of China, unexplored, firſt ſuggeſted; and, by what I conceived, that object might ſtill be happily accompliſhed, through means of the Eaſt India Company, not only without expence, but even with the proſpect of very conſider-

1779. December.

able advantages. Though the ſituation of affairs at home, or perhaps greater difficulties in the execution of my ſcheme than I had foreſeen, have hitherto prevented its being carried into effect, yet, as I find the plan in my journal, and ſtill retain my partiality for it, I hope it will not be entirely foreign to the nature of this work, if I beg leave to inſert it here.

I propoſed then, that the Company's China ſhips ſhould carry an additional complement of men each, making in all one hundred. Two veſſels, one of two hundred and the other of one hundred and fifty tons, might, I was told, with proper notice, be readily purchaſed at Canton; and, as victualling is not dearer there than in Europe, I calculate, that they might be completely fitted out for ſea, with a year's pay and proviſion, for ſix thouſand pounds, including the purchaſe. The expence of the neceſſary articles for barter is ſcarcely worth mentioning. I would, by all means, recommend that each ſhip ſhould have five tons of unwrought iron, a forge, and an expert ſmith, with a journeyman and apprentice, who might be ready to forge ſuch tools, as it ſhould appear the Indians were moſt deſirous of. For though ſix of the fineſt ſkins purchaſed by us, were got for a dozen large green glaſs beads, yet it is well known, that the fancy of theſe people for articles of ornament, is exceedingly capricious; and that iron is the only ſure commodity for their market. To this might be added a few groſs of large-pointed caſe-knives, ſome bales of coarſe woollen cloth (linen they would not accept of from us), and a barrel or two of copper and glaſs trinkets.

I have here propoſed two ſhips, not only for the greater ſecurity of the expedition, but becauſe I think ſingle ſhips ought never to be ſent out on diſcoveries. For where riſks

are

are to be run, and doubtful and hazardous experiments tried, it cannot be expected that ſingle ſhips ſhould venture ſo far, as where there is ſome ſecurity provided againſt an untoward accident. 1779. December.

The veſſels being now ready for ſea, will ſail with the firſt South Weſterly monſoon, which generally ſets in about the beginning of April. With this wind they will ſteer to the Northward, along the coaſt of China, beginning a more accurate ſurvey from the mouth of the river Kyana, or the Nankin River, in latitude 30°, which I believe is the utmoſt limit of this coaſt hitherto viſited by European ſhips. As the extent of that deep gulf called Whang Hay, or the Yellow Sea, is at preſent unknown, it muſt be left to the diſcretion of the Commander, to proceed up it as far as he may judge prudent; but he muſt be cautious not to entangle himſelf too far in it, leſt he ſhould want time for the proſecution of the remaining part of his enterprize. The ſame diſcretion muſt be uſed, when he arrives in the Straits of Teſſoi, with reſpect to the iſlands of Jeſo, which, if the wind and weather be favourable, he will not loſe the opportunity of exploring.

Having proceeded to the latitude of 51° 40′, where he will make the Southernmoſt point of the iſland of Sagaleen, beyond which the ſea of Okotzk is ſufficiently known, he will ſteer to the Southward, probably in the beginning of June, and endeavour to fall in with the Southernmoſt of the Kurile iſlands. Ooroop or Nadeegſda, according to the accounts of the Ruſſians, will furniſh the ſhips with a good harbour where they may wood and water, and take in ſuch other refreſhments as the place may afford. Toward the end of June, they will ſhape their courſe for the Shummagins, and from thence to Cook's River, purchaſing, as they

1779. December. they proceed, as many ſkins as they are able, without loſing too much time, ſince they ought to ſteer again to the Southward, and trace the coaſt with great accuracy from the latitude of 56° to 50°, the ſpace from which we were driven out of ſight of land by contrary winds. It ſhould here be remarked, that I conſider the purchaſe of ſkins, in this expedition, merely as a ſecondary object, for defraying the expence; and it cannot be doubted, from our experience in the preſent voyage, that two hundred and fifty ſkins, worth one hundred dollars each, may be procured without any loſs of time; eſpecially as it is probable they will be met with along the coaſt to the Southward of Cook's River.

Having ſpent three months on the coaſt of America, they will ſet out on their return to China early in the month of October, avoiding in their route, as much as poſſible, the tracks of former navigators. I have now only to add, that if the fur trade ſhould become a fixed object of Indian commerce, frequent opportunities will occur of completing whatever may be left unfiniſhed, in the voyage of which I have here ventured to delineate the outlines.

The barter which had been carrying on with the Chineſe for our ſea-otter ſkins, had produced a very whimſical change in the dreſs of all our crew. On our arrival in the Typa, nothing could exceed the ragged appearance both of the younger officers and ſeamen; for, as our voyage had already exceeded, by near a twelvemonth, the time it was at firſt imagined we ſhould remain at ſea, almoſt the whole of our original ſtock of European clothes had been long worn out, or patched up with ſkins, and the various manufactures we had met with in the courſe of our diſcoveries.

Theſe

Theſe were now again mixed and eked out with the gaudieſt ſilks and cottons of China. 1779. December.

On the 30th, Mr. Lannyon arrived with the ſtores and proviſions, which were immediately ſtowed in due proportion on board the two ſhips. The next day, agreeably to a bargain made by Captain Gore, I ſent our ſheet anchor to the country ſhip, and received in return the guns, which ſhe before rode by. Thurſday 30. Friday 31.

Whilſt we lay in the Typa, I was ſhewn, in a garden belonging to an Engliſh gentleman at Macao, the rock, under which, as the tradition there goes, the poet Camoens uſed to ſit and compoſe his Luſiad. It is a lofty arch, of one ſolid ſtone, and forms the entrance of a grotto dug out of the riſing ground behind it. The rock is overſhadowed by large ſpreading trees, and commands an extenſive and magnificent view of the ſea, and the interſperſed iſlands.

On the 11th of January, two ſeamen belonging to the Reſolution found means to run off with a ſix-oared cutter, and, notwithſtanding diligent ſearch was made, both that and the following day, we were never able to learn any tidings of her. It was ſuppoſed, that theſe people had been ſeduced by the prevailing notion of making a fortune, by returning to the fur iſlands. 1780. January. Tueſday 11.

As we heard nothing, during our ſtay in the Typa, of the meaſurement of the ſhips, it may be concluded, that the point ſo ſtrongly conteſted by the Chineſe, in Lord Anſon's time, has, in conſequence of his firmneſs and reſolution, never ſince been inſiſted on.

The following nautical obſervations were made while we lay here:

Harbour

1780. January.

Harbour of Macao - -	Lat.	22°	12′	0″ North.
	Long.	113	47	0 East.
Anchoring-place in the Typa.	Lat.	22	9	20 North.
	Long.	113	48	34 East.
Mean dip of the North pole of the magnetic needle - -		21	1	0
Variation of the compaſs - -		0	19	0 West.

On the full and change days it was high water in the Typa at $5^h\ 15^m$, and in Macao harbour at $5^h\ 50^m$. The greateſt riſe was ſix feet one inch. The flood appeared to come from the South Eaſtward; but we could not determine this point with certainty, on account of the great number of iſlands which lie off the mouth of the river of Canton.

Prices of Proviſions at Canton, 1780.

	£.	s.	d.	
Ananas - - - -	0	4	0	a ſcore.
Arrack - - - -	0	0	8	*per* bottle.
Butter - - - -	0	2	$4\frac{4}{5}$	*per* catty *.
Beef, Canton - - -	0	0	$2\frac{3}{4}$	
Ditto, Macao - - -	0	0	$5\frac{1}{5}$	
Birds-neſts - - - -	3	6	8	
Biſcuit - - - -	0	0	4	
Beache de Mar - - -	0	2	$0\frac{4}{5}$	
Calf - - - -	1	6	$9\frac{3}{5}$	each.
Caravances, dried - -	0	0	$2\frac{2}{5}$	*per* catty.
Cabbage, Nankeen - -	0	0	$4\frac{4}{5}$	
Curry ſtuff - - -	0	1	4	

* A catty is 18 oz.—a pecul 100 catty.

Coffee

1780. January.

	£.	s.	d.	
Coffee	0	1	4	*per* catty.
Cocoa-nuts	0	0	4	each.
Charcoal	0	3	4	*per* pecul.
Coxice	0	1	4	*per* catty.
Canton nuts	0	0	4	
Cheſnuts	0	0	$2\frac{2}{5}$	
Cockles	0	0	$3\frac{1}{5}$	
Ducks	0	0	$5\frac{1}{5}$	
Ditto, wild	0	1	$0\frac{4}{5}$	each.
Deers ſinews	0	2	$1\frac{3}{5}$	*per* catty.
Eels	0	0	$6\frac{2}{5}$	
Eggs	0	2	0	*per* hundred.
Fiſh, common	0	0	$3\frac{1}{5}$	*per* catty.
Ditto, beſt	0	0	$6\frac{2}{5}$	
Ditto ſalted, Nankeen,	0	0	$9\frac{3}{5}$	
Fruit	0	0	$1\frac{3}{5}$	
Ditto, Nankeen	0	2	0	
Frogs	0	0	$6\frac{2}{5}$	
Flour	0	0	$1\frac{76}{100}$	
Fowls, capons, *&c.*	0	0	$7\frac{1}{5}$	
Fiſh maws	0	2	$1\frac{3}{5}$	
Geeſe	0	0	$6\frac{2}{5}$	
Greens	0	0	$1\frac{3}{4}$	
Graſs	0	0	$2\frac{2}{5}$	*per* bundle.
Grapes	0	1	$0\frac{4}{5}$	*per* catty.
Ham	0	1	$2\frac{2}{5}$	
Hartſhorn	0	1	4	
Hogſlard	0	0	$7\frac{1}{5}$	
Hog, alive	0	0	$4\frac{3}{4}$	
Kid, alive	0	0	$4\frac{3}{4}$	

1780. January.		£.	s.	d.	
	Limes	0	0	0 4/5	*per* catty.
	Litchis, dried	0	0	2 2/5	
	Lockſoy	0	0	6 2/5	
	Lobchocks	0	0	5 3/5	
	Lamp oil	0	0	5 3/5	
	Lamp wick	0	0	8	
	Melons	0	0	4 4/5	each.
	Milk	0	0	1 1/4	*per* catty.
	Ditto, Macao	0	0	3 1/5	
	Muſtard ſeed	0	0	6 2/5	
	Muſhrooms, pickled	0	2	8	
	Ditto, freſh	0	1	4	
	Oyſters	0	3	4	*per* pecul.
	Onions, dried	0	0	2 2/5	*per* catty.
	Pork	0	0	7 1/7	
	Pig	0	0	5 3/5	
	Paddy	0	0	0 4/5	
	Pepper	0	1	0 4/5	
	Pheaſants	0	5	4	each.
	Partridges	0	0	9 3/5	
	Pigeons	0	0	5 1/5	
	Pomegranates	0	0	2 2/5	
	Quails	0	0	1 3/5	
	Rabbits	0	1	4	
	Rice	0	0	2	*per* catty.
	Ditto, red	0	0	2 2/5	
	Ditto, coarſe	0	0	1 1/5	
	Ditto, Japan	0	0	8	
	Raiſins	0	2	0	
	Sheep	3	6	8	each.

Snipes

1780. January.

	£.	s.	d.	
Snipes	0	0	1½	*per* catty.
Sturgeon	0	4	9⅗	
Ditto, ſmall	0	2	4⅘	
Sugar	0	0	3⅕	
Salt	0	0	1⅗	
Saltpetre	0	2	1⅗	
Soy	0	0	1⅗	
Spices	0	16	8	
Sweet-meats	0	0	6⅖	
Sago	0	0	3⅕	
Sallad	0	0	2⅖	
Sharks fins	0	2	1⅗	
Samſui ſoy	0	0	2⅖	
Teal	0	0	6⅖	each.
Turtle	0	0	9⅗	*per* catty.
Tea	0	2	0	
Turmerick	0	0	2⅖	
Tamarinds	0	0	8	
Vinegar	0	0	1⅗	
Vermicelli	0	0	3⅕	
Wax candles	0	3	0	
Walnuts	0	0	4⅘	
Wood	0	1	4	*per* pecul.
Water	0	6	8	*per* 100 B^{s}.

	£.	s.	d.	
Rent of Poho Factory	400	0	0	*per annum*.
—— of Lunſoon	316	13	4	
Servants rice	0	8	0	*per* month.
Ditto wages	0	19	2⅖	*per* month for reſiants.

1780. January.

		Doll.	
Servants wages for the ſeaſon	-	20	
Stewards wages	-	80	*per annum.*
Butlers ditto -	-	80	

Prices of Labour.

	£.	s.	d.	
A coolee, or porter -	0	0	8	*per* day.
A taylor - -	0	0	5	and rice.
A handicraftſman -	0	0	8	

A common labourer, from 3*d.* to 5*d.*

A woman's labour conſiderably cheaper.

CHAP.

CHAP. X.

Leave the Typa.—Orders of the Court of France reſpecting Captain Cook.—Reſolutions in conſequence thereof.—Strike Soundings on the Macclesfield Banks.—Paſs Pulo Sapata.—Steer for Pulo Condore.—Anchor at Pulo Condore.—Tranſactions during our Stay.—Journey to the principal Town.—Receive a Viſit from a Mandarin.—Examine his Letters.—Refreſhments to be procured.—Deſcription, and preſent State of the Iſland.—Its Produce.—An Aſſertion of M. Sonnerat refuted.—Aſtronomical and Nautical Obſervations.

ON the 12th of January, 1780, at noon, we unmoored, and ſcaled the guns, which, on board my ſhip, now amounted to ten; ſo that, by means of four additional ports, we could, if occaſion required, fight ſeven on a ſide. In like manner, the Reſolution had increaſed the number of her guns from twelve to ſixteen; and, in both ſhips, a ſtout barricade was carried round their upper works, and every other precaution taken to give our ſmall force as reſpectable an appearance as poſſible. 1780. January. Wedneſ. 12.

We thought it our duty to provide ourſelves with theſe means of defence, though we had ſome reaſon to believe, that the generoſity of our enemies had, in a great meaſure, rendered them ſuperfluous. We were informed at Canton, that the public prints, which had arrived laſt from England,

1780. January. land, made mention of inſtructions having been found on board all the French ſhips of war, captured in Europe, directing their commanders, in caſe of falling in with the ſhips that ſailed under the command of Captain Cook, to ſuffer them to proceed on their voyage without moleſtation. The ſame orders were alſo ſaid to have been given by the American congreſs to the veſſels employed in their ſervice. As this intelligence was farther confirmed by the private letters of ſeveral of the ſupercargoes, Captain Gore thought himſelf bound, in return for the liberal exceptions made in our favour, to refrain from availing himſelf of any opportunities of capture, which theſe ſeas might afford, and to preſerve, throughout his voyage, the ſtricteſt neutrality.

At two in the afternoon, having got under ſail, the Reſolution ſaluted the fort of Macao with eleven guns, which was returned with the ſame number. At five, the wind dropping, the ſhip miſſed ſtays, and drove into ſhallow water; but, by carrying out an anchor, ſhe was hauled off without receiving the ſmalleſt damage. The weather continuing calm, we were obliged to warp out into the entrance of the Typa, which we gained by eight o'clock, and
Thurſday 13. lay there till nine the next morning; when, by the help of a freſh breeze from the Eaſt, we ſtood to the Southward between Potoe and Wungboo.

At noon, we were ſaluted by a Swediſh ſhip as ſhe paſſed us on her way to Europe. At four the Ladrone bore Eaſt, diſtant two leagues. We now ſteered South half Eaſt, with a freſh breeze from the Eaſt North Eaſt, without any occur-
Saturday 15. rence worth remarking, till noon of the 15th; when, being in latitude 18° 57′, and longitude 114° 13′, the wind veering to the North, we directed our courſe half a point more to the

the Eaſtward, in order to ſtrike ſoundings over the Macclesfield Bank. This we effected at eight in the evening of the 16th, and found the depth of water to be fifty fathoms, over a bottom of white ſand and ſhells. This part of the Macclesfield ſhoals we placed in latitude 15° 51′, and longitude 114° 20′; which agrees very exactly with the poſition given in Mr. Dalrymple's map, whoſe general accuracy, if it ſtood in need of any ſupport, was confirmed, in this inſtance, by a great number of lunar obſervations, which we had an opportunity of making every day ſince we left the Typa. The variation was found to be, in the forenoon, 0° 39′ Weſt. 1780. January. Sunday 16.

On the 17th, we had heavy gales from the Eaſt by North, with a rough tumbling ſea, and the weather overcaſt and boiſterous. On the 18th, the wind ſtill continued to blow ſtrong, and the ſea to run high, we altered our courſe to South Weſt by South; and, at noon, being in latitude 12° 34′, longitude 112°, we began to ſteer a point more to the Weſtward for Pulo Sapata, which we ſaw on the 19th, at four in the afternoon, bearing North Weſt by Weſt, about four leagues diſtant. This ſmall, high, barren iſland is called *Sapata*, from its reſemblance of a ſhoe. Our obſervations, compared with Mr. Bayly's time-keeper, place it in latitude 10° 4′ North, longitude 109° 10′ Eaſt. The gale had, at this time, increaſed with ſuch violence, and the ſea ran ſo high, as to oblige us to cloſe-reef the topſails. During the laſt three days, the ſhips had outrun their reckoning at the rate of twenty miles a day, and, as we could not attribute the whole of this to the effects of a following ſea, we imputed it in part to a current, which, according to my own calculations, had ſet forty-two miles to the South South Weſt, between the noon of the 19th, and the noon of the 20th; and Monday 17. Tueſday 18. Wedneſ. 19.

1780. January. and is taken into the account in determining the ſituation of the iſland.

After paſſing Sapata, we ſteered to the Weſtward; and at midnight ſounded, and had ground with fifty fathoms of Thurſday 20. line, over a fine ſandy bottom. In the morning of the 20th, the wind becoming more moderate, we let out the reefs, and ſteered Weſt by South for Pulo Condore. At noon the latitude was 8° 46′ North, longitude 106° 45′ Eaſt; and at half paſt twelve we got ſight of the iſland, bearing Weſt. At four, the extremes of Pulo Condore, and the iſlands that lie off it, bore South Eaſt and South Weſt by Weſt; our diſtance from the neareſt iſlands being two miles. We kept to the North of the iſlands, and ſtood for the harbour on the South Weſt end of Condore, which, having its entrance from the North Weſt, is the beſt ſheltered during the North Eaſt monſoon. At ſix, we anchored, with the beſt bower, in ſix fathoms, veered away two thirds of the cable, and kept the ſhip ſteady with a ſtream anchor and cable to the South Eaſt. When moored, the extremes of the entrance of the harbour bore North by Weſt, and Weſt North Weſt one quarter Weſt; the opening at the upper end South Eaſt by Eaſt three quarters Eaſt; our diſtance from the neareſt ſhore a quarter of a mile.

As ſoon as we were come to anchor, Captain Gore fired a gun, with a view of appriſing the natives of our arrival, and drawing them toward the ſhore, but without effect. Friday 21. Early in the morning of the 21ſt, parties were ſent to cut wood, which was Captain Gore's principal motive for coming hither. In the afternoon, a ſudden guſt of wind broke the ſtream-cable, by which the Diſcovery was riding, and obliged us to moor with the bower anchors.

None of the natives having yet made their appearance, notwithſtanding

notwithſtanding a ſecond gun had been fired, Captain Gore thought it adviſeable to land, and go in ſearch of them, that no time might be loſt in opening a trade for ſuch proviſions as the place could afford: with this view, he appointed me to accompany him, in the morning of the 22d; and, as the wind at this time blew ſtrong from the Eaſt, we did not think it prudent to coaſt in our boats to the town, which is ſituated in the Eaſt ſide of the iſland, but rowed round the North point of the harbour. We had proceeded about two miles along the ſhore, when, obſerving a road that led into a wood, we landed. Here I quitted Captain Gore, taking with me a Midſhipman, and four armed ſailors, and purſued the path, which ſeemed to point directly acroſs the iſland. We proceeded through a thick wood, up a ſteep hill, to the diſtance of a mile, when, after deſcending through a wood of the ſame extent, on the other ſide, we came out into a flat, open, ſandy country, interſperſed with cultivated ſpots of rice and tobacco, and groves of cabbage palm-trees, and cocoa-nut-trees. We here ſpied two huts, ſituated on the edge of the wood, to which we directed our courſe; and before we came up to them, were deſcried by two men, who immediately ran away from us, notwithſtanding all the peaceable and ſupplicating geſtures we could deviſe.

1780. January.

Saturday 22.

On reaching the huts, I ordered the party to ſtay without, leſt the ſight of ſo many armed men ſhould terrify the inhabitants, whilſt I entered and reconnoitred alone. I found, in one of the huts, an elderly man, who was in a great fright, and preparing to make off with the moſt valuable of his effects that he could carry. However, I was fortunate enough, in a very little time, ſo entirely to diſpel his fears, that he came out, and called to the two men, who

1780. January. were running away, to return. The old man and I now ſoon came to a perfect underſtanding. A few ſigns, particularly that moſt ſignificant one of holding out a handful of dollars, and then pointing to a herd of buffaloes, and the fowls that were running about the huts in great numbers, left him without any doubts as to the real objects of our viſit. He pointed toward a place where the town ſtood, and made us comprehend, that by going thither, all our wants would be ſupplied. By this time the young men, who had fled, were returned, and the old man ordered one of them to conduct us to the town, as ſoon as an obſtacle ſhould be removed, of which we were not aware. On our firſt coming out of the wood, a herd of buffaloes, to the number of twenty at leaſt, came running toward us, toſſing up their heads, ſnuffing the air, and roaring in a hideous manner. They had followed us to the huts, and ſtood drawn up in a body, at a little diſtance; and the old man made us underſtand, that it would be exceedingly dangerous for us to move, till they were driven into the woods; but ſo enraged were the animals grown at the ſight of us, that this was not effected without a good deal of time and difficulty. The men, not being able to accompliſh it, we were ſurprized to ſee them call to their aſſiſtance a few little boys, who ſoon drove them out of ſight. Afterward, we had occaſion to obſerve, that in driving theſe animals, and ſecuring them, which is done by putting a rope through a hole which is made in their noſtrils, little boys were always employed, who could ſtroke and handle them with impunity, at times when the men durſt not approach them. Having got rid of the buffaloes, we were conducted to the town, which was at a mile's diſtance; the road to it lying through a deep white ſand. It is ſituated near

near the ſea-ſide, at the bottom of a retired bay, which muſt afford a ſafe road-ſtead during the prevalence of the South Weſt monſoons. 1780. January.

This town conſiſts of between twenty and thirty houſes, built cloſe together; beſides ſix or ſeven others that are ſcattered about the beach. The roof, the two ends, and the ſide fronting the country, are neatly conſtructed of reeds; the oppoſite ſide, facing the ſea, is entirely open; but, by means of a ſort of bamboo ſcreens, they can exclude or let in as much of the ſun and air as they pleaſe. We obſerved, likewiſe, other large ſcreens or partitions, for the purpoſe of dividing, as occaſion required, the ſingle room of which the houſe, properly ſpeaking, conſiſts, into ſeparate apartments.

We were conducted to the largeſt houſe in the town, belonging to their Chief, or, as they called him, their Captain. This houſe had a room at each end, ſeparated by a partition of reeds from the middle ſpace, which was open on both ſides, and provided with partition ſcreens like the others. It had, beſides, a penthouſe, projecting four or five feet beyond the roof, and running the whole length on each ſide. At each end of the middle room were hung ſome Chineſe paintings, repreſenting men and women in ludicrous attitudes. In this apartment we were civilly deſired to ſeat ourſelves on mats, and *betel* was preſented to us.

By means of my money, and pointing at different objects in ſight, I had no difficulty in making a man, who ſeemed to be the principal perſon of the company, comprehend the main buſineſs of our errand; and I as readily underſtood from him, that the Chief, or Captain, was abſent, but would ſoon return; and that, without his conſent, no

1780. January. purchaſes of any kind could be made. We availed ourſelves of the opportunity which this circumſtance afforded us, to walk about the town; and did not forget to ſearch, though in vain, for the remains of a fort, which had been built by our countrymen near the ſpot we were now upon, in 1702 *.

On returning to the Captain's houſe, we were ſorry to find that he was not yet arrived; and the more ſo, as the time was almoſt elapſed which Captain Gore had fixed for our return to the boat. The natives were deſirous we ſhould lengthen our ſtay; they even propoſed our paſſing the night there, and offered to accommodate us in the beſt manner in their power. I had obſerved, when we were in the houſe before, and now remarked it the more, that the man I have mentioned above, frequently retired into one of the end rooms, and ſtaid there ſome little time, before he anſwered the queſtions that were put to him; which led me to ſuſpect that the Captain was all the time there, though, for reaſons beſt known to himſelf, he did not chooſe to appear; and I was confirmed in this opinion, by being ſtopped as I was attempting to go into the room. At length, it clearly appeared that my ſuſpicions were well founded; for, on our preparing to depart, the perſon who had ſo often paſſed in and out, came from the room with a

* The Engliſh ſettled here in the year 1702, when the factory of Chuſan, on the coaſt of China, was broken up, and brought with them ſome Macaſſar ſoldiers, who were hired to aſſiſt in building a fort; but the preſident not fulfilling his engagement with them, they watched an opportunity, and one night murdered all the Engliſh in the fort. Thoſe without the fort, hearing a noiſe, took the alarm, and ran to their boats, very narrowly eſcaping with their lives, but not without much fatigue, hunger, and thirſt, to the Johore dominions, where they were treated with great humanity. Some of theſe afterward went to form a ſettlement at Benjar-Maſſean, on the iſland of Borneo.—*Eaſt India Directory*, p. 86.

paper

paper in his hand, and gave it to me to read; and I was not a little ſurprized to find it a ſort of a certificate in French, as follows: 1780. January.

PIERRE JOSEPH GEORGE, Evêque d'Adran, Vicaire Apoſt. de Cochin China, *&c. &c.*

Le petit *Mandarin*, porteur de cet écrit, eſt véritablement Envoyé de la cour à Pulo Condore, pour y attendre et recevoir tout vaiſſeau European qui auroit ſa deſtination d'approcher ici. Le Capitaine, en conſequence, pourroit ſe fier our pour conduire le vaiſſeau au port, ou pour faire paſſer les nouvelles qu'il pourroit croire néceſſaire

A SAI-GON,
10 d'Août 1779.

PIERRE JOSEPH GEORGE,
Evêque d'Adran.

We returned the paper, with many proteſtations of our being the *Mandarin*'s good friends, begging he might be informed that we hoped he would do us the favour to viſit the ſhips, that we might convince him of it. We now took our leave, well ſatisfied, on the whole, with what had paſſed, but full of conjectures about this extraordinary French paper. Three of the natives offered their ſervices to accompany us back, which we readily accepted, and returned by the way we came. Captain Gore felt peculiar ſatisfaction at ſeeing us; for, as we had exceeded our time near an hour, he began to be alarmed for our ſafety, and was preparing to march after us. He and his party had, during our abſence, been profitably employed, in loading the boat with the cabbage-palm, which abounds in this bay. Our guides were made exceedingly happy, on our preſenting them with a dollar each for their trouble, and intruſting

1780. January. intruſting to their care a bottle of rum for the *Mandarin*. One of them choſe to accompany us on board.

At two in the afternoon we joined the ſhips, and ſeveral of our ſhooting parties returned about the ſame time from the woods, having had little ſucceſs, though they ſaw a great variety of birds and animals, ſome of which will be hereafter noticed.

At five, a *proa*, with ſix men, rowed up to the ſhip, from the upper end of the harbour, and a decent-looking perſonage introduced himſelf to Captain Gore with an eaſe and good-breeding, which convinced us his time had been ſpent in other company than what this iſland afforded. He brought with him the French paper above tranſcribed, and ſaid he was the *Mandarin* mentioned in it. He ſpoke a few Portugueze words, but, as none of us were acquainted with this language, we were obliged to have recourſe to a black man on board, who could ſpeak the Malay, which is the general language of theſe iſlanders, and was underſtood by the *Mandarin*. After a little previous converſation, he declared to us, that he was a Chriſtian, and had been baptized by the name of Luco; that he had been ſent hither in Auguſt laſt, from Sai-gon, the capital of Cochin China, and had ſince waited in expectation of ſome French ſhips, which he was to pilot to a ſafe port, not more than a day's ſail hence, upon the coaſt of Cochin China. We acquainted him, that we were not French, but Engliſh, and aſked him, whether he did not know, that theſe two nations were now at war with one another. He made anſwer in the affirmative; but, at the ſame time, ſignified to us, that it was indifferent to him to what nation the ſhips he was inſtructed to wait for belonged, provided their object was to trade with the people of Cochin China. He here produced another paper,

paper, which he desired us to read. This was a letter sealed, and directed "To the Captains of any European vessels that may touch at Condore." Although we apprehended that this letter was designed for French ships in particular, yet as the direction included all European Captains, and as Luco was desirous of our perusing it, we broke the seal, and found it to be written by the Bishop who wrote the certificate. Its contents were as follows: "That having reason to expect, by some late intelligence from Europe, that a vessel would soon come to Cochin China, he had, in consequence of this news, got the Court to send a *Mandarin* (the bearer) to Pulo Condore, to wait its arrival; that if the vessel should put in there, the Commander might either send by the bearer an account to him of his arrival, or trust himself to the *Mandarin*, who would pilot him into a well-sheltered port in Cochin China, not more than a day's sail from Condore; that, should he choose to remain in Condore till the return of the messenger, proper interpreters would be sent back, and any other assistance, which a letter should point out, be furnished; that it was unnecessary to be more particular, of which the Captain himself must be sensible." This letter had the same date as the certificate, and was returned to Luco again, without any copy being taken. 1780. January.

From this letter, and the whole of Luco's conversation, there remained little doubt, that it was a French ship he was to expect; at the same time we found he would be glad not to lose his errand, and had no objection to become our pilot. We could not discover from the *Mandarin*, the exact object and business which the vessel he was waiting for, intended to prosecute in Cochin China. It is true, that our interpreter, the black, was extremely dull and stupid,

and

1780. January. and I ſhould therefore be ſorry, with ſuch imperfect means of information, to run the riſk of miſleading the reader by any conjectures of my own, reſpecting the object of Luco's viſit to this iſland. I ſhall only add, that he told us the French ſhips might perhaps have put into Tirnon, and from thence ſail to Cochin China; and, as he had received no intelligence of them, he thought this moſt likely to have been the caſe.

Captain Gore's inquiries were next directed to find out what ſupplies could be obtained from the iſland. Luco ſaid, that he had two buffaloes of his own, which were at our ſervice; and that there were plenty on the iſland, which might be purchaſed for four or five dollars a head; but finding that Captain Gore thought that ſum exceedingly moderate, and would willingly give for them a much greater, the price was afterward raiſed upon us to ſeven and eight dollars.

Sunday 23. Early in the morning of the 23d, the launches of both ſhips were ſent to the town, to fetch the buffaloes which we had given orders to be purchaſed; but they were obliged to wait till it was high-water, as they could at no other time get through the opening at the head of the harbour. On their arrival at the village, they found the ſurf breaking on the beach with ſuch force, that it was with the utmoſt difficulty each launch brought a buffaloe on board in the evening, and the officers, who were ſent on this ſervice, gave it as their opinion, that between the violence of the ſurf, and the fierceneſs of the buffaloes, it would be extremely imprudent to attempt bringing any more off in this way. We had purchaſed eight, and were now at a loſs in what manner to proceed to get them on board. We could kill no more than was juſt neceſſary for the conſumption of one day,

day, as in this climate meat will not keep till the next. After conſulting with Luco, it was concluded, that the remainder ſhould be driven through the wood, and over the hill down to the bay, where Captain Gore and I had landed the day before, which being ſheltered from the wind, was more free from ſurf. This plan was accordingly put in execution; but the untractableneſs and prodigious ſtrength of the buffaloes, rendered it a tedious and difficult operation. The method of conducting them was, by paſſing ropes through their noſtrils, and round their horns; but having been once enraged at the ſight of our men, they became ſo furious, that they ſometimes broke the trees, to which we were often under the neceſſity of tying them; ſometimes they tore aſunder the cartilage of the noſtril, through which the ropes ran, and got looſe. On theſe occaſions, all the exertions of our men, to recover them, would have been ineffectual, without the aſſiſtance of ſome young boys, whom theſe animals would permit to approach them, and by whoſe little managements their rage was ſoon appeaſed. And when, at length, they were got down to the beach, it was by their aid, in twiſting ropes round their legs, in the manner they were directed, that we were enabled to throw them down, and by that means to get them into the boats. A circumſtance, reſpecting theſe animals, which I thought no leſs ſingular than this gentleneſs toward, and, as it ſhould ſeem, affection for little children, was, that they had not been twenty-four hours on board, before they became the tameſt of all creatures. I kept two of them, a male and female, for a conſiderable time, which became great favourites with the ſailors, and, thinking that a breed of animals of ſuch ſtrength and ſize, ſome of them weighing, when dreſſed, ſeven hundred pounds weight,

1780. January.

1780. January. would be a valuable acquiſition, I was inclined to have brought them with me to England; but my intention was fruſtrated by an incurable hurt that one of them received at ſea.

Friday 28. It was not till the 28th, that the buffaloes were all got on board; however, there was no reaſon to regret the time taken up by this ſervice, ſince, in the interim, two wells of excellent water had been diſcovered, of which, as alſo of wood, part of the ſhips companies had been employed in laying in a good ſupply; ſo that a ſhorter ſtop would be neceſſary, for repleniſhing our ſtock of theſe articles, in the Strait of Sunda. A party had likewiſe been occupied in drawing the ſeine, at the head of the harbour, where they took a great many good fiſh; and another party, in cutting down the cabbage-palm, which was boiled and ſerved out with the meat. Beſides this, having been able to procure only a ſcanty ſupply of cordage at Macao, the repairing of our rigging was become an object of conſtant attention, and demanded all our ſpare time.

Pulo-Condore is high and mountainous, and ſurrounded by ſeveral ſmaller iſlands, ſome of which are leſs than one, and others two miles diſtant. It takes its name from two Malay words, *Pulo* ſignifying an iſland, and *Condore* a calabaſh, of which it produces great quantities. It is of the form of a creſcent, extending near eight miles from the Southernmoſt point, in a North Eaſt direction; but its breadth no where exceeds two miles. From the Weſternmoſt extremity, the land trends to the South Eaſt for about four miles; and oppoſite to this part of the coaſt there is an iſland, called, by Monſieur D'Apres *, *Little Condore*, which runs two miles in the ſame direction. This poſition

* Neptune Oriental.

of

of the two iſlands affords a ſafe and commodious harbour, the entrance into which is from the North Weſt. The diſtance between the two oppoſite coaſts is three quarters of a mile, excluſive of a border of coral rock, which runs down along each ſide, extending about one hundred yards from the ſhore. The anchorage is very good, from eleven to five fathoms water, but the bottom is ſo ſoft and clayey, that we found great difficulty in weighing our anchors. Toward the bottom of the harbour there is ſhallow water for about half a mile, beyond which the two iſlands approach ſo near each other, as to leave only a paſſage at high water for boats. The moſt convenient place for watering is at a beach on the Eaſtern ſide, where there is a ſmall ſtream which furniſhed us with fourteen or fifteen tons of water a day. 1780. January.

This iſland, both with reſpect to animal and vegetable productions, is conſiderably improved ſince the time when Dampier viſited it. Neither that writer, nor the compiler of the Eaſt India Directory, make mention of any other quadrupeds than hogs, which are ſaid to be very ſcarce, lizards, and the guanoes; and the latter, on the authority of Monſieur Dedier, a French engineer, who ſurveyed the iſland about the year 1720, ſays, that none of the fruits and eſculent plants, ſo common in the other parts of India, are to be found here, except water-melons, a few potatoes, ſmall gourds, *chibbols* (a ſmall ſpecies of onion), and little black beans. At preſent, beſides the buffaloes, of which we underſtood there were ſeveral large herds, we purchaſed from the natives ſome remarkably fine fat hogs, of the Chineſe breed. They brought us three or four of a wild ſort; and our ſportſmen reported, that they frequently met

1780. January.

with their tracks in the woods, which alſo abound with monkies and ſquirrels, but ſo ſhy, that it was difficult to ſhoot them. One ſpecies of the ſquirrel was of a beautiful ſhining black colour; and another ſpecies ſtriped brown and white. This is called the flying-ſquirrel, from being provided with a thin membrane, reſembling a bat's wing, extending on each ſide the belly, from the neck to the thighs, which, on ſtretching out their legs, ſpreads, and enables them to fly from tree to tree, at a conſiderable diſtance. Lizards were in great abundance; but I do not know that any of us ſaw the guano, and another animal deſcribed by Dampier * as reſembling the guano, only much larger.

Amongſt its vegetable improvements, I have already mentioned the fields of rice we paſſed through; and plantains, various kinds of pompions, cocoa-nuts, oranges, ſhaddocks, and pomegranates, were alſo met with; though, except the plantains and ſhaddocks, in no great abundance.

It is probable, from what has been already ſaid, relative to the Biſhop of Adran, that the French have introduced theſe improvements into the iſland, for the purpoſe of making it a more convenient refreſhing ſtation for any of their ſhips that may be bound for Cambodia, or Cochin China. Should they have made, or intend to make, any ſettlement in thoſe countries, it is certainly well ſituated for that purpoſe, or for annoying the trade of their enemies, in caſe of war.

Our ſportſmen were very unſucceſsful in their purſuit of the feathered game, with which the woods are well ſtocked. One of our gentlemen had the good fortune to

* Vid. Dampier, Vol. i. p. 392.

ſhoot

1780. January.

ſhoot a wild hen; and all the ſhooting parties agreed that they heard the crowing of the cocks on every ſide, which they deſcribed to be like that of our common cock, but ſhriller; that they ſaw ſeveral of them on the wing, but that they were exceedingly ſhy. The hen that was ſhot was of a ſpeckled colour, and of the ſame ſhape, though not quite ſo large, as a full-grown pullet of this country. Monſieur Sonnerat has entered into a long diſſertation, to prove that he was the firſt perſon who determined the country to which this moſt beautiful and uſeful bird belongs, and denies that Dampier met with it here.

The land in the neighbourhood of the harbour is a continued high hill, richly adorned with a variety of fine tall trees, from the ſummit to the water's edge. Among others, we obſerved what Dampier calls the tar-tree *; but obſerved none that were tapped, in the manner he deſcribes.

The inhabitants, who are fugitives from Cambodia and Cochin China, are not numerous. They are of a ſhort ſtature, and very ſwarthy, and of a weak and unhealthy aſpect; but, as far as we could judge, of a gentle diſpoſition.

We remained here till the 28th of January; and, at taking leave of the *Mandarin*, Captain Gore, at his own requeſt, gave him a letter of recommendation to the Commanders of any other ſhips that might put in here; to which he added a handſome preſent. He likewiſe gave him a letter for the Biſhop of Adran, together with a teleſcope, which he begged might be preſented to him as a compliment for the ſervices he had received, through his means, at Condore.

* Dampier, Vol. i. p. 390.

The

1780. January.

The harbour at Pulo Condore is in latitude - - - -	8° 40′ 00″ North.
Longitude, deduced from a great number of lunar obſervations, -	106 18 46 Eaſt.
Dip of the North pole of the magnetic needle, - - - -	2 1
Variation of the compaſs, - -	0 14 Weſt.
High water, at the full and change of the moon, - -	4^h 16^m apparent time.

From this time the water continued, for twelve hours, without any viſible alteration, viz. till 16^h 15^m apparent time, when it began to ebb; and at 22^h 15^m apparent time, it was low water. The change, from ebbing to flowing, was very quick, or in leſs than 5^m. The water roſe and fell ſeven feet four inches perpendicular; and every day the ſame whilſt we continued there.

CHAP.

CHAP. XI.

Departure from Pulo Condore.—Paſs the Straits of Banca.—View of the Iſland of Sumatra.—Straits of Sunda.—Occurrences there.—Deſcription of the Iſland of Cracatoa.——Prince's Iſland.—Effects of the Climate of Java.—Run to the Cape of Good Hope.—Tranſactions there.—Deſcription of Falſe Bay.—Paſſage to the Orkneys.—General Reflections.

ON the 28th day of January 1780, we unmoored; and, as ſoon as we were clear of the harbour, ſteered South South Weſt for Pulo Timoan. On the 30th, at noon, the latitude, by obſervation, being 5° 0′ North, and longitude 104° 45′ Eaſt, we altered our courſe to South three quarters Weſt, having a moderate breeze from the North Eaſt, accompanied by fair weather. At two in the morning of the 31ſt, we had ſoundings of forty-five fathoms, over a bottom of fine white ſand; at which time our latitude was 4° 4′ North, longitude 104° 29′ Eaſt, and the variation of the compaſs 0° 31′ Eaſt.

1780. January.
Friday 28.
Sunday 30.
Monday 31.

At one in the afternoon, we ſaw Pulo Timoan; and, at three, it bore South South Weſt three quarters Weſt, diſtant ten miles. This iſland is high and woody, and has ſeveral ſmall ones lying off to the Weſtward. At five, Pulo Puiſſang was ſeen bearing South by Eaſt three quarters Eaſt; and, at nine, the weather being thick and hazy, and having

1780. January. ing out-run our reckoning from the effect of ſome current, we were cloſe upon Pulo Aor, in latitude 2° 46′ North, longitude 104° 37′ Eaſt, before we were well aware of it, which obliged us to haul the wind to the Eaſt South Eaſt. We kept this courſe till midnight, and then bore away South South Eaſt for the Strait of Banca.

February. Tueſday 1. On the 1ſt of February, at noon, our latitude, by obſervation, was 1° 20′ North, and the longitude, deduced from a great number of lunar obſervations taken in the courſe of the preceding twelve hours, 105° Eaſt. At the ſame time, the longitude, by Mr. Bayly's time-keeper corrected, was 105° 15′ Eaſt. We now ſteered South by Eaſt; and, at ſun-ſet, having fine clear weather, ſaw Pulo Panjang; the body of the iſland bearing Weſt North Weſt, and the ſmall iſlands, lying on the South Eaſt of it, Weſt half South, ſeven leagues diſtant. Our latitude, at this time, was 0° 53′ North.

Wedneſ. 2. On the 2d, at eight in the morning, we tried for ſoundings, continuing to do the ſame every hour, till we had paſſed the Strait of Sunda, and found the bottom with twenty-three fathoms of line. At noon, being in latitude, by obſervation, 0° 22′ South, longitude 105° 14′ Eaſt, and our ſoundings twenty fathoms, we came in ſight of the little iſlands called Dominis, which lie off the Eaſtern part of Lingen; and which bore from North 62° Weſt, to North, 80° Weſt, five leagues diſtant. At this time we paſſed a great deal of wood, drifting on the ſea; and, at one o'clock, we ſaw Pulo Taya, bearing South Weſt by Weſt, diſtant ſeven leagues. It is a ſmall high iſland, with two round peaks, and two detached rocks lying off it to the Northward. When abreaſt of this iſland, we had ſoundings of fifteen fathoms. During this and the preceding day, we ſaw great quantities of

of a reddiſh-coloured ſcum or ſpawn, floating on the water, in a Southerly direction. 1780. February.

At day-light, on the 3d, we came in ſight of the Three Iſlands; and, ſoon after, of Monopin Hill, on the iſland of Banca. At noon, this hill, which forms the North Eaſt point of the entrance of the Straits, bore South Eaſt half South, diſtant ſix leagues; our latitude, by obſervation, being 1° 48′ South, and longitude 105° 3′ Eaſt, the ſoundings ſeventeen fathoms, and no perceivable variation in the compaſs. Thurſday 3.

Having got to the Weſtward of the ſhoal, called Frederick Endric, at half paſt two we entered the Straits, and bore away to the Southward; and, in the afternoon, Monopin Hill bearing due Eaſt, we determined its latitude to be 2° 3′ South, the ſame as in Monſ. D'Apres' map, and its longitude 105° 18′ Eaſt. At nine, a boat came off from the Banca ſhore, and having rowed round the ſhips, went away again. We hailed her in the Malaye tongue to come on board, but received no anſwer. At midnight, finding a ſtrong tide againſt us, we anchored in twelve fathoms, Monopin Hill bearing North 29° Weſt.

On the 4th, in the morning, after experiencing ſome difficulty in weighing our anchors, owing to the ſtiff tenacious quality of the ground, we proceeded with the tide down the Straits; the little wind we had from the Northward dying away as the day advanced. At noon, there being a perfect calm, and the tide making againſt us, we dropt our anchor in thirteen fathoms water, about three miles from what is called the Third Point, on the Sumatra ſhore; Monopin Hill bearing North 54° Weſt. The latitude, by obſervation, was 2° 22′ South, longitude 105° 38′ Eaſt. At three in the afternoon we weighed and ſtood on Friday 4.

1780. February. through the Straits with a light breeze; and, at eight, were abreaſt of the Second Point, and paſſed it within two miles, in ſeventeen fathoms water, a ſufficient proof, that this point may be bordered upon with ſafety. At midnight, we again came to anchor, on account of the tide, in thirteen fathoms, Mount Permiſſang, on the iſland of Banca, bearing North 7° Eaſt, and the Firſt Point South 54° Eaſt, diſtant about three leagues.

Saturday 5. In the morning of the 5th, we weighed, and kept on to the South Eaſt; and, at ten, paſſed a ſmall ſhoal, lying in a line with Luſepara and the Firſt Point, at the diſtance of five miles from the latter. At noon, the iſland of Luſepara bearing South, 57°½ Eaſt, four miles diſtant, we determined its latitude to be 3° 10′½ South, and longitude 106° 15′ Eaſt. The difference of longitude between the iſland Luſepara, which lies in the South entrance of the Strait of Banca, and Monopin Hill, which forms one ſide of the entrance from the North, we found to be 55′, which is only two miles leſs than what is given in D'Apres' chart.

In paſſing this Strait, the coaſt of Sumatra may be approached ſomewhat cloſer than that of Banca. At the diſtance of two or three miles from the ſhore, there are ten, eleven, twelve, or thirteen fathoms, free from rocks or ſhoals; however, the lead is the ſureſt guide. The country is covered with wood down to the water's edge, and the ſhores are ſo low, that the ſea overflows the land, and waſhes the trunks of the trees. To this flat and marſhy ſituation of the ſhore, we may attribute thoſe thick fogs and vapours, which we perceived, every morning, not without dread and horror, hanging over the iſland, till they were diſperſed by the rays of the ſun. The ſhores of Banca

are

1780. February.

are much bolder, and the country inland riſes to a moderate height, and appears to be well wooded throughout. We often ſaw fires on this iſland during the night-time; but none on the oppoſite ſhore. The tide runs through the Strait at the rate of between two and three knots an hour.

Sunday 6.

In the morning of the 6th, we paſſed to the Weſtward of Luſepara, at the diſtance of four or five miles; generally carrying ſoundings of five and ſix fathoms water, and never leſs than four. We afterward ſteered South by Eaſt; and having brought Luſepara to bear due North, and deepened our water to ſeven fathoms, we altered our courſe to South by Weſt, keeping the lead going, and hauling out a little, whenever we ſhoaled our water. The ſoundings on the Sumatra ſide we ſtill found to be regular, and gradually ſhoaling, as we approached the ſhore. At five in the afternoon we ſaw the Two Siſters, bearing South by Weſt half Weſt; and, at ſeven, we came to an anchor in ten fathoms, about eight miles to the North of the iſlands. The weather was cloſe and ſultry, with light winds, generally from the North Weſt; but ſometimes varying round as far as the North Eaſt; and, during the night, we obſerved much lightning over Sumatra.

Monday 7.

We weighed the next morning at five, and at eight were cloſe in with the Siſters. Theſe are two very ſmall iſlands, well covered with wood, lying in latitude 5° 0′½ South, longitude 106° 12′ Eaſt, nearly North and South from each other, and ſurrounded by a reef of coral rocks; the whole circumference of which is about four or five miles. At noon we got ſight of the iſland of Java to the Southward; the North Weſt extremity of which (Cape St. Nicholas) bore South; North Iſland, on the Sumatra ſhore, South 27° Weſt,

1780. February. and the Sifters North, 27° Eaſt, diſtant four leagues; our latitude was 5° 21′ South, longitude 105° 57′ Eaſt.

At four in the afternoon, we ſaw two ſail in the Strait of Sunda; one lying at anchor near the Mid-channel Iſland; the other nearer the Java ſhore. Not knowing to what nation they might belong, we cleared our ſhips for action; and at ſix came to an anchor in twenty-five fathoms, four miles Eaſt by South from North Iſland. Here we lay all night, and had very heavy thunder and lightning to the North Weſt; from which quarter the wind blew in light breezes, accompanied with hard rain.

Tueſday 8. At eight o'clock the next morning, we weighed, and proceeded through the Strait, the tide ſetting to the Southward, as it had done all night; but about ten the breeze failing, we came to again in thirty-five fathoms; a high iſland, or rather rock, called the Grand Toque, bearing South by Eaſt. We were, at this time, not more than two miles from the ſhips, which, now hoiſting Dutch colours, Captain Gore ſent a boat on board for intelligence. The rain ſtill continued with thunder and lightning.

Early in the afternoon, the boat returned with an account that the large ſhip was a Dutch Eaſt-Indiaman, bound for Europe; and the other a pacquet from Batavia, with orders for the ſeveral ſhips lying in the Strait. It is the cuſtom for the Dutch ſhips, as ſoon as their lading is nearly completed, to leave Batavia, on account of its extreme unwholeſomeneſs, and proceed to ſome of the more healthy iſlands in the Strait, where they wait for the remainder of their cargo, and their diſpatches. Notwithſtanding this precaution, the Indiaman had loſt, ſince her departure from Batavia, four men, and had as many more whoſe recovery was deſpaired of. She had lain here a fortnight, and was now

now about to proceed to water at Cracatoa, having juſt received final orders by the pacquet.

1780. February. Wedneſ. 9.

At ſeven in the morning of the 9th, we weighed, and ſtood on through the Strait to the South Weſt, keeping pretty cloſe in with the iſlands on the Sumatra ſhore, in order to avoid a rock near Mid-channel Iſland, which lay on our left. At half after ten, I received orders from Captain Gore to make ſail toward a Dutch ſhip which now hove in ſight to the Southward, and which we ſuppoſed to be from Europe; and, according to the nature of the intelligence we could procure from her, either to join him at Cracatoa, where he intended to ſtop, for the purpoſe of ſupplying the ſhips with arrack; or to proceed to the South Eaſt end of Prince's Iſland, and there take in our water, and wait for him.

I accordingly bore down toward the Dutch ſhip, which, ſoon after, came to an anchor to the Eaſtward; when the wind ſlackening, and the current ſtill ſetting very ſtrong through the Strait to the South Weſt, we found it impoſſible to fetch her, and having therefore got as near her as the tide would permit, we alſo dropt anchor. I immediately diſpatched Mr. Williamſon, in the cutter, with orders to get on board her if poſſible; but as ſhe lay near a mile off, and the tide ran with great rapidity, we ſoon perceived, that the boat was dropping faſt aſtern. We therefore made the ſignal to return, and immediately began to veer away the cable, and ſent out a buoy aſtern, in order to aſſiſt him in getting on board again. Our poverty, in the article of cordage, was here very conſpicuous; for we had not a ſingle coil of rope, in the ſtore-room, to fix to the buoy, but were obliged to ſet about unreeving the ſtudding-ſail geer, the top-ſail-halliards, and tackle-falls, for that purpoſe; and the

boat

1780. February. boat was at this time driving to the Southward ſo faſt, that it was not before we had veered away two cables, and almoſt all our running rigging, that ſhe could fetch the buoy.

Thurſday 10. I was now under the neceſſity of waiting till the ſtrength of the tide ſhould abate, which did not happen till the next morning, when Mr. Williamſon got on board the ſhip, and learnt, that ſhe had been ſeven months from Europe, and three from the Cape of Good Hope; that before ſhe ſailed, France and Spain had declared war againſt Great Britain; and that ſhe left Sir Edward Hughes, with a ſquadron of men of war, and a fleet of Eaſt-India ſhips, at the Cape. Mr. Williamſon having, at the ſame time, been informed, that the water at Cracatoa was very good, and always preferred, by the Dutch ſhips, to that of Prince's Iſland, I reſolved to rejoin the Reſolution at the former place; and a fair breeze ſpringing up, we weighed and ſtood over toward the iſland, where we ſoon after ſaw her at anchor; but the wind falling, and the tide ſetting ſtrong againſt us, I was obliged to drop anchor, at the diſtance of about five miles from the Reſolution, and immediately ſent a boat on board, to acquaint Captain Gore with the intelligence we had received.

As ſoon as the Reſolution ſaw us preparing to come to, ſhe fired her guns, and hoiſted an Engliſh jack at the enſign ſtaff, the ſignal at ſea to lead ahead. This we afterward underſtood was intended to prevent our anchoring, on account of the foul ground, which the maps ſhe had on board placed here. However, as we found none, having a muddy bottom, and good holding ground, in ſixty fathoms water, we kept faſt till the return of the boat, which brought orders to proceed the next morning to Prince's Iſland.

We

1780. February.

We were at this time two miles diſtant from the ſhore; the peak of Cracatoa bore North Weſt by North; Bantam Point Eaſt North Eaſt half Eaſt; Prince's Iſland South Weſt by Weſt.

The iſland of Cracatoa is the Southernmoſt of a group ſituated in the entrance of the Strait of Sunda. It has a high peaked hill on the South end *, which lies in latitude 6° 9′ South, and longitude 105° 15′ Eaſt; the whole circuit of the iſland is not more than three leagues. Off the North Eaſt end lies a ſmall iſland, which forms the road where the Reſolution anchored; and within a reef that runs off the South end of the latter, there is good ſhelter againſt all Northerly winds, with eighteen fathoms water near the reef, and twenty-ſeven in the mid-channel. To the North Weſt, there is a narrow paſs for boats between the two iſlands.

The ſhore, which forms the Weſtern ſide of the road, is in a North Weſt direction, and has a bank of coral ſtretching into the ſea, about one-third of a cable's length, which makes the landing difficult for boats, except at high water; but the anchoring ground is very good, and free from rocks. The place where the Reſolution watered is a ſmall ſpring, ſituated abreaſt of the South end of the ſmall iſland, at a ſhort diſtance from the water-ſide. A little to the Southward, there is a very hot ſpring, which is uſed by the natives as a bath. Whilſt we were lying off the South end of this iſland, we ſent a boat with the Maſter on ſhore,

* The iſland of Tamarin, or Sambouricou, which lies about four leagues to the North of Cracatoa, may be eaſily miſtaken for the latter, having a hill of nearly the ſame ſize and form, ſituated alſo near its Southern extremity.

1780. February. to look for water; but after having landed with ſome difficulty, he returned unſucceſsful.

Cracatoa is eſteemed very healthy, in compariſon of the neighbouring countries. It conſiſts of high land, riſing gradually on all ſides from the ſea; and the whole is covered with trees, except a few ſpots which the natives have cleared for rice fields. The number of people on the iſland is very inconſiderable. Their Chief, as are thoſe of all the other iſlands in the Strait, is ſubject to the King of Bantam. The coral reefs afford plenty of ſmall turtles; but other refreſhments are very ſcarce, and ſold at an enormous price.

Latitude of the road where the Reſolution anchored - - - -	8°	6′	South.
Longitude, by Mr. Bayly's time-keeper -	104	48	Eaſt.
Ditto, by obſervation - -	105	36	Eaſt.
Dip of the South end of the magnetic needle - - - - - -	26	3	
Variation of the compaſs - - -	1	0	Weſt.

On the full and change days, it is high-water at 7^{h} in the morning. The water riſes three feet two inches perpendicular.

At eight o'clock in the evening, it began to blow freſh from the Weſtward, with violent thunder, lightning, and
Friday 11. rain; and at three the next morning, we weighed and ſtood over for Prince's Iſland, but the Weſterly wind dying away, was ſucceeded by a breeze from the South Eaſt, and, at the ſame time, a ſtrong tide ſetting to the South Weſt prevented our fetching the iſland, and obliged us, at two in the afternoon,

noon, to drop anchor in ſixty-five fathoms, over a muddy bottom, at three leagues diſtance from it; the high hill bearing South Weſt by South, and the peak on Cracatoa North by Eaſt. We had light airs and calms till ſix next morning, when we weighed and made ſail, having, in our endeavours to heave the anchor out of the ground, twice broken the old meſſenger, and afterward a new one, cut out of our beſt hawſer. This, however, was entirely owing to the wretched ſtate of our cordage, as the ſtrain was not very conſiderable, and we had beſides aſſiſted the cable in coming in, by clapping the cat-tackle on it. The wind continuing fair, at noon we came to an anchor off the South Eaſt end of Prince's Iſland, in twenty-ſix fathoms, over a ſandy bottom; the Eaſt end of the iſland bearing North North Eaſt, the Southernmoſt point in ſight South Weſt by South, the high peak North Weſt half Weſt, diſtant from the neareſt ſhore half a mile.

1780. February.

Saturday 12.

As ſoon as we had come to anchor, Lieutenant Lannyon, who had been here before with Captain Cook, in the year 1770, was ſent along with the Maſter, to look for the watering-place. The brook from which, according to the beſt of his recollection, the Endeavour had been ſupplied, was found quite ſalt. Further inland, they ſaw a dry bed, where the water ſeemed to have lodged in rainy ſeaſons; and, about a cable's length below, another run, ſupplied from an extenſive pool, the bottom of which, as well as the ſurface, was covered with dead leaves. This, though a little brackiſh, being much preferable to the other, we began watering here early the next morning, and finiſhed the ſame day.

Sunday 13.

The natives, who came to us ſoon after we anchored, brought a plentiful ſupply of large fowls, and ſome turtles;

1780. February. but the laſt were for the moſt part very ſmall. In the courſe of the night, we had heavy rain; and on the 14th, at day-
Monday 14. light, we ſaw the Reſolution to the Northward, ſtanding toward the iſland, and at two in the afternoon, ſhe dropt anchor cloſe to us. In the courſe of the day, we heeled the ſhip, and ſcrubbed and hogged her bottom, which was very foul; and got ready for ſea.

Tueſday 15. The next day, Captain Gore not having completed his ſtock of water at Cracatoa, ſent his men on ſhore, who now found the brook that was firſt mentioned, rendered perfectly ſweet by the rain, and flowing in great abundance. This being too valuable a treaſure to be neglected, I gave orders, that all the caſks we had filled before ſhould be ſtarted, and repleniſhed with the freſh water, which was
Wedneſ. 16. accordingly done before noon the next day; and in the evening, we cleared the decks, and both ſhips were ready for ſea.

Friday 18. In the forenoon of the 18th, we had heavy rains, and variable winds, which prevented our getting under way till two in the afternoon, when a light wind ſprung up from the Northward; but this ſoon after leaving us, we were obliged to drop our anchor again, at eight o'clock that night, in fifty fathoms water, and wait till the ſame
Saturday 19. hour the next morning. At that time, being favoured by a breeze from the North Weſt, we broke ground, to our inexpreſſible ſatisfaction, for the laſt time in the Strait of Sunda, and the next day, had entirely loſt ſight of Prince's Iſland.

This iſland having been already deſcribed by Captain Cook, in the hiſtory of a former voyage, I ſhall only add, that we were exceedingly ſtruck with the great general reſemblance of the natives, both in figure, colour, manners, and

and even language, to the nations we had been ſo much converſant with, in the South Seas. The effects of the Javaneſe climate, and I did not eſcape without my full ſhare of it, made me incapable of purſuing the compariſon ſo minutely as I could have wiſhed. 1780. February.

The country abounds with wood to ſuch a degree, that notwithſtanding the quantity cut down every year by the ſhips which put into the road, there is no appearance of its diminution. We were well ſupplied with ſmall turtle, and fowls of a moderate ſize; the laſt were ſold at the rate of ten for a Spaniſh dollar. The natives alſo brought us many hog-deer, and a prodigious number of monkeys, to our great annoyance, as moſt of our ſailors provided themſelves with one, if not two, of theſe troubleſome animals.

As we ſhould have met with ſome difficulty in finding the watering-place, if Mr. Lannyon had not been with us, it may be worth while, for the uſe of future navigators, to deſcribe its ſituation more particularly. The peaked hill on the iſland, bears from it North Weſt by North; a remarkable tree growing upon a coral reef, and quite detached from the neighbouring ſhrubs, ſtands juſt to the Northward; and cloſe by it, there is a ſmall plot of reedy graſs, the only piece of the kind that can be ſeen hereabout. Theſe marks will ſhew the place where the pool empties itſelf into the ſea; but the water here is generally ſalt, as well as that which is in the pool. The caſks muſt therefore be filled about fifty yards higher up; where, in dry ſeaſons, the freſh water that comes down from the hills, is loſt among the leaves, and muſt be ſearched for by clearing them away.

1780. February.

The latitude of the anchoring-place at Prince's Iſland was	6°	36′	15″	South.
Longitude	105	17	30	Eaſt.
Dip of the South pole of the magnetic needle	28	15	0	
Variation of the compaſs	0	54	0	Weſt.
Mean of the thermometer	83	½		

From the time of our entering the Strait of Banca, we began to experience the powerful effects of this peſtilential climate. Two of our people fell dangerouſly ill of malignant putrid fevers; which however we prevented from ſpreading, by putting the patients apart from the reſt, in the moſt airy births. Many were attacked with teazing coughs; others complained of violent pains in the head; and even the healthieſt among us felt a ſenſation of ſuffocating heat, attended by an inſufferable languor, and a total loſs of appetite. But though our ſituation was for a time thus uneaſy and alarming, we had at laſt the ſingular ſatisfaction of eſcaping from theſe fatal ſeas, without the loſs of a ſingle life; a circumſtance which was probably owing in part to the vigorous health of the crews, when we firſt arrived here, as well as to the ſtrict attention, now become habitual in our men, to the ſalutary regulations introduced amongſt us by Captain Cook.

On our leaving Prince's Iſland, and during the whole time of our run from thence to the Cape of Good Hope, the crew of the Reſolution was in a much more ſickly ſtate than that of the Diſcovery. For though many of us continued, for ſome time, complaining of the effects of the noxious climate we had left, yet happily we all recovered from them.

Of

Of the two who had been ill of fevers, one, after being ſeized with violent convulſions, on the 12th of February, which made us deſpair of his life, was relieved by the application of bliſters, and was ſoon after out of danger. The other recovered, but more ſlowly. On board the Reſolution, beſides the obſtinate coughs and fevers under which they very generally laboured, a great many were afflicted with fluxes, the number of whom, contrary to our expectations, continued increaſing till our arrival at the Cape. 1780. February.

Captain Gore attributed this difference in part, and probably with ſome reaſon, to the Diſcovery having her fireplace between decks; the heat and ſmoke of which, he conceived, might help to mitigate the bad effects of the damp night air. But I am rather inclined to believe, that we eſcaped the flux by the precautions that were taken to prevent our catching it from others. For if ſome kinds of fluxes be, as I apprehend there is no doubt they are, contagious, it is not improbable, that the Reſolution caught this diſorder from the Dutch ſhips at Cracatoa. In order to avoid this danger, when Mr. Williamſon was ſent to the Indiaman in the entrance of the Strait of Sunda, he had the ſtricteſt orders not to ſuffer any of our people, on any account whatever, to go on board; and whenever we had afterward occaſion to have any communication with the Reſolution, the ſame caution was conſtantly obſerved.

We were no ſooner clear of Prince's Iſland, than we had a gentle breeze from the Weſt North Weſt; but this did not laſt long; for the following day the wind became again variable, and continued ſo till the noon of the 25th, when it grew ſqually, and blew freſh from the North. Sunday 20.

On

1780. February. Tueſday 22. On the 22d at noon, being in latitude 10° 28′ South, and longitude 104° 14′, we ſaw great quantities of boobies, and other fowls, that ſeldom go far from land; from which we conjectured, that we were near ſome ſmall unknown iſland.

Friday 25. In the evening of the 25th, the wind changed ſuddenly to the Southward, accompanied with heavy rains, and began to blow with great violence. During the night, almoſt every ſail we had bent gave way, and moſt of them were ſplit to rags; our rigging alſo ſuffered materially, and we were, the next day, obliged to bend our laſt ſuit of ſails, and to knot and ſplice the rigging, our cordage being all expended. This ſudden ſtorm we attributed to the change from the monſoon to the regular trade-wind; our latitude was about 13° 10′ South, and we had made by our reckoning about 4° ½ of longitude Weſt from Java head.

Saturday 26. From the 26th of this month to the 28th of March, we had a regular trade-wind from the South Eaſt to Eaſt by South, with fine weather; and being in an old beaten track met no occurrence that deſerved the ſmalleſt notice.

March. Tueſday 28. In the morning of the 28th of March, being in latitude 31° 42′ South, and longitude 35° 26′ Eaſt, the trade-wind left us in a violent thunder-ſtorm. From this time to the

April. Monday 3. 3d of April, when our latitude was 35° 1′ South, and longitude 26° 3′ Eaſt, the winds were moderate, and generally from the South quarter. A freſh breeze then ſprung up from the Eaſtward, which continued till the afternoon of

Tueſday 4. the 4th; after which we had a calm that laſted the two following days.

It had hitherto been Captain Gore's intention to proceed directly to St. Helena, without ſtopping at the Cape; but

1780. April.

but the rudder of the Reſolution having been, for ſome time, complaining, and, on being examined, reported to be in a dangerous ſtate, he reſolved to ſteer immediately for the Cape, as the moſt eligible place, both for the recovery of his ſick, and for procuring a new main-piece to the rudder.

From the 21ſt of March, when we were in latitude 27° 22′ South, longitude 52° 25′ Eaſt, to the 5th of April, when we had got into latitude 36° 12′ South, longitude 22° 7′ Eaſt, we were ſtrongly affected by the currents, which ſet to the South South Weſt, and South Weſt by Weſt, ſometimes at the rate of eighty knots a day. On the 6th, having got under the lee of the African coaſt, we loſt them entirely. Wedneſ. 5. Thurſday 6.

In the morning of the 6th, a ſail was ſeen to the South Weſt ſtanding toward us; and, as the wind ſoon after roſe from the ſame quarter, we cleared our ſhips for action. We now diſcovered, from the maſt-head, five ſail more on our lee-bow, ſtanding to the Eaſtward; but the weather coming on hazy, we loſt ſight of them all in an hour's time. Our latitude at noon was 35° 49′ South, longitude 21° 32′ Eaſt. At ſeven o'clock the next morning (the ſeventh), we made the land to the Northward at a conſiderable diſtance. Friday 7.

On the 8th, the weather was ſqually, and blew freſh from the North Weſt; the following day it ſettled to the Weſt, and we paſſed pretty cloſe to the ſail ſeen on the 6th, but did not hail her. She was clumſy in figure, and, to appearance, unſkilfully managed; yet ſhe out-ſailed us exceedingly. The colours which ſhe hoiſted were different from any we had ſeen; ſome ſuppoſed them to be Portugueze, others Imperial. Saturday 8. Sunday 9.

At day-light, the next morning, the land again appeared Monday 10.

to

1780. April. to the North North Weſt; and, in the forenoon, a ſnow was ſeen bearing down to us, which proved to be an Engliſh Eaſt India packet, that had left Table Bay three days before, and was cruiſing with orders for the China fleet, and other India ſhips. She told us, that, about three weeks before, Monſ. Trongoller's ſquadron, conſiſting of ſix ſhips, had ſailed from the Cape, and was gone to cruiſe off St. Helena, for our Eaſt India fleet. This intelligence made us conjecture, that the five ſail we had ſeen ſtanding to the Eaſtward muſt have been the French ſquadron, who, in that caſe, had given over their cruiſe, and were probably proceeding to the Mauritius. Having informed the packet of our conjectures, and alſo of the time we underſtood the China ſhips were to ſail from Canton, we left them, and proceded toward the Cape.

In the evening of the 10th, the Gunner's Quoin bore North by Eaſt, and Falſe Cape Eaſt North Eaſt; but the wind being at South Weſt, and variable, prevented our get-
Wedneſ. 12. ting into Falſe Bay, till the evening of the 12th, when we dropt anchor abreaſt of Simon's Bay. We found a ſtrong current ſetting to the Weſtward, round the Cape, which, for ſome time, we could but juſt ſtem, with a breeze that
Thurſday 13 would have carried us four knots an hour. The next morning, we ſtood into Simon's Bay; and at eight came to anchor, and moored a cable each way; the beſt bower to the Eaſt South Eaſt, and ſmall bower Weſt North Weſt; the South Eaſt point of the bay bearing South by Eaſt, Table Mountain North Eaſt half North; diſtant from the neareſt ſhore one-third of a mile. We found lying here, the Naſſau and Southampton Eaſt-Indiamen, waiting for convoy for Europe. The Reſolution ſaluted the fort with eleven guns, and the ſame number was returned.

Mr.

Mr. Brandt, the Governor of this place, came to viſit us, as ſoon as we had anchored. This gentleman had conceived a great affection for Captain Cook, who had been his conſtant gueſt, the many times he had viſited the Cape; and though he had received the news of his melancholy fate ſome time before, he was exceedingly affected at the ſight of our ſhips returning without their old Commander. He appeared much ſurprized to ſee our crew in ſo ſtout and healthy a condition, as the Dutch ſhip that had left Macao, on our arrival there, and had touched at the Cape ſome time before, reported, that we were in a moſt wretched ſtate, having only fourteen hands left on board the Reſolution, and ſeven on board the Diſcovery. It is not eaſy to conceive the motive theſe people could have had for propagating ſo wanton and malicious a falſehood. 1780. April.

On the 15th, I accompanied Captain Gore to Cape Town; and, the next morning, we waited on Baron Plettenberg, the Governor, by whom we were received with every poſſible attention and civility. He had alſo conceived a great perſonal affection for Captain Cook, as well as the higheſt admiration of his character, and heard the recital of his misfortune, with many expreſſions of unaffected ſorrow. In one of the principal apartments of the Governor's houſe, he ſhewed us two pictures, of Van Trump and De Ruyter, with a vacant ſpace left between them, which he ſaid he meant to fill up with the portrait of Captain Cook; and, for that purpoſe, he requeſted our aſſiſtance when we ſhould arrive in England, in purchaſing one for him, at any price. Saturday 15. Sunday 16.

We were afterward informed by the Governor, that all the powers at this time at war with England had given orders to their cruiſers to let us paſs unmoleſted. This, as

1780. April.

far as related to the French, we had ſufficient reaſon to think true; as Mr. Brandt had already delivered to Captain Gore, a letter from Mr. Stephens, incloſing a copy of Monſ. de Sartine's orders, taken on board the Licorne. With reſpect to the Americans, the matter ſtill reſted on report; but Baron Plettenberg aſſured us, that he had been expreſsly told, by the Commander of a Spaniſh ſhip, which had touched at the Cape, that he, and all the officers of his nation, had received orders to the ſame effect. Theſe aſſurances confirmed Captain Gore in the reſolution he had taken of maintaining, on his part, a neutral conduct; and accordingly, when, on the arrival of the Sybil, to convoy the India ſhips home, it was propoſed to him to accompany them on their paſſage, he thought proper to decline an offer, the acceptance of which might, in caſe we had fallen in with any of the enemies ſhips, have brought him into a very difficult and embarraſſing ſituation.

During our ſtay at the Cape, we met with every proof of the moſt friendly diſpoſition towards us, both in the Governor and principal perſons of the place, as well Africans as Europeans. At our firſt arrival, Colonel Gordon, the Commander of the Dutch forces, with whom I had the happineſs of being on a footing of intimacy and friendſhip, was abſent on a journey into the interior parts of Africa, but returned before our departure. He had, on this occaſion, penetrated farther up the country than any other traveller had done before him, and made great additions to the valuable collection of natural curioſities with which he has enriched the Muſeum of the Prince of Orange. Indeed, a long reſidence at the Cape, and the powerful aſſiſtance he has derived from his rank and ſituation there, joined to an active and indefatigable ſpirit, and an eager thirſt after knowledge,

knowledge, have enabled him to acquire a more intimate and perfect knowledge of this part of Africa, than could have fallen to the lot of any other perſon: and it is with great pleaſure I can congratulate the Public on the information I have received of his intentions to give the world, from his own hand, a hiſtory of his travels. 1780. April.

Falſe Bay, ſituated to the Eaſtward of the Cape of Good Hope, is frequented by ſhipping during the prevalence of the North Weſt winds, which begin to blow in May, and make it dangerous to lie in Table Bay. It is terminated on the Weſt by the Cape of Good Hope, and on the Eaſtward by Falſe Cape.

The entrance of the Bay is ſix leagues wide, the two Capes bearing from each other due Eaſt and Weſt. About eleven miles from the Cape of Good Hope, on the Weſt ſide, is ſituated Simon's Bay, the only convenient ſtation for ſhips to lie in; for although the road without it affords good anchorage, it is too open, and but ill circumſtanced for procuring neceſſaries, the town being ſmall, and ſupplied with proviſions from Cape Town, which is about twenty-four miles diſtant. To the North North Eaſt of Simon's Bay, there are ſeveral others, from which it may be eaſily diſtinguiſhed, by a remarkable ſandy way to the Northward of the town, which makes a ſtriking object. In ſteering for the harbour, along the Weſt ſhore, there is a ſmall flat rock, called Noah's Ark, and about a mile to the North Eaſt of it, ſeveral others, called the Roman Rocks. Theſe lie one mile and a half from the anchoring-place; and either between them, or to the Northward of the Roman Rocks, there is a ſafe paſſage into the Bay. When the North Weſt gales are ſet in, the following bearings will direct the mariner to a ſafe and commodious birth: Noah's Ark, South 51°

1780. April. Eaſt, and the centre of the hoſpital South 53° Weſt, in ſeven fathoms. But if the South Eaſt winds have not done blowing, it is better to ſtay further out in eight or nine fathoms. The bottom is ſandy, and the anchors ſettle conſiderably before they get hold. All the North part of the Bay is low ſandy land, but the Eaſt ſide is very high. About ſix miles Eaſt of Noah's Ark lies Seal Iſland, the South part of which is ſaid to be dangerous, and not to be approached, with ſafety, nearer than in twenty-two fathoms. Off the Cape of Good Hope are many ſunk rocks, ſome of which appear at low water; and others have breakers conſtantly on them.

The latitude of the anchoring-place in Simon's Bay, by obſervation	- - -	34° 20′	South.
The longitude	- - - -	18 29	Eaſt.
Dip of the South end of the magnetic needle		46 47	
Variation of the compaſs	- - -	22 16	Weſt.

On the full and change days, it was high-water at $5^h\ 55^m$ apparent time; the tide roſe and fell five feet five inches; at the neap tides, it roſe four feet one inch.

From the obſervations taken by Mr. Bayly and myſelf, on the 11th of this month, when the Cape of Good Hope bore due Weſt, we found its latitude to be 34° 23′ South, which is 4′ to the Northward of its poſition, as determined by the Abbé de la Caille.

May. Having completed our victualling, and furniſhed ourſelves with the neceſſary ſupply of naval ſtores, we ſailed
Tueſday 9. out of the Bay on the 9th of May, and on the 14th, we got
Sunday 14. into the South Eaſt trade-wind, and ſteered to the Weſtward
Wedneſ. 31. of the iſlands of St. Helena and Aſcenſion. On the 31ſt, being

being in latitude 12° 48′ South, longitude 15° 40′ Weſt, the magnetic needle was found to have no dip. 1780. May.

On the 12th of June, we paſſed the equator for the fourth time during this voyage, in longitude 26° 16′ Weſt. We now began to perceive the effects of a current ſetting North by Eaſt, half a knot an hour. It continued in this direction till the middle of July, when it began to ſet a little to the Southward of the Weſt. June. Monday 12. July. Saturday 15.

On the 12th of Auguſt, we made the Weſtern coaſt of Ireland, and after a fruitleſs attempt to get into Port Galway, from whence it was Captain Gore's intention to have ſent the journals and maps of our voyage to London, we were obliged, by ſtrong Southerly winds, to ſteer to the Northward. Our next object was to put into Lough Swilly; but the wind continuing in the ſame quarter, we ſtood on to the Northward of Lewis Iſland; and on the 22d of Auguſt, at eleven in the morning, both ſhips came to an anchor at Stromneſs. From hence, I was diſpatched by Captain Gore, to acquaint the Board of Admiralty with our arrival; and on the 4th day of October the ſhips arrived ſafe at the Nore, after an abſence of four years, two months, and twenty-two days. Auguſt. Saturday 12. Tueſday 22. October. Wedneſ. 4.

On quitting the Diſcovery at Stromneſs, I had the ſatisfaction of leaving the whole crew in perfect health; and at the ſame time, the number of convaleſcents on board the Reſolution, did not exceed two or three, of whom only one was incapable of ſervice. In the courſe of our voyage, the Reſolution loſt but five men by ſickneſs, three of whom were in a precarious ſtate of health at our departure from England; the Diſcovery did not loſe a man. An unremitting attention to the regulations eſtabliſhed by Captain Cook, with which the world is already acquainted, may be juſtly

1780. October.

juſtly conſidered as the principal cauſe, under the bleſſing of Divine Providence, of this ſingular ſucceſs. But the baneful effects of ſalt proviſions might perhaps, in the end, have been felt, notwithſtanding theſe ſalutary precautions, if we had not aſſiſted them, by availing ourſelves of every ſubſtitute, our ſituation at various times afforded. Theſe frequently conſiſting of articles, which our people had not been uſed to conſider as food for men, and being ſometimes exceedingly nauſeous, it required the joint aid of perſuaſion, authority, and example, to conquer their prejudices and diſguſts.

The preventives we principally relied on were ſour krout and portable ſoup. As to the antiſcorbutic remedies, with which we were amply ſupplied, we had no opportunity of trying their effects, as there did not appear the ſlighteſt ſymptoms of the ſcurvy, in either ſhip, during the whole voyage. Our malt and hops had alſo been kept as a reſource, in caſe of actual ſickneſs, and on examination at the Cape of Good Hope, were found entirely ſpoiled. About the ſame time, were opened ſome caſks of biſcuit, flour, malt, peaſe, oatmeal, and groats, which, by way of experiment, had been put up in ſmall caſks, lined with tin-frail, and found all, except the peaſe, in a much better ſtate, than could have been expected in the uſual manner of package.

I cannot neglect this opportunity of recommending to the conſideration of Government, the neceſſity of allowing a ſufficient quantity of Peruvian bark, to ſuch of his Majeſty's ſhips as may be expoſed to the influence of unwholeſome climates. It happened very fortunately in the Diſcovery, that only one of the men that had fevers in the Straits of Sunda, ſtood in need of this medicine, as he alone conſumed the

the whole quantity uſually carried out by Surgeons, in ſuch veſſels as ours. Had more been affected in the ſame manner, they would probably all have periſhed, from the want of the only remedy capable of affording them effectual relief. 1780. October.

Another circumſtance attending this voyage, which, if we conſider its duration, and the nature of the ſervice in which we were engaged, will appear ſcarcely leſs ſingular than the extraordinary healthineſs of the crews, was, that the two ſhips never loſt ſight of each other for a day together, except twice; which was owing, the firſt time, to an accident that happened to the Diſcovery off the coaſt of Owhyhee; and the ſecond, to the fogs we met with at the entrance of Awatſka Bay. A ſtronger proof cannot be given of the ſkill and vigilance of our ſubaltern officers, to whom this ſhare of merit almoſt entirely belongs.

APPENDIX.



APPENDIX.

APPENDIX, N° I.

TABLES of the ROUTE of the RESOLUTION and DISCOVERY, the Variation of the Compaſs, and Meteorological Obſervations, during the Voyage.

N. B. In theſe Tables, the Situation of the Ships at Noon is, in general, ſet down; and the Variation, as it was obſerved, either in the Morning or Evening of the ſame Day, or both. Therefore, the Tables do not contain the exact Place where the Variation was obſerved; but the Difference is ſo little, that it can make no material Error.

TABLE I.

From the Cape of Good Hope to Kerguelen's Land.

Time.	Latitude South.	Longitude East.	Variation Weſt.	Therm.	Barom.	Winds, Weather, and Remarks.
1776.	° ′	° ′	° ′	°	Inches.	
Dec. 2 Noon.		17 59		59	30,08	Weſterly. Moderate wind, and cloudy weather.
3	34 32	17 36	22 00	64	29,75	Northerly. Light winds, and cloudy.
4	36 48	19 05	22 30	60½	29,59	N. W. Freſh gale, and cloudy.
5	38 21	21 23	23 00	59	29,48	W. N. W. A ſtrong gale, and cloudy.
6	38 59	23 29	23 33	63	29,37	Variable. Squally, with rain.
7	40 03	25 25		58½	29,47	W. S. W. Briſk wind, thunder, lightning, and rain.
8	41 04	28 5	24 00	47½	29,81	W. S. W. Squally, with hail and rain.
9	42 27	30 7		54½	29,80	W. S. W. Strong gales, and cloudy.

TABLE I. Continued.

Route of the Reſolution and Diſcovery from the Cape of Good Hope to Kerguelen's Land.

Time.	Latitude South.	Longitude Eaſt.	Variation Weſt.	Therm.	Barom.	Winds, Weather, and Remarks.
1776.	° ′	° ′	° ′	°	Inches.	
Dec. 10	43 56	32 13	24 45	51½	29,34	Northerly. Moderate wind, and drizzling rain.
11	45 37	34 31	25 00	44½	29,21	Weſterly. A freſh gale, and cloudy.
12	46 20½	37 0	26 00	38		S. W. Squally. Showers of hail and ſnow. Saw ſea-birds, and ſea-weed.
13	47 15	40 48	26 15	38⅔	29,98	W. S. W. Strong gale and ſqually, with ſnow. In the evening ſailed between P. Edward's Iſlands.
14	47 46	44 15		41½	30,02	Weſterly. Gentle breezes, and hazy weather.
15	48 24½	48 16¾	31 00	42⅔	29,90	N. E. Freſh-gales, and cloudy. Rock-weed.
16	48 42	52 11		41	29,70	N. N. E. Strong wind, and cloudy. Penguins, whales, &c.
17	48 28	56 6		42	29,97	Variable wind and weather. Albatroſſes, penguins, &c.
18	48 35¾	56 40		42	30,02	Variable, moderate, and cloudy. Penguins, whales, &c.
19	48 26	59 20		45	29,97	Weſterly. Foggy, with ſome rain. Rock-weed. Few birds.
20	48 27	62 43		44	29,96	N. W. Moderate and hazy. Rock-weed. Few birds.
21	48 27	65 53		46	29,77	N. W. b. W. A freſh gale, and foggy. Very few birds.
22	48 18	66 20		40	29,97	Weſterly. Light winds, and gloomy weather. Birds.
23	48 36	67 26½		43¼	29,58	N. E. Mod. wind, rain. Many birds.
24	48 24	68 35		40₃	29,72	Northerly. Freſh gale, and cloudy. Saw land.
25	48 41	69 11	27 44	43	29,95	N. W. Moderate and hazy. In Chriſtmas Harbour, Kerguelen's Land.

TABLE II.

Route of the Reſolution and Diſcovery from Kerguelen's Land to Van Diemen's Land.

Time.	Latitude South.	Longitude Eaſt.	Variation Weſt.	Therm.	Baroth.	Winds, Weather, and Remarks.
1776.	° ′	° ′	° ′	°	Inches.	
Dec. 29	48 51	69 39	28 0	44¼	29,71	S. E. Freſh gales, and fair weather.
30	49 8	70 34	28 0	45	29,44	N. W. Freſh gales, and cloudy.
31	49 19	73 16		40	29,54	Ditto. Ditto, ditto.
1777.						
Jan. 1	48 37	77 41	30 24	38	30,05	W. S. W. Squally, with ſleet.
2	48 20	80 50	30 47	46½	30,23	W. S. W. Moderate wind, and fair weather.
3	48 17	84 14	30 14	46	30,15	N. W. Ditto, ditto. No birds.
4	48 9½	88 30		47¼	30,28	N. W. Freſh gales, and foggy.
5	48 4½	91 25		48¼	29,78	N. W. b. N. Gentle breezes, and hazy weather.
6	47 59	93 59		47	29,70	Weſterly. Moderate wind, and hazy, with rain.
7	47 43	95 28		47¾	29,68	Eaſterly. Light breezes, and foggy; rain at times.
8	47 37	99 21	25 29	48	29,86	North. Moderate wind, and thick fog. Few birds.
9	47 56	102 36	24 7½	48½	29,67	N. N. E. Freſh breezes, and foggy.
10	48 20	106 14	23 27	48½	29,78	Ditto. Freſh breezes, and foggy; with rain at times.
11	48 16	109 6		49	29,70	Ditto. Moderate wind, and hazy. Porpoiſes, and ſome birds.
12	48 40	110 26		50½	29,66	Ditto. Light breezes, and foggy. Some birds.
13	48 6	112 3		49	29,20	Variable. Moderate wind, and foggy. Birds, and porpoiſes.
14	47 19	115 28	17 34	49	29,36	Weſterly. Freſh gales, and hazy. Paſſed rock-weed.
15	46 23	120 7		51½	29,50	W. N. W. Ditto, and ſome rain. Many blue peterels.
16	45 12	124 29		54½	29,70	N. W. Briſk wind, with drizzling rain.
17	44 18	128 12	9 0	56½	29,87	N. W. Freſh gales, and cloudy weather.
18	44 23	131 28	6 0	55	29,55	N. b. E. Moderate wind, with clouds at times.

TABLE II. Continued.

Route of the Reſolution and Diſcovery from Kerguelen's Land to Van Diemen's Land.

Time.	Latitude South.	Longitude East.	Variation Weſt.	Therm.	Barom.	Winds, Weather, and Remarks.
1777.	° ′	° ′	° ′	°	Inches.	
Jan. 19	43 51	134 39		56¾	29,55	N. W. Briſk wind, ſome hard ſqualls; moſtly clear.
20	43 33½	138 19		56¾	29,40	N. W. Freſh gales, and fine weather. A Weſterly ſwell.
			Eaſt.			
21	43 23	141 16	1 0	56	29,95	Weſt. Freſh gales, and fine weather. Some ſhowers.
22	43 31½	143 1	3 0	61	30,09	Weſt. Gentle breezes, and fine weather. Weſterly ſwell.
23	43 41⅔	144 27		60½	30,02	W. N. W. Light winds, and moſtly cloudy. At 3 P. M. ſaw Van Diemen's Land.
24	43 47	147 0	5 15	55	30,26	S. W. Moderate wind, and fine weather.
25	43 42½	147 24	10 8	58½	30,30	Variable. Light airs, and fine weather. Off Van Diemen's Land.
26	43 33½	147 42		67½	30,15	Ditto. Ditto weather. Off Adventure Bay.

TABLE III.

Route of the Reſolution and Diſcovery from Adventure Bay, Van Diemen's Land, to New Zealand.

Time.	Latitude South.	Longitude Eaſt.	Variation Eaſt.	Therm.	Barom.	Winds, Weather, and Remarks.
1777.	° ′	° ′	° ′	°	Inches.	
Jan. 31	43 23½	149 29		63¼	30,26	Variable. Moderate wind, and cloudy.
Feb. 1	44 16½	152 9		63¾	29,97	N. N. E. Freſh gales, and cloudy. Paſſed a whale.
2	44 42½	154 51	7 30	62	29,93	North. Freſh gales, foggy. Rain at times.
3	44 42¾	157 41		64½	30,06	N. b. W. Moderate breeze, and fine weather. Sea-weed, &c.
4	44 1	160 13	11 0	60	30,05	N. W. b. N. Moderate wind, and hazy.
5	43 32	161 59	11 11	59	30,09	S. E. b. S. Moderate wind, and fine weather. Many peterels and albatroſſes.
6	42 56	163 39	13 0	63¾	29,90	W. S. W. Gentle breezes, and fair weather.
7	42 27	165 23	13 0	67	30,00	W. S. W. Light winds, and fair weather.
8	41 54	167 29	13 0	66		N. W. b. N. Gentle gale, and fair weather; ſome lightning.
9	40 59½	169 30		64	29,95	Weſterly. Moderate wind, and fair weather. Saw two turtles, and ſeveral logs of wood.
10	40 35½	171 27		63	30,20	Southerly. Squally and unſettled weather. Paſſed ſeveral logs of wood. At half paſt four P. M. ſaw New Zealand, S. E.
11	40 28⅓	174 15		64		Variable. Light winds, and fair weather. A very heavy dew. Cape Farewell, in New Zealand, S. 64° W. and Murderer's Bay S. 34° E.

TABLE IV.

Route of the Reſolution and Diſcovery from Queen Charlotte's Sound, New Zealand, to the Friendly Iſles.

Time.	Latitude South.	Longitude Eaſt.	Variation Eaſt.	Therm.	Barom.	Winds, Weather, and Remarks.
1777.	° ′	° ′	° ′	°	Inches.	
Feb. 26	41 38⅓			63¾	29,97	Variable. Moderate wind, and ſometimes cloudy.
27	41 43	176 49		63½	30,00	Ditto. Moderate wind and cloudy weather.
28	41 17½	177 17	12 23½	64	30,09	Eaſterly. Moderate breeze, and ſome clouds.
March 1	42 35	178 43		58½	29,85	N. E. Moderate wind, and ſome rain. Many albatroſſes.
2	42 35½	180 8½		63¾	29,91	N. E. Light breezes, and fine weather. Egg birds. A ſwell from N. E.
3	42 24	182 36		60	29,53	Variable. Briſk wind; ſqually with rain at times. Saw a Port Egmont hen.
4	41 10½	185 5		64	29,52	Weſterly. Briſk wind, and fine weather. Paſſed rock-weed.
5	39 50¾	187 26	13 23	60½		S. W. Freſh gale, and fine weather. A S. W. ſwell. Weed, &c.
6	39 10	189 21		66	29,80	Weſterly. Freſh breeze, and fine weather. Whales. The ſwell gone.
7	39 17	191 13	11 13	68	29,97	N. b. W. Freſh breezes, and fine weather; ſome ſhowers.
8	39 24	192 52		69¾	30,17	N. b. W. Gentle breezes, and fine weather. A copious dew.
9	39 30½	194 10		68	30,30	N. b. W. Gentle breezes, and cloudy. A heavy dew,
10	39 26	195 22	10 49	69	30,32	N. N. W. Gentle breezes, and fine weather. A ſtrong dew.
11	39 50	196 4		68½		Northerly. Light airs, and fine weather. A heavy dew.
12	38 41¾	196 11		68½	30,12	Variable. Light airs, and fair weather. Many porpoiſes.
13	36 59½	197 30		66	30,02	S. E. b. E. Freſh gales, and cloudy; ſome rain. Many porpoiſes.
14	35 28	198 43		68¾	29,98	S. E. Freſh breezes, and ſqually; ſome rain. Few birds.
15	34 6½	198 57	10 18	69	29,94	Eaſterly. Freſh gales, and ſhowery weather.

TABLE IV. Continued.

Route of the Reſolution and Diſcovery from Queen Charlotte's Sound, New Zealand, to the Friendly Iſles.

Time.	Latitude South.	Longitude East.	Variation East.	Therm.	Barom.	Winds, Weather, and Remarks.
1777.	° ′	° ′	° ′	°	Inches.	
March 16	33 40	199 6	10 19	72	30,00	Northerly. Light winds, and drizzling rain.
17	33 24	199 19		74	30,05	Variable. Small breezes, and cloudy weather.
18	32 4	200 14		69½	30,10	E. b. S. Moderate wind, and cloudy, with rain at times.
19	30 29	200 54		75½	29,99	Eaſterly. Moderate wind, with ſhowers.
20	29 4	201 15	9 39	73¾	29,97	Eaſterly. Moderate breezes, with ſhowers.
21	27 44	201 30		73½	29,94	Eaſterly. Gentle breezes, with cloudy weather.
22	26 52	201 34	8 37	75½	29,97	E. b. N. Light breezes, and clear. Egg and Tropic birds.
23	25 59	201 8		77½	29,93	Eaſterly. Light breezes, and clear weather. Flying fiſh.
24	25 22½	201 30½		76½	30,02	E. N. E. Light breezes, and clear weather. Sharks, dolphin, and flying fiſh.
25	24 26¼	201 23		78	30,01	E. N. E. Light breezes, and clear weather. Tropic birds.
26	23 40	201 23	8 25	78	30,03	Eaſt. Ditto weather. Some lightning. Saw Tropic birds, and caught two ſharks.
27	23 17	201 23		80	30,00	Eaſterly. Light breezes, and fair weather. Saw ſeveral dolphins.
28	22 44	201 12	8 33	82½	30,02	N. E. Little wind, and moſtly cloudy.
29	22 13	201 40		79½	29,99	Eaſterly. Light breezes, and fine weather. Saw land.
30	21 54½	201 49		80½	29,96	Eaſterly. Squally, with rain at times. A large iſland, moderately high, S. W. three or four miles.
31	20 26⅓	201 34		81	29,97	E. N. E. Moderate wind, and fine weather. Saw land, which proved to be two iſlands.
April 1	19 51⅓	202 50		82	29,93	E. N. E. Little wind, and fine weather. The greater iſland bore S. 80° E. diſtant about four miles.

TABLE IV. Continued.

Route of the Reſolution and Diſcovery from Queen Charlotte's Sound, New Zealand, to the Friendly Iſles.

Time.	Latitude South.	Longitude East.	Variation East.	Therm.	Barom.	Winds, Weather, and Remarks.
1777.	° ′	° ′	° ′	°	Inches.	
April 2	20 0½	201 41	8 21	83½	30,02	E. N. E. Little wind and fine weather. The larger iſland, N. 70° E. diſtant two miles.
3	Plying off the iſlands of *Wateeoo*, and *Wenua-ete*. Little wind, and fair weather.					
4	19 51	201 32		83	29,96	Eaſterly. Little wind, and fine weather.
5	19 16½	201 28		83¼	30,00	E. N. E. Light airs, and cloudy.
6	19 16	201 0		82½	30,00	Eaſterly. Little wind, with ſhowers. Harvey's Iſle, S. ½ E. diſtant two miles.
7	19 27¼	199 58		82½	29,98	Ditto. Little wind, and variable weather.
8	19 7	199 32		83	29,91	Ditto. Light airs, and clear weather.
9	18 57	199 12	7 26½	81½	29,83	Ditto. Almoſt calm, with ſhowers.
10	18 39½	198 24		82¾	29,75	Variable. Squally. Thunder and lightning, with rain.
11	18 20	197 20		81	29,83	Ditto. Moderate wind. Ditto weather. Collected five puncheons of rain-water.
12	18 10	197 20		81	29,83	N. W. Moderate wind, and cloudy with lightning.
13	18 7	197 7		81	29,97	Variable. Squally. Some lightning. Heavy rain.
14	18 8¾	196 35		83	29,90	N. Eaſterly. Little wind, and rainy weather. Palmerſton's Iſland, N. b. E. two or three miles.
18	18 4½	196 10		83½	29,92	Northerly. Light breezes, and fine weather. A ſwell from the S.
19	17 59½	195 9		80	29,88	Ditto. Light breezes, with ſhowers.
20	18 8	193 59		83½	29,82	N. W. Moderate wind, and ſhowers. Fiſh and birds.
21	18 37½	192 42		79	29,83	N. W. Freſh gales, and ſhowers. Much fiſh, and many birds.
22	18 35	192 21		79	29,96	Variable. Little wind, with rain.
23	18 51	191 0		79	29,95	Ditto. Moderate wind. Thunder, lightning, and rain.
24	19 25½	189 40	10 33	76	29,94	Ditto. Squally unſettled weather. Saw Savage Iſle.
25	19 47	188 44		75	29,90	Ditto. The ſame weather.

TABLE IV. Continued.

Route of the Reſolution and Diſcovery from Queen Charlotte's Sound, New Zealand, to the Friendly Iſles.

Time.	Latitude South.	Longitude East.	Variation East.	Therm.	Barom.	Winds, Weather, and Remarks.
1777.	° ′	° ′	° ′	°	Inches.	
April 26	20 11½	187 44		74½	29,88	Variable. Squally, with rain.
27	20 38	186 35		76¼	29,94	Ditto. Little wind and cloudy, with rain.
28	20 28½	185 36		81½	29,85	Ditto. Moderate wind, and cloudy. Saw the Friendly Iſles.
29		185 21		80	30,05	Ditto. Moderate wind, with ſhowers. Annamooka; N. W. b. W. diſtant about three leagues.

TABLE V.

Route of the Reſolution and Diſcovery from the Friendly Iſles to Otaheite.

Time.	Latitude South.	Longitude East.	Variation East.	Therm.	Barom.	Winds, Weather, and Remarks.
1777.	° ′	° ′	° ′	°	Inches.	
July 18	22 7	185 10	10 0	70¾	29,93	Eaſt. Briſk wind, and ſqually, with rain.
19	22 26½	186 9½	8 42	69	30,03	Variable. Moderate wind, and fair weather.
20	22 28	186 41		70	30,10	S. E. Light winds, and cloudy. Saw many dolphins.
21	22 59½	187 3		71	30,11	Eaſterly. Moderate wind, and fair weather. Dolphins.
22	24 4	187 59		72	30,12	N. E. Moderate wind, and cloudy.
23	24 50	189 41		74	30,02	N. E. Moderate wind, and dark cloudy weather.
24	25 23	191 19		73¼	30,03	N. N. E. Moderate wind, and hazy, with rain. Saw a gannet.
25	25 45	192 21	8 47	74	30,20	N. N. E. Moderate wind, and fine weather.
26	26 8¼	193 46		80	30,16	N. b. E. Moderate wind, and drizzling rain at times.
27	26 51¾	194 45	7 52	71¾	30,20	N. N. E. Squally, with ſhowers.

TABLE V. Continued.

Route of the Reſolution and Diſcovery from the Friendly Iſles to Otaheite.

Time.	Latitude South.	Longitude Eaſt.	Variation Eaſt.	Therm.	Barom.	Winds, Weather, and Remarks.
1777.	° ′	° ′	° ′	°	Inches.	
July 28	27 36	195 55	8 13	72¾	30,13	N. N. E. Briſk wind, and fair weather.
29	28 7	197 11		70	29,70	Ditto. Briſk wind, and ſhowers.
30	28 6	198 55		61½	29,54	Northerly. Strong gales, and ſqually, with rain.
31	27 53	200 37		63½	29,92	S. W. Moderate wind, and flying clouds. Swell from the S. S. W.
Auguſt 1	27 49	202 11½	7 44	67	30,00	Weſterly. Briſk wind, and ſqually, with ſhowers.
2	27 28	203 50	7 8	69½	30,13	Ditto. Moderate wind, and cloudy, with ſome rain.
3	27 43⅓	204 0		71½	30,16	Variable. Light winds, and fair weather.
4	27 33½	205 35		67½	30,00	Ditto. Moderate wind, and cloudy, with rain.
5	26 51	206 29		67½	30,11	S. W. Gentle breezes, and fine weather.
6	25 53⅓	207 40		65	30,21	S.W. Gentle breezes, and ſome ſhowers.
7	25 9	208 58	7 37½	68½	30,25	S. S. W. A gentle breeze, and fine weather.
8	23 56	210 17½	7 21	66	30,22	Southerly. A gentle breeze, and fine weather. Saw land (Toobouai) bearing N. N. E.
9	23 7½	210 44		71	30,20	S. E. A gentle breeze, and fine weather.
10	21 12	211 12		72	30,16	E. b. S. Freſh breezes, and cloudy.
11	19 14½	211 43		77	30,16	Ditto. Freſh gale, with ſhowers.
12	17 46			81	30,17	Eaſterly. Light winds, and ſhowers. Oheitepeha Bay, in Otaheite, W. ½ S. diſtant two or three leagues.

TABLE VI.
Route of the Reſolution and Diſcovery from the Society Iſles to Chriſtmas Iſland.

Time.	Latitude South.	Longitude Eaſt.	Variation Eaſt.	Therm.	Barom.	Winds, Weather, and Remarks.
1777.	° ′	° ′	° ′	°	Inches.	
Decem. 9	15 42½	207 41	5 45	82	29,97	E. b. N. Moderate wind, and ſhowers.
10	14 32	207 34	5 35	85	29,93	E. b. N. Gentle breezes, and pleaſant weather.
11	13 45	207 7		83	29,92	N. E. b. E. Squally, with ſhowers.
12	13 1	206 20	5 21	85	30,00	N. E. b. N. A light breeze, and fair weather.
13	12 17	205 58		83¾	29,93	N. E. b. E. Gentle breezes, and fair weather.
14	11 3	205 54	5 58½	83¾	29,91	E. N. E. A freſh gale, and ſome rain.
15	9 59	205 23	5 19	84	29,90	Eaſt. A freſh breeze, and fair weather.
16	8 57	205 5	5 7½	84	29,83	E. b. N. A light breeze and clear.
17	7 38½	204 29	4 54	85	29,88	E. N. E. A freſh breeze, and fine weather. Tropic birds, egg-birds, and ſheerwaters.
18	6 24	204 19	5 21	84¾	29,88	Eaſterly. A gentle breeze, and fine weather. Many birds.
19	4 56½	204 9		83¾	29,90	E. b. N. A freſh breeze. Many birds.
20	3 32	203 39	5 29	82½	29,88	Eaſterly. A freſh breeze, and paſſing clouds. Few birds, except terns, and egg-birds.
21	2 2½	203 9	5 44	82¼	29,91	E. b. N. Moderate wind, and ſome ſhowers. A few egg-birds.
22	0 34S.	202 57		81	29,93	Eaſt. A freſh breeze, and fine weather. Men-of-war, terns, and tropic birds.
23	0 45N.	202 38	6 49	82	30,07	Eaſt. Moderate wind, and fine weather. Many birds.
24	2 2½	202 33	6 20	83	30,08	E. S. E. Moderate wind. Chriſtmas Iſle E. S. E. four miles.
25				79	29,99	Eaſterly. A gentle breeze, and fine weather. Plying off the Iſle.
26	1 57½	202 34		80	30,09	Eaſterly. Moderate wind, and fine weather. At anchor off the Weſt ſide of the iſland.

TABLE VII.

Route of the Reſolution and Diſcovery from Chriſtmas Iſland to Sandwich Iſles.

Time.	Latitude North.	Longitude Eaſt.	Variation Eaſt.	Therm.	Barom.	Winds, Weather, and Remarks.
1778.	° ′	° ′	° ′	°	Inches.	
Jan. 2	2 27	202 36		82¾	29,97	E. S. E. A freſh gale.
3	3 22	202 35		83	29,97	Eaſterly. Moderate wind; ſome rain.
4	4 8	202 45		81¼	29,90	Ditto. Moderate breeze, and fair weather.
5	4 56	203 0		78	29,90	Ditto. Light winds, and drizzling rain.
6	5 48	203 12	5 58	80¾	29,87	E. b. S. Moderate wind, and ſhowers. Many birds.
7	6 43	203 54		77	29,85	Eaſterly. A gentle breeze, and ſome rain. Saw birds and drift-wood.
8	7 45	205 0	6 46	78½	29,96	Ditto. Moderate wind, and ſome rain. Strong current ſetting N. E.
9	8 12	205 12	6 47	82	29,93	Ditto. Light airs, and fine weather.
10	9 30	205 0		83½	29,90	E. N. E. Gentle breezes, with ſhowers. Some birds.
11	10 44	204 49		83	29,89	Eaſterly. Light breezes, and fine weather. Saw a turtle.
12	12 17	204 14		81½	29,95	E. N. E. Gentle breezes, and fine weather. Many turtles, and birds.
13	14 12	203 3		79¾	30,04	N. E. b. E. Freſh breeze, and fair weather.
14	15 58	202 8		79½	29,95	Ditto. A freſh gale, and ſome ſhowers.
15	17 40	201 29		78	30,00	E. N. E. Ditto, ditto.
16	19 0½	200 58		79½	30,19	N. E. b. E. A freſh gale, with ſome rain.
17	20 25	200 38		78	30,03	E. N. E. A freſh gale.
18	21 12½	200 41		77	30,15	Eaſterly. A gentle gale, and fair weather. Two iſlands ſeen, one bearing N. E. ½ E. and the other N. b. W. ½ W.
19	21 50½	200 39		79	30,21	Variable. Light airs, and fine weather. The extremes of the ſecond iſland N. 7° W. and N. 81° ½ W. Off ſhore about two leagues.

TABLE VIII.

Route of the Reſolution and Diſcovery from Sandwich Iſles to King George's or Nootka Sound, on the Weſt Coaſt of America.

Time.	Latitude North.	Longitude Eaſt.	Variation Eaſt.	Therm.	Barom.	Winds, Weather, and Remarks.
1778.	° ′	° ′	° ′	°	Inches.	
Feb. 2	21 56½	199 30		77¾	30,08	Eaſterly. Freſh breezes, and fair weather.
3	23 1	199 37		78	30,13	Ditto. Moderate wind, and ſome rain.
4	24 31	199 26	11 21	76	30,19	E. b. N. Freſh breezes; ſome rain. Paſſed through the rippling of a current.
5	26 7½	199 44		77½	30,27	Eaſt. A freſh gale, and fair weather.
6	27 41½	200 19		79	30,29	Eaſterly. A gentle breeze, and ſome rain.
7	28 56	200 6	12 10	72½	30,23	Ditto. Moderate wind, and ſome ſhowers.
8	30 18	201 3		72½	30,26	Ditto. A freſh breeze, and fair weather.
9	30 59	202 5	13 59	73½	30,27	S. S. E. A light breeze, and drizzling rain. Saw a grampus.
10	31 21¾	203 14		63	30,31	Variable. Moderate wind, and ſhowers.
11	30 58	205 22		58	30,51	Northerly. Briſk wind. Cold, and cloudy weather.
12	30 13	206 19		59	30,52	N. N. E. Freſh gales, and cloudy, with ſhowers.
13	31 21	206 0		59½	30,51	E. N. E. Moderate wind, and dark gloomy weather.
14	31 35	205 59	11 4	62½	30,46	N. E. Light breezes, and cloudy weather.
15	32 29	205 24		59	30,45	N. E. b. E. Light breezes, and ſome ſhowers. Some birds.
16	33 47	205 24		57	30,46	Eaſterly. Moderate wind, and cloudy.
17	34 56	205 24		58	30,46	Ditto. Light winds, and cloudy.
18	36 23	205 59	13 6	55½	30,58	E. N. E. Moderate wind, and cloudy.
19	37 25½	206 16	16 41	56¾	30,59	E. S. E. Moderate wind, and ſome ſhowers.
20	38 7¼	207 31	17 2	56¾	30,48	Southerly. Light winds, and fine weather.
21	39 6	209 41	17 36	55½	30,35	Ditto. Gentle breezes, and cloudy.
22	40 18¼	212 14	18 59	56	30,20	S. S. E. Freſh gales, and fine weather.
23	41 6½	214 59		53	30,35	Ditto. Gentle gale, and clear weather. A ſtrong dew.
24	41 44	217 10		54	30,37	Ditto. Gentle gale, and hazy.

TABLE VIII. Continued.

Route of the Reſolution and Diſcovery from Sandwich Iſles to King George's or Nootka Sound, on the Weſt Coaſt of America.

Time.	Latitude North.	Longitude Eaſt.	Variation Eaſt.	Therm.	Barom.	Winds, Weather, and Remarks.
1778.	° ′	° ′	° ′	°	Inches.	
Feb. 25	42 31¾	219 21		56½	30,28	S. E. b. S. Moderate wind, and hazy. Paſſed a log of wood.
26	43 17	222 16	20 33	51½	30,31	S. S. E. Freſh breeze, and cloudy.
27	43 48	224 55		49	30,29	S. E. b. S. Freſh breeze, and cloudy. Paſſed more wood.
28	44 17½	226 22		49½	30,15	Ditto. Gentle breezes, and cloudy weather.
March 1	44 49	228 2	20 17	51½	30,21	S. E. b. E. Moderate breeze, and cloudy.
2	44 54	228 14	18 49½	49½	30,33	Variable. Light airs, and cloudy.
3	44 32½	229 7		44½	30,34	N. N. E. Gentle breeze, and cloudy.
4	44 5	231 8		46½	30,00	North. A freſh gale, and flying clouds.
5	43 45	232 45	17 32½	50	29,86	Northerly. Moderate wind, and flying clouds.
6	44 10	234 20		48¾	29,98	N. W. Light airs, and hazy. Saw whales, ſeals, and drift-wood.
7	44 33½	235 28		47½	30,27	Northerly. Light airs, and fair weather. Saw the coaſt of America from N.N.E. to S. E. ½ E. about eight leagues off.
8	44 27½	235 21	17 43	43½	30,17	Weſterly. Squally, with rain at times.
9	43 55	234 44		44½	30,12	W. N. W. Squally, with hail and rain at times.
10	43 40	234 47		42½	29,91	W. N. W. Very unſettled weather. Hail, rain, and ſleet.
11	43 44	235 21		38½	29,70	N.W. Unſettled weather. Hail, rain, &c.
12	43 6	235 0		38	29,86	Weſterly. Very ſtrong gales, with hail, rain, and ſleet.
13	42 47	233 27		40	30,16	N. N. W. Freſh gales, and cloudy. Snow and ſleet.
14	43 17	233 43		41½	29,86	Weſterly. Squally weather. Hail, rain, and ſleet.
15	42 46½	231 45		46	30,04	N. W. b. N. Strong gales of wind, with ſqualls of ſnow and ſleet.
16	43 4	232 45		47	30,00	N. W. Moderate wind; ſome rain.
17	43 56	233 52		46½	30,22	W. N. W. Moderate wind; ſome rain.
18	44 50½	234 8		46¾	30,07	Weſterly. Moderate wind; ſome rain.

TABLE VIII. Continued.

Route of the Reſolution and Diſcovery from Sandwich Iſles to King George's or Nootka Sound, on the Weſt Coaſt of America.

Time.	Latitude North.	Longitude Eaſt.	Variation Eaſt.	Therm.	Baroſt.	Winds, Weather, and Remarks.
1778.	° ′	° ′	° ′	°	Inches.	
March 19	44 56	233 58	17 52	46¼	30,31	Variable. Light winds, and moſtly cloudy.
20	45 30½	234 6		49½	30,17	Ditto. Light winds, and fair weather.
21	45 51	234 8		45½	30,02	Ditto. Light winds, and cloudy; ſome rain.
22	47 23	235 5		44¼	30,00	Ditto. Moderate wind, moſtly cloudy; ſome rain. Saw the land from N. b. W. to E. b. S.
23	47 56	234 17	16 41½	45	29,85	Weſterly. Strong gales, and unſettled weather.
24	47 41	234 7		43	30,17	Ditto. Freſh gales, and rather unſettled weather.
25	48 30	232 41		45	29,63	Variable. Freſh gales, and ſqually, with ſleet at times.
26	48 21¾	232 28		45	29,91	N. Weſterly. Freſh gales, and ſqually; hail, rain, and ſleet.
27	47 56	231 24	19 27	45	30,12	Ditto. Light winds, and cloudy weather.
28	48 56	232 12		49	30,15	Weſterly. Freſh gales, and cloudy.
29	49 29½	233 26½		46½	30,10	Ditto. Light breezes, and fair weather.
30	49 36	233 18		45½	30,21	N. W. b. W. Light airs, and fine weather.

TABLE IX.

Route of the Reſolution and Diſcovery from King George's or Nootka Sound, to Prince William's, along the Weſtern coaſt of America.

Time.	Latitude North.	Longitude Eaſt.	Variation Eaſt.	Therm.	Barom.	Winds, Weather, and Remarks.
1778.	° ′	° ′	° ′	°	Inches.	
April 27	49 39	231 31		51	29,40	Eaſterly. Strong gales, and thick weather.
28	50 1	229 26		53	29,54	S. Eaſterly. Heavy ſqualls, and ſhowery weather.
29	51 54	226 54		44½	29,38	Ditto. Squally, with rain at times.
30	53 22½	225 14	21 12	45½	29,40	Southerly. Freſh gales, rain at times.
May 1	54 43	224 44	24 19	44	29,62	S. Eaſterly. Gentle gales, with ſhowers.
2	56 50	224 6		43½	30,08	E. S. E. Freſh gales; ſqually with rain.
3	58 17	222 14		46	29,94	Variable. Freſh gales, flying clouds, and ſome rain.
4	58 22	220 45	24 11	53	29,96	N. W. Light airs, and fine weather.
5	58 40	220 58	26 11	48½	30,16	W. N. W. Light breezes, and fair weather.
6	59 8	220 19	23 10	47	30,04	Variable. Light airs, and pleaſant weather.
7	59 27½	219 7	24 26	52¼	29,96	Northerly. Light airs, and clear weather.
8	59 11	217 41		51½	29,88	Variable. Light breezes, and clear weather.
9	59 31½	217 0	22 47	52½	29,86	Ditto. Light airs, and fine weather.
10	59 51	215 56½		55¾	29,58	Ditto. Light breezes, and fine clear weather.
11	59 33½	215 21	27 35	55¾	29,60	Ditto. Light breezes, and fine weather.
12	61 11½	213 28		48	29,52	Eaſterly. Light breezes and cloudy.
13	60 49	213 7		45	29,92	Ditto. Freſh breezes, and gloomy weather.
14	60 19	213 7		49	29,80	S. Eaſterly. Freſh gales, and thick foggy weather, with rain. At anchor in Prince William's Sound.

TABLE X.

Route of the Reſolution and Diſcovery from Prince William's Sound to Cook's River, along the Weſtern Coaſt of America.

Time.	Latitude North.	Longitude Eaſt.	Variation Eaſt.	Therm.	Barom.	Winds, Weather, and Remarks.
1778.	° ′	° ′	° ′	°	Inches.	
May 18	60 30	212 21½		50	29,71	N. W. A gentle breeze, and clear weather.
19	60 3	212 12	23 37	46½	29,67	Variable. Light breezes and fair weather.
20	60 0	211 40		41	29,72	Ditto. Light airs, and thick weather.
21	59 30⅓	210 6	23 42	41¾	29,92	Ditto. Moderate wind, and fair weather.
22	58 22	208 42		41¾	30,12	Weſterly. Freſh gales, and fair weather.
23	59 9	208 47		44	30,25	Ditto. Freſh gales, and fair weather.
24	58 14¼	207 59		41	30,17	Ditto. Light breezes, and fair weather.
25	58 41½	207 39		44½	30,18	Northerly. Freſh gales.
26	59 9½	206 50		44	29,92	Variable. Freſh gales.
27	59 20	207 20		44	29,75	N. W. Strong gales, and thick hazy Weather, with rain.
28	59 50¾	207 24		46¾	30,17	Eaſterly. Light breezes, and hazy weather.
29	60 8	207 36		42	29,98	Variable. Freſh gales, and drizzling rain.
30	60 37	208 3		46¾	29,77	Northerly. Light winds.
31	61 11	208 45		46	29,72	Ditto. Light winds, and drizzling rain.
June 1	61 5⅓	209 24		47	29,57	Calm, with fair weather, and drizzling rain alternately.

TABLE XI.

Route of the Reſolution and Diſcovery from Cook's River to Samganoodha Harbour, in the Iſland Oonalaſhka.

Time.	Latitude North.	Longitude Eaſt.	Variation Eaſt.	Therm.	Barom.	Winds, Weather, and Remarks.
1778.	° ′	° ′	° ′	°	Inches.	
June 7	58 5	207 45		47½	30,32	Variable. Light winds, and cloudy.
8	57 52½	207 54		50	30,23	Ditto. Freſh breezes, and fair weather.
9	57 42	207 39		46	30,17	S. E. b. S. Moderate wind, and drizzling rain.
10	57 20	207 25		46	30,11	S. E. b. S. A gentle breeze, and miſty weather.
11	57 5	207 33		45	29,97	S. E. Moderate wind, drizzling rain, and thick foggy weather.
12	57 3½	206 12		48½	30,11	Southerly. Moderate breeze, and foggy, with drizzling rain.
13	56 49	205 40	20 31	49¾	30,02	W.S.W. Freſh breezes, and hazy weather.
14	56 22¼	205 27		49½	29,98	Ditto. Freſh breezes, and cloſe cloudy weather.
15	56 23	202 51		45	29,50	Southerly. Freſh gales, and foggy; rain at times.
16	56 5	201 10		44	29,91	Variable. Freſh gales, and foggy, rain at times.
17	55 33	200 48	20 22	44½	30,07	Weſterly. Light winds, and clear weather.
18	55 25	200 42	22 32	47	30,06	Variable. Light winds, and fine weather.
19	55 18	199 16		47	29,85	Ditto. Light winds, and fine weather.
20	54 44	197 29		48	29,81	N. E. Light breezes, and fair weather.
21	54 17½	197 11		50	29,72	N. W. b. N. Light breezes, and fair weather.
22	53 51	196 34		53	29,68	Weſterly. Light airs, and fine weather.
23	53 36½	195 50		50	29,52	Variable. Light winds, and hazy; ſome rain.
24	54 13	195 14		42	29,80	W. S. W. A freſh gale, and cloudy; ſome rain.
25	54 4	194 59		47	29,75	Variable. Light winds, and hazy weather.
26	53 46	194 1		45	29,80	Eaſterly. Light winds, and thick foggy weather.
27	53 51½	193 35		46	29,80	S. S. E. Freſh gales, and foggy.
28	53 55	193 28		43½	29,70	Northerly. Light breezes. Came to an anchor off Samganoodha Bay.

TABLE XII.

Route of the Reſolution and Diſcovery from Samganoodha Bay to Briſtol Bay, along the Weſtern Coaſt of America.

Time.	Latitude North.	Longitude Eaſt.	Variation Eaſt.	Therm.	Barom.	Winds, Weather, and Remarks.
1778.	° ′	° ′	° ′	°	Inches.	
July 2	54 19	193 33		47	30,24	E. S. E. Light airs, and fine weather.
3	55 12	195 24		46	29,78	Eaſterly. Moderate wind, and foggy.
4	55 49½	197 5		44	29,67	Southerly. Moderate wind, and thick weather.
5	56 30	198 43		42¾	29,68	Eaſterly. The ſame weather.
6	56 55	199 36		42	29,73	Variable. Light winds, and foggy, with rain.
7	57 6½	200 16		50	30,01	Northerly. Light winds, and hazy.
8	57 16	200 48	26 13	47	29,98	Variable. Light winds, and fine weather.
9	57 49½	201 42		44	30,13	Ditto. Light winds, and fine weather.
10	58 18¾	200 39	22 49	51	30,11	Ditto. A gentle breeze, and fair weather.
11	58 0	200 34		48	30,16	Southerly. Light winds, and foggy, with drizzling rain.
12	58 12¼	200 33	22 32	51	30,10	Variable. Light winds, and hazy; thunder and lightning.
13	58 13½	199 0		50	30,17	Weſterly. Light winds, and fine weather.
14	58 12	198 56		52	30,10	Weſterly. Light airs, and fine weather.
15	58 22	198 39		52	30,17	Ditto. Light airs, and fine weather.
16	58 28	197 46		52½	30,28	Ditto. Light winds, and foggy at times.
17	58 54	197 25		55	30,30	Variable. Light airs, and fine weather.
18	59 17	197 36		54	30,17	Ditto. The ſame weather.
19	59 30	197 45		63	29,85	S. W. Light winds, and fair weather. At anchor off Cape Newnham.

TABLE XIII.

Route of the Reſolution and Diſcovery from Briſtol Bay to Norton Sound, on the Weſtern Coaſt of America.

Time.	Latitude North.	Longitude Eaſt.	Variation Eaſt.	Therm.	Barom.	Winds, Weather, and Remarks.
1778.	° ′	° ′	° ′	°	Inches.	
July 23	58 43	196 45		53	29,73	Eaſterly. Moderate wind, and cloudy. Cape Newnham N. 39° E. diſtant about ten leagues.
24	58 7	194 22		49¾	29,65	E. N. E. Moderate wind, and miſty weather.
25	58 25½	192 13		50½	29,68	Northerly. Moderate wind, and thick fog.
2	58 37	191 36		53	29,86	N. Eaſterly. Little wind, and thick fog. Many whales, and birds.
27	59 11	190 57		51	29,84	Northerly. Little wind, and foggy. Many birds, and ſeals.
28	59 55	190 0	18 40	54	29,77	N. Eaſterly. Light winds, and foggy weather.
29	60 21	187 35		48	29,54	Northerly. Light winds, and foggy, with rain. Many birds.
30	60 21	188 11		55	29,64	Ditto. Light winds, and moſtly foggy.
31	61 11	189 22		46	29,58	Variable. Little wind, and foggy weather.
Aug. 1	61 57½	190 47		54	29,83	Eaſterly. Light winds, and cloudy: ſome rain.
2	61 55	191 44		49½	29,77	Variable. Light winds and cloudy, with rain.
3	62 34	192 20		55	30,01	Ditto. Light breezes, and cloudy: ſome rain.
4	63 53	194 0		52	30,00	Eaſterly. Moderate wind, with rain.
5	64 30	193 48		50½	29,76	Variable. Moderate wind, and foggy, with rain.
6	64 39	193 1		56	29,75	Southerly. Moderate breeze, and foggy, with rain.
7	64 48	192 42		49	29,85	Weſterly. Little wind, and thick miſty weather.
8	65 0	192 30		48	29,70	Variable. Little wind, and foggy, with rain.
9	65 48	191 42		50	29,70	N. Eaſterly. Freſh breeze, and foggy: ſome rain.

TABLE XIII. Continued.

Route of the Reſolution and Diſcovery from Briſtol Bay to Norton Sound, on the Weſtern Coaſt of America.

Time.	Latitude North.	Longitude Eaſt.	Variation Eaſt.	Therm.	Barom.	Winds, Weather, and Remarks.
1778.	° ′	° ′	° ′	°	Inches.	
Aug. 10	65 36	189 15	27 22	45	30,06	Northerly. Freſh gales, and fair weather.
11	66 5¼	191 19		46	29,94	Southerly. Light winds, and fine weather.
12	66 20½	191 6	30 41	51	29,97	Variable. Light winds, and fair weather.
13	66 32½	192 0	27 15½	50	30,10	Northerly. Light breezes, and fine weather.
14	67 28	194 33		45½	30,18	S. Eaſterly. A freſh breeze, and hazy; ſome rain.
15	68 18	193 1		48	29,79	Southerly. Freſh gales, and foggy, with rain.
16	69 57	193 41	35 32	42	29,85	Ditto. Freſh gales, and hazy weather.
17	70° 33	197 35	35 1	35	30,10	Weſterly. Moderate wind, and hazy weather.
18	70 44	198 24		33¼	30,02	Ditto. Freſh gales, and foggy; with ſnow and ſleet.
19	70 6	196 32		33½	30,07	Ditto. Freſh gales, and hazy; with ſnow and ſleet.
20	70 4	196 0		38½	29,99	Ditto. Freſh breezes, and foggy weather.
21	69 32	195 48	31 3	42	29,76	Northerly. Light winds, and thick fog.
22	69 34	194 42		44	29,73	Variable. Light breezes, and foggy weather.
23	69 33½	194 20		44	29,57	Ditto. Light breezes, and thick fog.
24	69 30	190 23		35	30,10	N. Weſterly. Moderate wind, and foggy; ſome ſnow.
25	69 38	187 30	21 44	40	29,80	Weſterly. Freſh gales, with ſhowers of ſnow and rain.
26	69 36	184 0	23 20	37½	29,96	Ditto. Freſh breezes, and cold raw weather.
27	69 33½	183 30		41¾	29,66	Variable. Freſh gales, and cloudy; cold, and ſome rain.
28	69 17	182 40	25 56	35½	29,96	Ditto. Light winds, and miſty weather; ſome rain.

TABLE XIII. Continued.

Route of the Reſolution and Diſcovery from Briſtol Bay to Norton Sound, on the Weſtern Coaſt of America.

Time.	Latitude North.	Longitude Eaſt.	Variation Eaſt.	Therm.	Barom.	Winds, Weather, and Remarks.
1778.	° ′	° ′	° ′	°	Inches.	
Aug. 29	68 49	181 26		37	29,89	Variable. Freſh breezes; hazy; ſome rain.
30	68 31½	182 32		33	30,10	N. Weſterly. Freſh breezes, and foggy; with much ſnow.
31	68 6	185 39		35	30,21	N. W. b. N. Moderate wind, and hazy; ſome ſnow.
Sept. 1	67 30	187 15		35	30,20	North. Moderate wind, with ſnow and ſleet.
2	66 37½	189 20	27 57½	34	30,07	N. N. W. Light winds, and much ſnow.
3	65 28	189 5		44	29,97	N. N. W. Moderate wind; ſhowers of ſnow.
4	64 38½	188 15	24 53	39	29,76	Northerly. Light winds, and fine weather.
5	64 8	189 57		39¼	29,84	N. N. W. Light winds; the air dry and cold.
6	63 55½	193 30	26 53	43	29,66	N. N. W. Light winds, and fair weather.
7	64 16	194 20	25 59	46	29,84	Variable. Light airs, and fine weather.
8	64 27	196 3		45½	30,00	Weſterly. The ſame weather.
9	64 34½	197 41		46½	29,90	S. Weſterly. Freſh breezes, and foggy; ſome rain.
10	64 33	197 30		41	29,97	Weſterly. Light winds, and cloudy. In Norton Sound.

TABLE XIV.

Route of the Reſolution and Diſcovery from Norton Sound to the Iſland of Oonalaſhka.

Time.	Latitude North.	Longitude Eaſt.	Variation Eaſt.	Therm.	Barom.	Winds, Weather, and Remarks.
1778.	° ′	° ′	° ′	°	Inches.	
Sept. 17	64 10	198 30		46½	29,78	Eaſterly. Light winds, and fair weather.
18	63 37	197 45		42½	29,90	Ditto. Light winds, and fine weather.
19	63 43	196 12		49	29,97	Variable. Moderate wind, and fair weather.
20	63 37	192 12	22 23	38	29,73	N. Eaſterly. Freſh gales, and paſſing clouds.
21	62 58	190 17		39	29,67	Northerly. Freſh gales, with ſhowers of ſnow.
22	61 45	189 0		39	29,74	N. Weſterly. Gentle gales, with ſhowers of ſnow.
23	60 21½	187 30		40	29,95	N. W. A freſh breeze, and cloudy cold weather.
24	59 17¼	189 5		40	30,25	Variable. Moderate wind, and dry cloudy weather.
25	58 31	190 51		44	30,00	Southerly. Strong gales, and cloudy, but mild weather.
26	58 36½	189 15		44½	29,30	S. S. E. Freſh gales, and hazy weather; ſome rain.
27	58 36	189 43		45¼	29,25	S. S. E. Moderate wind, and cloudy: ſome rain.
28	58 2	190 28		49	29,41	Southerly. Light winds, and moſtly fair weather.
29	57 0	192 2		50	29,69	S. W. Freſh gales, with ſhowers of ſleet and rain.
30	56 30	192 50		50	29,75	Variable. Light winds, and ſome ſhowers. Many whales.
Oct. 1	55 29	193 0		47	29,77	S. Weſterly. Light airs, and ſome ſhowers.
2	54 2½	192 27		45	30,14	Weſterly. Light airs, and ſhowery weather.
3	53 59		19 59	47	30,47	Weſterly. Light breezes. Standing into Samganoodha harbour, in the iſland of Oonalaſhka.

TABLE XV.

Route of the Reſolution and Diſcovery from Oonalaſhka to Sandwich Iſles.

Time.	Latitude North.	Longitude Eaſt.	Variation Eaſt.	Therm.	Barom.	Winds, Weather, and Remarks.
1778.	° ′	° ′	° ′	°	Inches.	
Oct. 27	54 8		19 59	43½	30,01	Variable. Strong gales, with rain.
28	53 59			44	29,60	S. Weſterly. Strong gales, with hail and rain.
29	53 52½	191 41		39	30,05	Variable. Very ſtrong gales, with hail and rain.
30	53 45			38	29,50	Weſt. Strong gales, with ſhowers of ſnow and rain.
31	52 1½	194 56		39	30,40	Weſt. Strong gales in ſqualls, with ſnow and ſleet.
Nov. 1	49 55	196 2		41	30,11	Weſterly. Strong gales, with hail, ſnow, and ſleet.
2	48 31	197 10		46	29,95	Ditto. Freſh gales, with thick rainy weather.
3	48 1	198 28		43	29,50	Southerly. Strong gales, with rain.
4	45 44¼	199 51		46	29,92	W. b. S. Strong gales, with ſhowers of hail.
5	44 31	200 36		49	29,40	Variable. Freſh gales, and rainy weather.
6	42 29¼	201 27	17 15	50	30,23	N. W. Moderate wind, and foggy weather.
7	41 10	202 2		55	30,25	S.W. Light winds, and ſome rain. Saw a ſhagg.
8	40 38	202 17	16 5	59	30,21	Weſterly. Light winds, and cloudy.
9	39 36	202 36		58	30,17	North. Light winds, with rain.
10	39 10	203 16		64	30,36	Variable. Light winds, with flying clouds.
11	38 38	205 0		65	30,48	South. Moderate wind, and moſtly cloudy.
12	38 14	206 17		67	30,31	South. Moderate wind, and moſtly cloudy.
13	36 6	206 33		62	30,33	Weſterly. Freſh gale, and hazy, with ſome rain.
14	34 39	206 46		63	30,43	N. b. E. Light winds, and cloudy weather.
15	33 33	206 57		69	30,40	E. N. E. Light winds, and moſtly cloudy.

TABLE XV. Continued.

Route of the Reſolution and Diſcovery from Oonalaſhka to Sandwich Iſles.

Time.	Latitude North.	Longitude Eaſt.	Variation Eaſt.	Therm.	Barom.	Winds, Weather, and Remarks.
1778.	° ′	° ′	° ′	°	Inches.	
Nov. 16	32 47	206 57	11 57	69	30,35	N. Eaſterly. Light winds, and cloudy. Several dolphins.
17	32 26	206 51		76	30,45	Eaſterly. Light winds, and fine weather.
18	32 41	207 52		74	30,32	S.S.E. Moderate wind, and fine weather.
19	32 27	206 44		71	30,15	Southerly. Moderate wind, and cloudy.
20	30 23	205 51		65	30,17	Variable. Strong gales, with rain.
21	27 53	206 28		67	30,21	Northerly. Strong wind, and ſhowery weather.
22	26 17½	206 25		68¾	30,31	North. Light winds, with ſhowers.
23	24 49	206 0		72½	30,30	Northerly. Light winds, and fine weather.
24	22 36	205 30		78	30,26	E.N.E. A freſh breeze, and fine weather.
25	20 57¼	204 38		81½	30,22	Eaſterly. Freſh gales, with ſhowers.
26	20 57	203 28		81½	30,16	Ditto. Freſh breeze, and fine weather. Sandwich Iſles, from E. by the S. to W.

TABLE XVI.

Route of the Reſolution and Diſcovery from Sandwich Iſles to the Bay of St. Peter and Paul in Kamtſchatka.

Time.	Latitude North.	Longitude Eaſt.	Variation Eaſt.	Therm.	Barom.	Winds, Weather, and Remarks.
1779.	° ′	° ′	° ′	°	Inches.	
March 15	21 47	199 37		75	30,15	Oneeheow, from N.E. ½ E. to Eaſt; and Tahoora, S. W. b. W. about three leagues diſtant.
16	21 27	198 50		74	30,17	Eaſterly. Moderate breezes, and cloudy.
17	21 18	197 2		75½	30,20	E. N. E. Freſh breezes, and fair weather.
18	21 12	195 26	10 4	77	30,21	N. E. b. E. Moderate wind, and fair weather.
19	21 11	194 28	9 10	74½	30,16	N. Eaſterly. Moderate wind, and fair. Many boobies.
20	20 52	193 22	11 30⅓	75½	30,12	N. N. E. Light wind, and fair weather. Many ſharks.

TABLE XVI. Continued.

Route of the Reſolution and Diſcovery from Sandwich Iſles to the Bay of St. Peter and Paul, in Kamtſchatka.

Time.	Latitude North.	Longitude Eaſt.	Variation Eaſt.	Therm.	Barom.	Winds, Weather, and Remarks.
1779.	° ′	° ′	° ′	°	Inches.	
March 21	20 37	192 13	11 26	77	30,21	E. N. E. Moderate wind, and fair weather. Several bonetos about.
22	20 27	190 44		77	30,23	E. b. N. Moderate wind, with ſome rain.
23	19 58	188 22	11 51	78	30,24	N. E. b. E. Freſh breezes, with rain.
24	19 56	186 0		81	30,21	E. N. E. Moderate wind, and ſome rain.
25	19 58	184 12	11 14	80	30,18	Eaſterly. Moderate wind, and fair weather. Several men-of-war birds.
26	19 48	183 9		79½	30,16	Eaſterly. Light winds, and fair weather. The birds remain with us.
27	19 49½	182 29	12 8	81	30,10	Eaſt. Light winds, and fine weather.
28	20 6	181 23		78	30,06	E. N. E. Light winds, and fine weather. Many men-of-war birds.
29	20 16	180 59		83	30,00	Eaſterly. Light winds, and fine weather. Boobies, and men-of-war birds.
30	20 21	180 25		78	30,00	Southerly. Light winds, and ſome rain. Porpoiſes, dolphins, and birds.
31	20 35	179 47		80½	30,07	Southerly. Light airs, and hot ſultry weather.
April 1	21 14	179 31	11 21½	79	30,10	Eaſterly. Light winds, and cloudy. Dolphins, and men-of-war birds.
2	22 36	177 20		76	30,20	N. Eaſterly. Freſh gales, and ſqually weather. Paſſed a turtle.
3	24 38¼	175 21		75½	30,21	N. Eaſterly. Freſh gales, and cloudy.
4	26 21	173 36		73	30,30	E. N. E. Freſh gales, and hazy, with rain; ſome lightning.
5	28 33	171 47		71	30,12	Eaſterly. Freſh gales, and hazy, with rain.
6	30 13	170 13		69	29,98	Variable. Freſh gales, with rain.
7	30 6¾	168 15		59	30,24	N. b. W. Freſh gales, and ſqually, with rain. Saw an albatroſs.
8	30 39	167 4	9 9	62	30,46	N. Eaſterly. Freſh breezes, and cloudy; ſome rain.
9	32 16	166 39		67	30,42	S. Eaſterly. Moderate wind, and fair weather.
10	33 30½	166 0		63	30,42	Variable. Light winds, and cloudy; ſome rain.

TABLE XVI. Continued.

Route of the Reſolution and Diſcovery from Sandwich Iſles to the Bay of St. Peter and Paul, in Kamtſchatka.

Time.	Latitude North.	Longitude Eaſt.	Variation Eaſt.	Therm.	Barom.	Winds, Weather, and Remarks.
1779.	° ′	° ′	° ′	°	Inches.	
April 11	35 32	165 30		62	29,94	Southerly. Freſh breezes, and ſqually; ſome rain.
12	37 10	164 34		50	30,42	Variable. Freſh gales, and hazy; ſome rain. Birds.
13	39 30	163 20		49	30,33	Eaſterly. Freſh gales, and hazy, with rain. Some divers.
14	40 53	162 13		45	29,94	E.N.E. Strong wind, with rain and hail.
15	41 52	160 42		42	30,30	N. Eaſterly. Strong gales, and cloudy.
16	42 12½	159 41	6 20	41	30,36	Northerly. Light winds, and cloudy weather.
17	43 18	160 0		41	30,31	Northerly. Moderate wind, and cloudy weather.
18	46 9	160 48		37	29,67	Variable. Freſh gales, with rain.
19	48 40	161 14		31½	29,80	Southerly. Freſh gales, with ſnow.
20	49 48	161 30	9 33½	32	29,83	S.W. Moderate wind, and ſnow at times.
21	50 25¼	161 48		36	30,05	Northerly. Moderate wind, and cloudy, with ſhowers of ſnow.
22	51 38	160 7		30	30,16	N. Eaſterly. Freſh breezes, and cloudy.
23	52 11	159 37		30	30,17	N. Eaſterly. Moderate wind, and foggy. Saw the continent of Aſia.
24	52 30	159 40		30	30,13	N. Eaſterly. Moderate wind, and foggy, with ſleet.
25	52 40	159 30		30½	30,55	N. E. Freſh gales, and hazy, with ſleet.
26	52 35	159 43		29¾	29,90	N. E. Freſh gales, with much ſnow.
27	52 45	159 43		29¾	30,20	N. Eaſterly. Freſh gales, and foggy, with ſnow.
28	52 45	160 0		34	30,11	N. N. E. Moderate breezes, with ſleet. The North point forming the entrance into the bay of St. Peter and Paul, bore N. 49° Weſt, diſtant about three leagues.

TABLE XVII.

Route of the Reſolution and Diſcovery from the Bay of St. Peter and Paul toward the North, and back to that Place.

Time.	Latitude North.	Longitude Eaſt.	Variation Eaſt.	Therm.	Barom.	Winds, Weather, and Remarks.
1779.	° ′	° ′	° ′	°	Inches.	
June 17	52 46	159 11	7 59½	49½	29,74	Variable. Light winds, and hazy, with ſome rain.
18	52 39	159 42	8 59	42½	29,92	S. E. b. E. Light winds, and foggy weather.
19	53 59	161 17		46	29,95	S. S. W. Light winds, and thick foggy weather.
20	54 53½	162 48		45	29,97	S. b. W. Freſh gales, and foggy weather. Many birds.
21	55 51¾	163 42		47½	30,03	Variable. Moderate wind, and hazy weather.
22	56 48	164 45		52	29,75	Variable. Moderate wind, and ſome rain.
23	57 11	165 47		48½	30,03	Variable. Light winds, and foggy.
24	58 19½	167 20	13 11½	46½	29,92	S. S. W. Moderate wind, and foggy at times.
25	59 8	168 16	13 10	50½	30,06	Southerly. Light winds, and foggy at times.
26	59 27	170 46		44¼	30,07	S. W. b. S. Moderate wind, and very foggy.
27	59 52	175 44	13 30	43	29,96	S. W. Freſh gales, and foggy. Many gulls.
28	61 56	176 2	17 19	50¼	29,60	S. W. Moderate wind, and hazy. Birds and drift-wood.
29	62 4	178 24		44½	29,43	Weſterly. Moderate wind, and hazy; ſome rain.
30	61 49	180 17		41½	29,71	Ditto. Light breezes, and hazy weather.
July 1	62 10	181 13		44	29,72	Variable. Light winds, and foggy; ſome rain.
2	62 38	182 49		45	29,82	Southerly. Light winds, and thick fog.
3	63 35	186 57		44	30,09	S.E. Moderate wind, and moſtly foggy.
4	64 33	188 51	26 53	42	30,16	S.E. Light winds, and foggy, at times.
5	65 42	189 47		42½	30,07	Southerly. Light airs, and foggy. Many whales and birds.
6	67 0	191 24		40	29,87	S. b. E. Moderate wind, and hazy. Met with ice.

TABLE XVII. Continued.

Route of the Reſolution and Diſcovery from the Bay of St. Peter and Paul toward the North, and back to that Place.

Time.	Latitude North.	Longitude Eaſt.	Variation Eaſt.	Therm.	Barom.	Winds, Weather, and Remarks.
1779.	° ′	° ′	° ′	°	Inches.	
July 7	68 22	192 18	27 22	37	29,67	Southerly. Moderate wind, and foggy, with rain. Sea-horſes.
8	69 25	192 39	21 39	32	29,71	Variable. Light winds, and foggy, with ſnow and rain.
9	69 11	188 54	29 28	32	29,44	N. b. W. Freſh gales, and hazy, with ſnow, and cold weather.
10	68 1	188 50		39	29,52	N. W. Light winds, and foggy, with ſnow.
11	67 51	189 21	27 32	38	29,48	N. Eaſterly. Light winds, and foggy, with ſnow and ſleet.
12	68 41	189 0		37	29,18	Northerly. Light winds, rain and ſleet.
13	69 29	188 10	26 10	36	29,78	Variable. Moderate wind, rain and ſleet.
14	69 37	189 4		41	29,67	Eaſterly. Light winds, and foggy, with rain and ſleet.
15	69 36	190 17		35	29,55	Variable. Light winds, and thick foggy weather.
16	69 55	193 7		32	29,60	S. Weſterly. Strong wind and foggy, with ſnow and ſleet.
17	69 55	195 14	35 37	36½	29,50	S. Weſterly. Freſh gales, with ſnow and ſleet.
18	70 26	196 18	31 20	37	29,80	Variable. Light winds and foggy, with ſnow and ſleet.
19	70 11	197 4	28 59	37	29,91	Ditto. Light winds, and thick foggy weather.
20	69 37	195 1		41	29,90	Eaſterly. Moderate wind, and foggy.
21	69 37	193 7		44	29,70	Eaſterly. Moderate wind, and foggy weather.
22	69 27	188 35		48	29,46	Eaſterly. Freſh gales, with rain.
23	69 3	187 29		37	29,40	Eaſterly. Moderate wind, and foggy weather.
24	68 51	188 37		37	29,12	Variable. Moderate wind, and foggy; ſome rain.
25	68 38	190 2	21 48	35½	29,97	S. Weſterly. Moderate wind, and foggy.
26	67 59	188 27		39	29,78	Southerly. Freſh gales, and cloudy weather.

TABLE XVII. Continued.

Route of the Reſolution and Diſcovery from the Bay of St. Peter and Paul toward the North, and back to that Place.

Time.	Latitude North.	Longitude Eaſt.	Variation Eaſt.	Therm.	Barom.	Winds, Weather, and Remarks.
1779.	° ′	° ′	° ′	°	Inches.	
July 27	67 47	188 27		37	29,80	Variable. Light winds, and foggy, with rain.
28	67 9	189 46		43	29,86	Southerly. Moderate wind, and hazy.
29	66 50	190 52		42	29,80	S. Eaſterly. Moderate wind, and fair weather.
30	66 20	191 20		42	29,60	Variable. Little wind, and thick fog.
31	65 5	189 20	22 52½	42	29,82	Northerly. Moderate wind, and foggy: ſome rain.
Aug. 1	64 25½	189 45	19 47	40	29,79	Variable. Light winds, and foggy weather.
2	64 1	189 57	24 38	47	29,73	Southerly. Moderate wind, and foggy.
3	64 5	189 26		45	29,61	Eaſterly. Little wind, and hazy weather.
4	64 0	188 11		41	29,57	Southerly. Light winds, and foggy.
5	62 18	186 1		42½	29,46	Northerly. Freſh gales, and hazy, with rain.
6	60 47	184 31		43	29,75	Weſterly. Freſh gales, and hazy: ſome rain.
7	59 35	183 30	18 25	44	30,14	Ditto. Moderate wind, and hazy: ſome rain.
8	59 5	180 42		45	29,50	Southerly. Freſh gales, and fair weather.
9	58 49	177 4		48	28,95	Southerly. Freſh gales, and foggy: with rain.
10	58 26	174 18		48	28,94	Variable. Moderate wind; ſome rain.
11	57 25	172 41	11 34	49½	29,15	Weſterly. Moderate wind, and hazy; ſome rain.
12	56 28	171 46	11 11	51	29,40	Ditto. Moderate wind, and cloudy weather.
13	55 23	170 50		50	29,77	Ditto. Moderate wind, and fair weather.
14	54 50	171 26		48	29,93	S. Weſterly. Moderate wind, and hazy; ſome rain.
15	54 10	171 14		48	29,96	Weſterly. Moderate wind, and cloudy.
16	54 22	170 40		51	29,84	Ditto. Light winds, and hazy weather.

TABLE XVII. Continued.

Route of the Reſolution and Diſcovery from the Bay of St. Peter and Paul toward the North, and back to that Place.

Time.	Latitude North.	Longitude East.	Variation East.	Therm.	Barom.	Winds, Weather, and Remarks.
1779.	° ′	° ′	° ′	°	Inches.	
Aug. 17	53 48	168 19	9 55	50	30,02	N. Weſterly. Moderate, and fair weather.
18	52 38	167 50		52	30,05	Weſterly. Moderate wind, and fair weather.
19	52 38	165 21		49½	29,66	Southerly. Freſh gales, and cloudy, with rain.
20	53 7	162 40		52	30,03	Variable. Freſh gales, and cloudy weather.
21	53 45	161 38		57	29,90	S. W. Moderate wind, and hazy weather.
22	53 8	160 36	6 18	57	29,97	Variable. Light winds, and cloudy; ſome rain.
23	52 46	160 10	6 12	56	29,92	Weſterly. Light winds, and cloudy.
24	52 52	158 43½	6 20½	57	30,13	N. W. b. N. Moderate wind, and fair weather. In the bay of St. Peter and Paul.

TABLE XVIII.

Route of the Reſolution and Diſcovery from the Bay of St. Peter and Paul to Macao in China.

Time.	Latitude North.	Longitude East.	Variation East.	Therm.	Barom.	Winds, Weather, and Remarks.
1779.	° ′	° ′	° ′	°	Inches.	
Oct. 10	52 38	158 37	6 20½	60	29,78	N. W. b. N. Light winds, and fine weather.
11	52 5	158 30	6 3	47	29,93	Variable. Moderate wind, and cloudy.
12	51 0	157 22	5 17	46	29,86	Northerly. Moderate wind, and cloudy; ſome rain.
13	49 49	156 47	4 49	42	29,55	Variable. Moderate wind, and fine weather.
14	48 17	155 30		43	29,80	Weſterly. Moderate wind, and fine weather.
15	46 31	155 20	5 14	44	30,09	Ditto. Moderate wind, and ſome ſhowers.

TABLE XVIII. Continued.

Route of the Reſolution and Diſcovery from the Bay of St. Peter and Paul to Macao in China.

Time.	Latitude North.	Longitude Eaſt.	Variation. Eaſt.	Therm.	Barom.	Winds, Weather, and Remarks.
1779.	° ′	° ′	° ′	°	Inches.	
Oct. 16	45 27	155 23	4 39	47	30,15	Weſterly. Moderate wind, and fine weather.
17	45 7	153 47	4 54	48	30,14	N. Weſterly. Light winds, and fine weather.
18	44 28	152 46		50	30,26	Weſterly. Moderate wind, and cloudy; with ſhowers.
19	44 15	150 36		50	29,50	Southerly. Strong gales, and cloudy; ſome rain.
20	43 47	150 24		49	29,37	Ditto. Moderate wind, and thick hazy weather.
21	42 40	149 20		45	29,92	Variable. Strong gales, with rain.
22	40 59	148 0	2 27	44	30,15	N. Weſterly. Freſh gales, and fair weather.
23	40 35	146 39	0 49	51	30,36	Variable. Light winds, and cloudy.
24	40 48	145 30		59	29,96	S. Weſterly. Freſh gales, with rain.
25	40 25	144 2		53	30,00	Variable. Freſh gales, and hazy; ſome rain.
26	40 5	142 25	0 15	62	30,02	Variable. Moderate wind, and fair weather. Saw the coaſt of Japan.
27	39 16½	143 2	1 13	62	30,15	Ditto. Moderate wind, and cloudy. Saw the Eaſt coaſt of Japan.
28	38 15	142 6	1 17	62	30,14	Ditto. Light winds, and cloudy. All day within ſight of Japan.
29	37 45	141 50		64½	30,11	Southerly. Freſh gales, and hazy; ſome rain.
30	36 41	142 3	1 20	60	29,93	Variable. Briſk wind, and hazy weather.
31	35 33	142 3		63	30,10	Ditto. Moderate wind, and fair weather.
Nov. 1	35 17	141 29	1 41	69	30,35	Ditto. Moderate wind, and fine weather.
2	35 43	141 15		71	30,29	S. S. E. Freſh breezes, and fair weather.
3	36 29	144 48		73	30,02	S. b. E. Freſh breezes, and cloudy, with rain.
4	35 48½	146 33	3 14	75	29,85	S. S. W. Moderate wind, with ſome lightning and rain.
5	35 15	147 18	2 58½	70	29,86	Variable. Light winds, with rain.

TABLE XVIII. Continued.

Route of the Reſolution and Diſcovery from the Bay of St. Peter and Paul, to Macao in China.

Time.	Latitude North.	Longitude Eaſt.	Variation Eaſt.	Therm.	Barom.	Winds, Weather, and Remarks.
1779.	° ′	° ′	° ′	°	Inches.	
Nov. 6	35 1	147 28	3 59	70	30,18	Variable. Moderate wind, and ſome ſhowers.
7	33 50	148 40		71	30,19	Ditto. Freſh breezes, and fair weather.
8	33 6	148 45		69	30,14	Ditto. Light winds, and cloudy.
9	31 46	146 15		68½	29,78	Northerly. Light winds, with rain.
10	30 42	145 20		69	29,68	Ditto. Freſh gales, and thick rainy weather.
11	29 7	144 20		70½	29,80	Ditto. Freſh gales, and dark rainy weather.
12	27 36	144 26		70	29,40	N. N. E. Strong gales, and thick rainy weather.
13	25 59	143 27	3 49	72	29,81	N. W. Strong wind, and foggy, with rain.
14	24 36½	142 9	2 49	74	30,05	Northerly. Moderate wind, and fine weather.
15	24 49	141 15	2 57	79	30,18	Ditto. Moderate wind, and fine weather.
16	25 7	139 2	1 49½	81½	30,15	Eaſterly. Moderate wind, and fine weather.
17	24 45	137 56	2 15	76	30,18	Variable. Moderate wind, and fine weather.
18	23 45	135 36		75	30,31	Northerly. Freſh gales, and cloudy.
19	22 47	133 22		77	30,34	N. E. b. N. Freſh gales, and cloudy, with ſhowers.
20	22 5	131 15	1 0¼	77	30,24	E. N. E. Freſh gales, with ſome ſhowers.
21	21 26	129 3	0 1½	80	30,16	E. N. E. Moderate wind, with ſhowers.
22	20 48	126 39		75½	30,10	N. E. Freſh gales, with rain.
23	21 10	123 38		75	30,04	N. E. Strong gales, and rainy weather.
24	21 29	122 24		74	29,91	N. E. Freſh gales, and much rain.
25	21 35	121 24		73½	29,99	N. N. E. Strong wind, with rain.
26	21 12	120 12	0 0½ E.	73	30,01	N. N. E. Freſh gales, and cloudy; ſome rain.
27	21 5	118 22		70½	30,08	Northerly. Freſh gales, and hazy; ſome rain.

TABLE XVIII. Continued.

Route of the Reſolution and Diſcovery from the Bay of St. Peter and Paul, to Macao in China.

Time.	Latitude North.	Longitude Eaſt.	Variation Eaſt.	Therm.	Barom.	Winds, Weather, and Remarks.
1779.	° ′	° ′	° ′	°	Inches.	
Nov. 28	20 42	116 42		71½	30,14	N. N. E. Freſh gales, and cloudy; ſome rain.
29	21 58½	115 54		71	30,15	N. E. Freſh gales, and cloudy.
30	21 57	114 9		69	30,20	N. E. Freſh breezes, and cloudy; ſome rain.
Dec. 1				67	30,27	N. b. E. Freſh breezes, and cloudy; ſome rain.
2	22 8	113 43	0 32W.	66	30,30	Variable. Freſh breezes, and cloudy. At anchor at Macao.

TABLE XIX.

Route of the Reſolution and Diſcovery from Macao in China to the Cape of Good Hope.

Time.	Latitude North.	Longitude Eaſt.	Variation Weſt.	Therm.	Barom.	Winds, Weather, and Remarks.
1780.	° ′	° ′	° ′	°	Inches.	
Jan. 13						The Typa diſtant three miles. The Grand Ladrone E. diſtant five or ſix miles.
14	20 34	113 53		68	30,26	N. Eaſterly. Moderate wind, and fair weather.
15	18 57	114 3		72	30,23	E. N. E. Moderate wind, and fair weather.
16	16 39	114 5	0 39½	69½	30,15	N. Eaſterly. Briſk wind, with ſome rain.
17	14 39	113 13	1 24½	73	30,17	Ditto. Freſh gales, and cloudy; ſome rain.
18	12 32	112 0		75	30,10	N. E. b. N. Freſh gales, and cloudy; ſome rain.
19	10 22	109 43		73	30,25	N. N. E. Freſh gales, and ſqually weather.
20	8 46	106 45		73	30,26	N. E. Freſh gales, and fair weather.

TABLE XIX. Continued.

Route of the Reſolution and Diſcovery from Macao in China to the Cape of Good Hope.

Time.	Latitude North.	Longitude Eaſt.	Variation Weſt.	Therm.	Barom.	Winds, Weather, and Remarks.
1780.	° ′	° ′	° ′	°	Inches.	
Jan. 21	8 39	106 30		75	30,19	N. b. W. Freſh breezes, and hazy weather. From this day to the 28th, at anchor at Pulo Condore.
29	6 53	105 35		79	30,10	N. E. b. E. Freſh breezes, and fair weather.
30	5 2	104 45		78	30,10	N. E. Moderate wind, and cloudy weather.
31	3 18	104 29	0 30	78	30,07	N. E. b. N. Moderate breezes, and fine weather.
Feb. 1	1 21	105 15	0 26¼ E.	78½	30,05	N. b. E. Freſh breezes, and clear weather.
2	0 25 S.	105 15		80	30,09	North. Light winds, and clear.
3	1 48	105 3		81	30,07	N. N. E. Light winds, and clear. Lightning, S. W.
4	2 22	105 38		81¾	30,09	N. Eaſterly. Light breezes, and fair; ſome lightning.
5	3 9	106 12		83	30,00	Northerly. Light breezes, and fair weather.
6	4 33	106 15		81	30,00	Northerly. Light breezes, and fair weather.
7	5 21	106 0		81¼	29,97	Ditto. Light winds, and cloudy; ſome lightning.
8	5 38	105 45		78	29,90	Ditto. Light winds; thunder, lightning, and rain. From this time to the 18th, at Prince's Iſland, in the Straits of Sunda.
19	7 32	105 10		80½	29,96	W. N. W. Light airs, and cloudy.
20	8 30	105 4		82	29,93	N. Weſterly. Moderate wind, and cloudy; ſome rain.
21	9 23	104 48		82½	29,90	Weſterly. Light airs, and hazy.
22	10 31	104 24		82½	29,89	W. N. W. Moderate wind, and cloudy, with ſhowers.
23	11 47	103 46		80	29,90	Northerly. Moderate wind, and cloudy, with rain.
24	13 5	103 10		82	29,86	Variable. Freſh gales, with rain.

TABLE XIX. Continued.

Route of the Reſolution and Diſcovery from Macao in China to the Cape of Good Hope.

Time.	Latitude South.	Longitude East.	Variation Weſt.	Therm.	Barom.	Winds, Weather, and Remarks.
1780.	° ′	° ′	° ′	°	Inches.	
Feb. 25	13 24	101 31		79	30,07	Variable. Freſh gales, with much rain.
26	13 35	100 0		78	30,01	Southerly. Moderate wind, and cloudy weather.
27	13 57	99 20		81	29,98	S. Eaſterly. Light airs, and pleaſant weather.
28	14 56	97 43		79	30,15	Ditto. Moderate wind, and cloudy, with ſhowers.
29	15 53	94 50	2 47	79	30,12	S. S. E. Moderate wind, and cloudy, with ſhowers.
March 1	16 52	92 11		79	30,10	S. E. A freſh gale, and clear weather.
2	17 12	89 35		78	30,19	S. E. b. E. A freſh gale, and fair weather.
3	17 59	87 33		79	30,21	Eaſterly. Moderate wind, and fine weather.
4	18 25	84 24	3 11	78¾	30,16	S. E. Moderate wind; ſome rain.
5	19 2	83 12		78	30,17	S. Eaſterly. Freſh gale, and fair weather.
6	19 14	81 11		79	30,15	E. S. E. Moderate wind, and moſtly rainy.
7	19 40	78 49		78½	30,15	E. S. E. Freſh breezes, and cloudy; ſome rain.
8	20 1	76 58		84	30,14	Eaſt. Moderate wind, and fair weather.
9	20 23	75 10		81	30,13	E. S. E. Moderate wind; ſome rain.
10	20 39	73 20		81	30,19	E. S. E. Moderate breezes; ſome rain.
11	20 49	71 47		82	30,18	S. E. b. E. Freſh breezes, with rain.
12	21 6	69 22	8 57	81	30,17	E. S. E. Freſh breezes, and fine weather.
13	21 28	67 2		80½	30,14	E. S. E. Moderate breezes, and fine weather.
14	22 2	64 58		80½	30,21	S. E. Briſk wind, with ſome rain.
15	22 37	62 56		81	30,21	S. E. Moderate wind, and fair weather.
16	23 13	61 28		80	30,31	E. S. E. Moderate wind, and fair weather.
17	24 14	59 53		81	30,22	S. E. b. E. Moderate wind, and cloudy; ſome rain.

TABLE XIX. Continued.

Route of the Reſolution and Diſcovery from Maçao in China to the Cape of Good Hope.

Time.	Latitude South.	Longitude Eaſt.	Variation Weſt.	Therm.	Barom.	Winds, Weather, and Remarks.
1780.	° ′	° ′	° ′	°	Inches.	
March 18	25 9	58 50	19 0	79	30,29	S. E. b. E. Moderate wind, and hazy.
19	26 7	56 40		77	30,25	S. E. b. S. Freſh breezes, and cloudy.
20	26 36	54 48		77	30,22	S. E. Moderate wind, and cloudy.
21	27 19	52 35		77½	30,30	E. S. E. Moderate wind, and fair weather.
22	28 6	49 47		75	30,27	S. b. E. Freſh gales, and cloudy.
23	28 26½	46 30		76	30,19	S. E. Freſh gales, and cloudy; rain at times.
24	29 6	43 40		76	30,36	S. E. b. E. Strong wind, with rain at times.
25	29 39	41 0	21 27¾	76	30,25	S. E. Moderate wind, and fine weather.
26	30 26	38 47		75	30,19	S. Eaſterly. Moderate breezes; ſome rain.
27	31 3	37 20		77	30,09	Ditto. Moderate wind, and fine weather.
28	31 42	35 19		78	29,86	Variable. Moderate wind; thunder, lightning, and rain.
29	31 24	34 20		76	30,21	Ditto. Light winds; ſome rain.
30	31 6	33 30		73	30,23	S. Weſterly. Moderate wind, and clear weather.
31	31 20	32 10	26 31	74	30,28	Southerly. Light winds, and fair weather.
April 1	32 11	30 37		76	30,27	Eaſterly. Light winds, and hazy.
2	33 24	28 57		78	30,17	South. Moderate wind, and cloudy.
3	34 24	26 12		76	30,08	Eaſt. Moderate wind, and fine weather.
4	35 23	24 4		76	30,14	Variable. Light winds, and hazy; ſome rain.
5	36 13	22 17		73	30,24	S. S. W. Light winds, and pleaſant weather.
6	35 49	21 41		74	30,26	Southerly. Light airs, and clear weather.
7	35 14	20 37		70	29,98	S. W. Light winds, and hazy.
8	34 57	20 21		67	30,00	Weſterly. Moderate wind, and hazy; rain at times.

TABLE XIX. Continued.

Route of the Reſolution and Diſcovery from Macao in China to the Cape of Good Hope.

Time.	Latitude South.	Longitude Eaſt.	Variation Weſt.	Therm.	Barom.	Winds, Weather, and Remarks.
1780.	° ′	° ′	° ′	°	Inches.	
April 9	35 7	19 50		67	30,05	Southerly. Moderate wind, and cloudy; ſome rain.
10	34 31	18 40		69	30,06	Variable. Freſh gales, and ſqually; ſome rain.
11	34 36	18 20		67	30,25	Weſterly. Moderate wind, and cloudy. At noon, the Cape of Good Hope N. b. W. and the Table Mountain N. b. E. ½ E.

A P P E N D

A comparative TABLE of NUMERALS, exhibiting the Affinity and Extent of I
derived from that ſpoken on the Continent of

[N. B. The Malaye being conſidered as the root, three ſpecimens of its Numerals ſtand ſeparate, at the top of the Table. The deriva
Madagaſcar, the moſt Weſtern boundary, Eaſtward to Eaſter Iſland. In the Inſtances marked

	Malay.	*Malay at Su*
One,	Satu	Satoo
Two,	Dua	Duo
Three,	Tiga	Teego
Four,	Enpat	Ampat
Five,	Lyma	Leemo
Six,	Nam	Anam
Seven,	Toufou	Toojoo
Eight,	De-lappan	Slappan
Nine,	Sambalan	Sambilan
Ten,	Sapola	Sapooloo
	Herbert, p. 368.	*Marſden*,

	I. *Madagaſcar.*	II. *Madagaſcar.*	III. *Madagaſcar.*	IV. *Madagaſcar.*	V. *Acheen, in Sumatra.*	VI. *Lampoon, in Sumatra.*	V *Batta, in*
One,	Iſſee, *or* Eſſa	Eſer	Iſſo	Iſſe	Sah,	Sye	Sadah
Two,	Rooe	Rooa	Tone	Rica	Dua	Rowah	Duo
Three,	Tulloo, *or* Tailloo	Talu	Tello	Tellou	Tloo	Tulloo	Toloo
Four,	Efax, *or* Efar	Effutchi	Effad	Effats	Paat	Ampah	Opat
Five,	Lime, *or* Leman	Deeme	Fruto	Limi	Leemung	Leemah	Leemah
Six,	One, *or* Aine	Eanning	Woubla	Ene	Nam	Annam	Onam
Seven,	Heitoo, *or* Petoo	Feeto	Sidda	Titou	Too-joo	Peetoo	Paitoo
Eight,	Balloo	Varlo	Foulo	Walou	D'Lappan	Ooalloo	Ooalloa
Nine,	Seeva	Seve	Malo	Sivi	Sakoorang	Seewah	Seeah
Ten,	Foroo, *and* Fooloo	Folo	Nel	Tourou	Saploo	Pooloo	Sapooloo
	Parkinſon, p. 205.	*Drury*, p. 457.	*Herbert*, p. 22.	*Sir Joſeph Banks, in Hawkeſworth*, Vol. iii. p. 777.	*Marſden*, p. 168.	*Marſden*, p. 168.	*Marſde*

	XIV. *Iſle of Savu.*	XV. *Iſland of Savu* or *Savoo.*	XVI. *Iſle of Ceram.*	XVII. *Iſle of Moſes.* 1616.	XVIII. *New Guinea. Anno* 1616.	XIX. *Pappua of New Guinea.*	X *Tierra d Sa*
One,	Iſſe, *or* Uſſe	Uſſe	O Eeuta	Kaou	Tika	Oſer	
Two,	Rooe	Lhua	O Looa	Roa	Roa	Serou	ſame as at Annamooka.
Three,	Tulloa	Tullu	O Toloo	Tolou	Tola	Kior	
Four,	Uppa	Uppa	O Patoo	Wati	Fatta	Tiak	
Five,	Lumee	Lumme	O Leema	Rima	Lima, *or* Liman	Rim	
Six,	Unna	Unna	O Loma	Eno	Wamma	Onim	
Seven,	Petoo	Pedu	O Peeto	Lvijtfou	Fita	Tik	
Eight,	Aroo	Arru	O Aloo	Eialou	Wala	War	
Nine,	Saio	Saou	O Teeo	Siwa	Siwa	Siou	
Ten,	Singooroo	Singooroo	O Pooloo	Sanga Poulo	Sanga Foula	Samfoor	
	Parkinſon, p. 170.	*Lieut. Cook, Hawkeſ.* Vol. iii. p. 703.	*Parkinſon*, p. 200.	*Herrera, from Le Maire*, p. 82.	*Herrera, from Le Maire*, p. 81.	*Foreſt's Voyage*, p. 402.	*Cook*, p.

	XXVII. *New Zealand.*	XXVIII. *New Zealand.*	XXIX. *Horn Iſlands.* 1616.	XXX. *Iſle of Cocos. Anno* 1616.	XXXI. *Friendly Iſlands.*	XXXII. *Iſland of Amſterdam.*	XX *Sandwic*
One,	Ka Tahe	Tahai	Tacij, *or* Taci	Taci	A Tahaw	Tahae	
Two,	Ka Rooa	Rooa	Loua, *or* Loa	Loua	Looa	Eooa	
Three,	Ka Tarroa	Toroa	Tolou	Tolou	Toloo	Tooroa	heite.
Four,	Ka Wha	T'Fa	Fa, *and* D'Fa	Fa	T'Fa	A Faa	
Five,	Ka Reema	Reema	Lima	Lima	Neema	Neema	
Six,	Ka Onoo	Honnoo	Houw	Houno	Vano		
Seven,	Ka Wheetoo	Widdoo		Fitou	Fidda		
Eight,	Ka Warroo	Warroo		Walou	Varoo		
Nine,	Ka Eeva	Heeva		Ywou	Heeva		
Ten,	Kaca Haowroo	Anga Horro	Onge Foula	Onge Foula	Ongofooroo		
	Parkinſon, p. 128.	*Forſter*, p. 284.	*Herrera, from Le Maire*, p. 81.	*Herrera, from Le Maire*, p. 81.	*Forſter's Obſervat.* p. 284.	*Cook*, Vol. ii. p. 364.	*Anderſo tular Appe*

D I X, N° II.

of Language, which is found to prevail in all the Iſlands of the Eaſtern Sea, and of Aſia, in the Country of the Malayes.

derivative branches are ranged and numbered, according to the longitudinal ſituation of the ſeveral places, proceeding from marked with a Star, liberty has been taken to ſeparate the Article from the Numeral.]

	at Sumatra.	*Malay.*
	- - -	Sa
	- - -	Dua
	- -	Teega
	- - -	Ampat
	- -	Leema
	- - -	Nam, *and* Anam
	- -	Toojoo
	- -	Delapan
	an - -	Sambelan
	oo - -	Sapooloo
	den, p. 168.	*Forſter's Obſervations*, p. 284.

VII.	VIII.	IX.	X.	XI.	XII.	XIII.
atta, in Sumatra.	*Rejang, in Sumatra.*	*Princes Iſland.*	*Java.*	*Tagales of Leuconia*, or *Manilla.*	*Pampangos*, or *Philippine.*	*Mindanao.*
adah - -	Do - -	Hegie - -	Sigi - -	Yſa - -	Iſa, Metong -	Iſa
uo - -	Dooy - -	Dua - -	Lorou - -	Dalava, *or* Dalova	Ad-dua - -	Daua
oloo - -	Tellou - -	Tollu - -	Tullu - -	Tatl, *or* Ytlo -	At-lo - -	Tulu
pat - -	M-pat - -	Opat - -	Pappat - -	Apat - -	Apat - -	Apat
eemah - -	Lema - -	Limah - -	Limo - -	Lima - -	Lima - -	Lima
nam - -	Noom - -	Gunnap - -	Nunnam - -	Anim - -	Anam - -	Anom
aitoo - -	Toojooa - -	Tudju - -	Petu - -	Pito - -	Pitu - -	Petoo
oalloa - -	De-lapoon -	Delapan - -	Wolo - -	Valo - -	Valo - -	Walu
eeah - -	Sembilan - -	Salapan - -	Songo - -	Siyam - -	Siam - -	Seaow
apooloo - -	De Pooloo -	Sapoulo - -	Sapoulo - -	Polo *and* Pobo -	Apalo - -	Sanpoolu
Marſden, p. 168.	*Marſden*, p. 168	*Sir Joſeph Banks, in Hawkeſworth*, Vol. iii. p. 777.	*Sir Joſeph Banks, in Hawkeſworth*, Vol. iii. p. 777.	*Forſter's Obſervations*, p. 284.	*Forſter's Obſervations*, p. 284.	*Foreſt's Voyage*, p. 399.

XX.	XXI.	XXII.	XXIII.	XXIV.	XXV.	XXVI.
ierra del Eſpiritu Santo.	*New Caledonia.*	*New Caledonia.*	*Malicolo.*	*Tanna.*	*Tanna.*	*New Zealand.*
They named numerals as far as five or ſix, the ſame as at Annamooka.	*Wag Eeaing -	*Par Ai - -	*Tſee Kaee -	*Ret Tee - -	*Ree Dee - -	Tahai
	Wa Roo - -	Par Roo - -	E-Ry - -	Car Roo - -	Ka Roo - -	Rua
	Wat Eeen -	Par Ghen -	E-Rei - -	Ka Har - -	Ka Har - -	Torou
	Wat Baeek -	Par Bai - -	E-Bats - -	Ka Fa - -	Kai Phar - -	Ha
	Wan Nim -	Pa Nim - -	E-Reem - -	Ka Rirrom -	K' Reerum -	Rema
	- -	- -	- -	- -	- -	Ono
	- -	- -	- -	- -	- -	Etu
	- -	- -	- -	- -	- -	Warou
	- -	- -	- -	- -	- -	Iva
	- -	- -	- -	- -	- -	Anga Hourou
Cook, Vol. ii. p. 91.	*Cook*, Vol. ii. p. 364.	*Forſter*, p. 284.	*Cook*, Vol. ii. p. 364.	*Forſter*, p. 284.	*Cook*, Vol. ii. p. 364.	*Lieut. Cook*, 1770. *Hawkeſ.* Vol. iii. p. 475.

XXXIII.	XXXIV.	XXXV.	XXXVI.	XXXVII.	XXXVIII.	XXXIX.
Sandwich Iſlands.	*Otaheite.*	*Otaheite.*	*Marquiſas.*	*Marquiſas.*	*Eaſter Iſland.*	*Eaſter Iſland.*
Their numerals to ten, the ſame as at Otaheite.	Tohe - -	*A Tahay - -	*A Tahaee -	Bo Dahai - -	Kat Tahaee -	Ko Tohai
	Rooa - -	E Rooa - -	A Ooa - -	Bo Hooa - -	Rooa - -	Rooa
	Torhoa - -	Toroo - -	A Toroa - -	Bo Dooo - -	Toroo - -	Toroo
	Ha - -	A Haa - -	A Faa - -	Bo Ha - -	Haa, *and* Faa -	Haa
	Il Lemi - -	E Reema - -	A Aeema - -	Bo Heema -	Reema - -	Reema
	Whaine - -	A Ono - -	A Ono - -	Bo Na - -	Honoo - -	Hono
	Hitoo - -	A Heitoo - -	A Wheetoo -	Bo Hiddoo -	Heedoo - -	Hiddoo
	Wallhoa - -	A Waroo -	A Waoo - -	Bo Wahoo -	Varoo - -	Varoo
	Iva - -	A Eeva - -	A Eeva - -	Bo Heeva - -	Heeva - -	Heeva
	Hoolhoa - -	A Hooroo -	{ Whannahoo, *and* Whannahooe. }	Bo Nahoo -	{ Atta Hooroo Anna Hooroo }	Ana Hooroo
Anderſon's Vocabulary, in this Appendix.	*Parkinſon*, p. 64.	*Cook*, Vol. ii. p. 346.	*Cook*, Vol. ii. p. 364.	*Forſter's Obſervations*, p. 284.	*Cook*, Vol. ii. p. 364.	*Forſter's Obſervations*, p. 284.

[To front p. 528.]

APPENDIX, N° III.

VOCABULARY of the LANGUAGE of the FRIENDLY ISLANDS, May, &c. 1777.

Friendly Iſles.	Engliſh.
Ve faine,	*A woman.*
Maiee,	*Bread-fruit.*
Fukkatou,	*Barter.*
Woa,	*Admiration.*
My, fogge,	*Good.*
Attahoa,	*A bead; a necklace.*
Koehaa, *or* Kohaeea?	*What is that?* or *what is the name of it?*
Magoo,	*Give me.*
Le laiee,	*Good.*
Hou,	*Come here.*
Moree,	*A ſhaddock.*
Omee,	*Give me.*
Hobba,	*A ſort of plantain.*
Koajee, *or* Kaoojee,	*Done; finiſhed.*
Koeea,	*Yes; it is ſo.*
Amou,	*Got; to hold faſt.*
Horo, horo,	*A handkerchief*, or *wiper.*
Ongofooroo,	*Ten.*
Gehai, *or* geefai,	*There*; and *that.*
Kato,	*A baſket.*
Egeeai,	*A mat they wear round them.*

Friendly Iſles.	Engliſh.
Fooroo, *or* fooloo,	*Hair.*
Fooee vy,	*The leg.*
Tooa vy,	*Upper part of the foot.*
Fooloo, fooloo, matta,	*The eye-brow.*
Emamae,	*Pointed plantains.*
Evatta vatta,	*The breaſt.*
Eboore,	Ditto.
Etooa,	*The back.*
Erongootoo,	*The lips.*
Elelo,	*The tongue.*
Edainga,	*The thigh.*
Eraimoo,	*The hips.*
Evae, veene,	*The arm-pit.*
Too,	*The finger.*
Vakka, vakka,	*The ſide.*
Hekaite,	*The belly.*
Tareenga,	*The ear.*
Horo,	*To wipe.*
Kouta,	*Beating with two ſticks.*
Fangoo, fangoo,	*A flute.*
Motoo,	*To break.*
Koooma,	*Burnt circular marks.*
Taffa,	*Raiſed marks burnt.*

Friendly Iſles.	Engliſh.
Kowy,	*The cheeks.*
Koomoo koomoo,	*The beard.*
Peeto,	*The navel.*
Eoo,	*The nipple.*
Etarre,	*To cough.*
Hengatoo,	*Cloth.*
Efangoo	*To ſneeze.*
Eanoo,	*To ſpit.*
Etoogee	*To beat*, or *ſtrike.*
Etooee,	*The elbow.*
Efeelo,	*A ſmall rope*, or *thread.*
Haro, *or* halo,	*Go; begone.*
Egeea,	*The throat.*
Eky,	*To eat*, or *chew.*
Evagoo,	*To ſcratch.*
Ma matta,	*Let me look*, or *ſee.*
Egeea,	*The neck.*
Enofoa, haioo,	*A ſeat.*
Etoo,	*To riſe up.*
Mamao,	*To yawn.*
Ehapee,	*A box*, or *cheſt.*
Moe, *or* mohe,	*Sleep.*
Tangooroo,	*To ſnore.*
Ekatta,	*To laugh.*
Akka,	*To kick*, or *ſtamp.*
Feedjee,	*A fillup.*
Ekakava,	*Sweat.*
Eeoho,	*To hollow*, or *cry.*
Epooo,	*A poſt*, or *ſtaunchion.*
Etolle,	*A hatchet.*
Maalava,	*To breathe.*
Haila,	*To pant.*
Oooo,	*To bite.*
Taffa,	*To cut.*
Moevae,	*The heel.*
Eeegoo	*The tail of a dog.*

Friendly Iſles.	Engliſh.
Mapoo,	*To whiſtle.*
Aipa,	*A fiſhing-hook.*
Ainga,	*A ſort of paint.*
Evaika,	*A rail.*
Kooroo kooroo,	*A green dove.*
Ekoopamea, cheelee,	*A net.*
Efooo,	*A gimlet*, or *ſhark's tooth, uſed for that purpoſe.*
Aiee,	*A fan.*
Emaimeea, *or* meemeea,	*A reed*, or *ſmall organ.*
Eneeoo,	*A cocoa-nut.*
Eoono,	*Tortoiſe-ſhell.*
Enoo,	*A belt.*
Afooneema,	*The palm of the hand.*
Moemoeea,	*A ceremony of putting the foot of one on the head, and turning the hand ſeveral times*, &c.
Pooa, tareenga.	*A ſort of plantains.*
Kahoo hoonga,	*An arrow*, or *reed.*
Atoe farre.	*The roof of a houſe.*
Etovee,	*A club.*
Emamma,	*A ring.*
Eao,	*A hat.*
Tehou,	*A hundred.*
Keeroo,	*A thouſand.*
Laoo varee,	*Ten thouſand.*
Laoo noa,	*A hundred thouſand*, or *the greateſt number they can reckon.*
Poooree,	*Night; darkneſs.*
Maheena,	*A month.*
Fukkatanne,	*To ſit croſs-legged.*

Kaffa,

Friendly Iſles.	Engliſh.
Kaffa,	*A rope*, or *cord of cocoa-nut core.*
Heegee,	*To lift up.*
Togoo,	*To ſet down.*
Fetooa, tagee,	*To tie.*
Vevaite,	*To untie.*
Tollo tolla,	*Cocoa-nut ſkin.*
Eooma,	*The ſhoulder.*
Fooo,	*A nail* (of iron).
Atoo,	*To give.*
Epallo,	*A rat.*
Elafo,	*To throw away.*
Haaile,	*To go.*
Haaile atoo,	*To go away.*
Haaile my,	*To come.*
Elooa,	*To puke.*
Matangee,	*Wind.*
Mamma, *or* mamma, reeva,	*Light.*
Tahee,	*The ſea.*
Paho paho,	*To paddle.*
Hakaoo, *or* toree,	*Wood; a tree.*
Ehoreeoo,	*To ſcoop water out of a boat.*
Booloo booloo,	*A ſail.*
Fanna, *or* fanna tooeeoroongo,	*A maſt.*
Toula,	*A hook.*
Tamadje,	*A child.*
Tangee,	*To weep.*
Elango,	*A fly.*
Haingoo, toolaiee,	*A tropic-bird.*
Epalla,	*A bird's tail.*
Kapukou,	*A wing.*
Hepoona,	*To fly.*

Friendly Iſles.	Engliſh.
Togotto,	*To lie down.*
Feenakka,	*A bird-cage.*
Eallo,	*The rolling of a ſhip.*
Etooee,	*A needle.*
Epeepeege,	*A girl that is a maid.*
Efonno,	*A turtle.*
Maia,	*A thing.*
Mahee maia,	*Give me ſomething.*
Koeea,	*Yes, it is.*
Geelee,	*A file.*
Owo,	*Wait a little.*
Temadoo,	*Shall I come?*
Kaee, *or* Eekaee,	*No.*
Kalae,	*A blue coot.*
Oloonga,	*A ſtool.*
Takkabou,	*A coarſe mat to ſleep upon.*
Kakulla,	*A ſweet ſmell, ſweet ſmelled.*
Namooa,	*To ſmell; ſmell it.*
Koe,	*It is; as*, Koe maa, *it is food*; Koe maiee, *it is fruitful.*
Koatoooo,	*A king fiſher.*
Mogo,	*A lizard.*
Toutou,	*A cord.*
Matte laiva,	*Dead.*
Moeha,	*More.*
Veenaga,	*Fine, charming, wonderful.*
Tougge my,	*Bring it here.*
Ai, *(long)* angrily,	*No.*
Tamma,	*Boy, man, friend, calling to one.*

Friendly Iſles.	Engliſh.
Eeekoou,	*Here am I; anſwering one who calls.*
Haloo,	*Go; to go.*
Hengalo,	*At a diſtance, a great way off.*
Eafee, *or* Eafoi,	*Hire.*
Yehaeea *(inquiſitively)*,	*What is that?*
Kohaee koa, *or* Kowykoa,	*What is your name?*
Kovee, *or* Kovee-eea,	*Bad.*
Bongee, bongee,	*To-morrow.*
Peepee,	*A pair of ſciſſars.*
Chenna,	*Friend, I ſay; hark ye.*
Geelee, *or* geeree,	*The ſkin.*
Etchee,	*To peel a cocoa-nut.*
Taha pai,	*One thing, as a day, &c.*
Totto,	*Blood.*
Roatoo,	*Shall I go.*
Whakae,	*Look, ſee.*
Whakae my,	*Let me ſee it.*
Arooweevo,	*Below; to let down a rope, or to go down over the ſhip's ſide to trade.*
Aingy,	*Large clams or cockles.*
Eeegee,	*A chief.*
Eatooa,	*God.*
A bo,	*To-night, at night.*
Any,	*Preſently, by and by.*
Elangee,	*The ſky.*
Elaa,	*The ſun.*

Friendly Iſles.	Engliſh.
Ao,	*Clouds.*
Jeela,	*A canoe's yard.*
Laa,	*A ſail.*
Falle wakaeea,	*The hut in a large canoe.*
Faee,	*To play.*
Tallafoo,	*The fire-place in a large boat.*
Goolee,	*A ſort of windlaſs, or belaying place for the rope of their ſail.*
Tataa,	*A ſcoop for bailing out a boat.*
Taia,	*White.*
Oolee,	*Black.*
Goola,	*Red.*
Ohooafee,	*Smoke.*
Geeai,	*A cloſe kind of mat.*
Fofooa,	*Pimples.*
Maaloonga,	*High, mountainous.*
Mai,	*Motions with the hands in dancing.*
Touvaa,	*A cap or bonnet they wear to ſhade them from the ſun.*
Majeela,	*A large bamboo fiſhing-rod.*
Pai,	*A thing.*
Mamahee,	*Pain.*
Echee, *or* Eeke,	*Small, little.*
Cheeatta,	*A looking-glaſs.*
Tangameeme,	*A bladder.*
Goobainga,	*A fiſhing-net.*
Elillo,	*Below, underneath.*

Friendly Isles.	English.
Faee,	*To shave.*
Motooa,	*A parent.*
Moumy,	*To paddle*, or *row.*
Avy, ava, *or* govy,	*A harbour*, or *anchoring-place.*
Po, taha, pai,	*In one day.*
Ebaika,	*A large bat.*
Kakaa,	*A parrot.*
Tooge,	*Marks on the cheek, made by beating.*
Nono,	*To hide a thing.*
Fonooa, *or* Kaeenga,	*Land.*
Beeoo,	*A palm which bears clusters of very small nuts.*
Haoomoo,	*A large blunt sort of plantains.*
Goolo,	*A globular earthen pot*, or *vessel.*
Manga, mangatei,	*A large blue star-fish.*
Hainga,	*A parroquet.*
Maagonna	*Full, satisfied with eating.*
Maheena,	*The moon.*
Teeleeamoo,	*A secret.*
Fonooa bou,	*A land of plenty.*
Oobai,	*A song.*
Foolehaioo,	*The green wattle bird.*
Pailoo,	*A spoon.*
Kulle, velaive,	*A large white spider, with brown and white legs.*
Fageeta,	*A ceremony of kissing, &c. on a new acquaintance.*

Friendly Isles.	English.
Goomaa,	*A rat.*
Agoota, oomoo,	*To put a thing in an oven.*
Oomoo,	*An oven.*
Eadda,	*A path.*
Mattabaa,	*A door.*
Togga,	*A large stick used as a bar behind the door.*
Koheeabo,	*The paper mulberry plant.*
Faa,	*Palm, called Pandanus.*
Tangata, *or* tangatta,	*A man.*
Taheina,	*A child.*
Onne, onne,	*White sand.*
Pai,	*Ripe, old.*
Ea,	*A fence made of bamboo, &c.*
Toee,	*The wood which they make their canoes of.*
Mafaee,	*Wasps nests built in the pod of a plant.*
Kappe,	*A large cylindrical edible root.*
Ongo, ongo,	*A small palm growing to the height of eight feet.*
Gooholla,	*It is gone*, or *flown.*
Mai, kawaia,	*To take away a thing.*
Mai, Evaheeoo,	*To let a thing remain.*
Kaeenga,	*Land, or properly the shore.*
Fyatooka,	*A burying-place.*
Woee,	*Admiration.*
Koeee,	*A fan.*

Friendly Iſles.	Engliſh.
Waggee hou,	*Let it alone.*
Bai,	*Great.*
Laika, laika,	*Good.*
Ooo,	*A cray-fiſh.*
Feengafee,	*A black and white mat.*
Aingatooeea,	*Stained red ruſhes, which they wear round the waiſt.*
An, any,	*A little while ago.*
Hengatoo,	*Glazed cloth which they wear.*
Falla,	*A thick ſtrong mat.*
Mahagee,	*A ſort of ulcer, that leaves large laced ſcars.*
Akkaree,	*A ſtool to lay the head on when aſleep.*
Naffa,	*A large cylindrical piece of wood, hollowed with a ſlit, which ſerves as a drum.*
Toa,	*A ſpear.*
Etanno,	*To bury under ground.*
Afai,	*When.*
Otoogoo,	*Finiſhed.*
Maree, *or* mareeai,	*Well done; an acclamation.*
Fafa,	*To carry one on the back.*
Mamao,	*A great way; diſtant.*
Meedje, meedje,	*To drink out of a cocoa-nut.*
Matta,	*The face.*
Ty, *or* Etae,	*Excrement.*

Friendly Iſles.	Engliſh.
Faitanoo,	*A ſort of pepper-tree, the juice of which is very acrid.*
Naſee, nafee,	*A fine white ſort of mat.*
Abee,	*A houſe to ſleep in.*
Touaa,	*A ſquare bonnet.*
Fukke, fety,	*To give a thing* gratis, or *for friendſhip's ſake.*
Tooa, *or* Tooaeea,	*A ſervant*, or *perſon of inferior rank.*
Fukkatooa,	*A challenging motion, made by ſtriking the hand on the bend of the oppoſite arm.*
Kaeehya, *or* kaeehaa,	*A thief.*
Fooloo,	*A quill.*
Moojeekakka,	*A baſket made of cocoa-nut core, and white beads.*
Mahanga,	*A brother.*
Maeele,	*An odoriferous ſhrub, planted near the Fya-tooka.*
Fofolla,	*To unfold a piece of cloth.*
Kotjee,	*None.*
Taboone,	*To cloſe*, or *ſhut*; *a partition or ſkreen.*
Too,	*To draw back a curtain, or ſkreen.*
Ava,	*A window; hole.*
Fonooa, foohoo,	*A land of warriors.*

Taboo,

Friendly Iſles.	Engliſh.
Taboo,	*Not to touch a thing.*
Goomoo, goomoo,	*A ſpecies of lichen, that grows plentifully on ſome trees.*
Laiva,	*For good and all; certainly.*
Bagooee,	*A prickly ſtar-fiſh.*
Bedjeeloa,	*A crab, with black claws.*
Fae,	*A ſiſter.*
Makka fatoo,	*Coral rock.*
Gailee, gailee,	*Dirt.*
Maa,	*Clean.*
Ma, tagge tagge,	*Let me look at it.*
Konna,	*Poiſon.*
Fekaee, *or* ſmatte, fekaee,	*Hunger.*
Matte, fee aeenoo,	*Thirſt.*
Aieenoo,	*To drink.*
Awhainne,	*Near at hand.*
Monoo,	*An expreſſion of thanks.*
Mattahoa,	*Very good.*
Toooa,	*Both; we; both of us.*
Fooa, *repeated*,	*A great number.*
Boola,	*Small white ſhells.*
Anoo, anoo,	*To ſwim.*
Anga,	*A man.*
Haile,	*A knife.*
Haile, fofoo,	*A knife that ſhuts.*
Adoo,	*Give it; to give.*
Geehea,	*Which*, or *what.*
Tohagge,	*Let me look at*, or *ſee it.*
Namoogoo,	*A ſtink*, or *bad ſmell.*
Namoo, kakulla,	*A ſweet ſmell.*
Boobooa, tahee,	*Salt.*

Friendly Iſles.	Engliſh.
Meeme,	*Urine.*
Owo, owo, owo,	*No, no, no.*
Fohee,	*To peel a plantain.*
Ajeeneu,	*A veſſel to put drink in.*
Tangee, fe toogee,	*Striking the cheeks on the death of their relations.*
Mamaha,	*Coral rock under water.*
Oohee,	*A ſpecies of dioſma.*
Mawhaha,	*An excellent root like a potatoe.*
Baa,	*A crackling noiſe; to crack*, or *ſnap.*
Boogo,	*The largeſt ſort of tree in the iſlands.*
Taifo,	*A mullet.*
Amou,	*Whole; ſound; true; valid.*
Faigeeaika,	*Iambos.*
Kakou,	*A ſhoal*, or *reef, on which the ſea breaks.*
Shainga *(in the language of Feejee)*,	*No; there is none.*
Fangoo,	*A ſmall calibaſh ſhell.*
Oore, oore,	*Black.*
Looloo,	*An owl.*
Murroo,	*Soft.*
Faifaika,	*Hard.*
Feengotta,	*A ſort of ſhell.*
Wouainee,	*I am here*; i. e. *when called upon.*
Mahagge, fatoo,	*A dropſy.*
Goee enee,	*Near at hand.*
Fukka, ma fooa,	*An arbour in which they catch pigeons, &c.*

Fatooree,

Friendly Iſles.	Engliſh.
Fatooree,	*Thunder.*
A faa,	*A ſtorm; lightning.*
Toufarre,	*A beſom.*
Tongo,	*A wood, of which bows are made.*
Ooha,	*Rain.*
Tooboo,	*To grow.*
Tawagge, totto,	*The red-tailed tropic-bird.*
Kadjee,	*There is no more*; or *none.*
Fanna, fanna,	*To waſh the hands before meals.*
Mooonga,	*Mountains*; *a mountain.*
Keeneeo,	*Low land.*
Laoo allee,	*A great many*; *an endleſs number.*
Ogookaee,	*No*; *there is none.*
Laia, *or* koelaia,	*Speech*; *words.*
Kaho,	*An arrrow.*
Aieeboo,	*A veſſel*, or *diſh.*
Tooee,	*A club.*
Feila,	*To pull a rope.*
Eevee, aai,	*A cheer, in pulling a rope.*
Feilaa too,	*A word given by one, on pulling a rope, and the reſt repeat* Woa, *as a reſponſe.*
Engago,	*Fat*, or *lard of a hog.*
Kanno, matte,	*The lean part of meat.*
Kofooa,	*A kidney.*
Kollofeea,	*The name of the volcano on Tofooa.*
Moggocheea,	*Cold.*

Friendly Iſles.	Engliſh.
Hooa,	*The going about*, or *tacking of a ſhip.*
Ongonna,	*To underſtand.*
Kaee ongonna,	*I do not underſtand you.*
Mafanna,	*Warm.*
Anapo,	*Laſt night.*
Fakkahooa,	*The Southerly wind*; or *a foul wind.*
Looloo,	*To roll, as a ſhip.*
Matangee,	*The wind.*
Matangee anga, *or* matangee leeoo,	*The Eaſt and North wind, or a fair wind.*
Amooee, *or* tamooree,	*From behind.*
Amooa, *or* tamooa,	*From before.*
Ahaa, *or* koehaa,	*For what reaſon?*
Mohe fai,	*Where ſhall I ſleep?*
Koo mafoore,	*To lie along*, or *yield, as a ſhip cloſe hauled.*
Palla,	*Rotten.*
Elooa,	*A hole.*
Molle, *or* molle molle,	*Smooth.*
Keeai,	*A plant they make mats of*; *the cultivated Pandanus.*
Tongo laiee,	*Mangrove.*
Reemoo,	*Seaweed.*
Fety,	*A term of friendſhip.*
Jeejee,	*Eſculent dracæna.*
Taboo laia,	*Don't ſpeak*; *hold your tongue.*
Toonoa,	*Dreſſed, cooked.*
Tohke,	*A meaſure.*
Toohagge,	*Let me ſee it.*
Taheine,	*A young girl*; *a daughter.*

Haine,

Friendly Iſles.	Engliſh.
Haine,	*Here.*
Baiahou,	*Swell of the ſea.*
Maea,	*A rope.*
Otta,	*Raw; as raw meat.*
Moho,	*Meat well dreſſed.*
Maoo lillo,	*Low land.*
Moanna,	*Deep water; ſea.*
Kae haia,	*Which is it you want?*
Vava tahee,	*Red coral.*
Feefy,	*A ſpecies of mimoſa.*
Fatoo,	*The belly.*
Mee mee,	*To ſuck bones.*
Meedje meedje,	*To ſuck as a child.*
Ooree,	*A rudder.*
Tainga,	*A ſeed of a plant.*
Oolel teffe,	*Inciſions in the foreſkin, which contracting prevent its covering the glans.*
Vefoo,	*To hide a thing.*
Laifa,	*A ſilver fiſh.*
Heenaheena	*White; yellow.*
Feeoo,	*Acrid; bitter.*
Goomo,	*To look for a thing that is loſt.*
Eeta,	*Angry.*
Aneafee,	*Yeſterday.*
Gefai,	*Unknown; ſtrange; as a ſtrange man.*
Fono,	*To eat.*
Kailee tokee,	*A Panama-ſhell.*
Toffe,	*A ſort of hammer oyſter.*
Toogoo,	*Let it lie,* or *remain.*

Friendly Iſles.	Engliſh.
Koehaa, hono, hengoa,	*What is the name of it?*
Loee,	*To underſtand.*
Booga,	*To hold faſt.*
Loloa,	*Long.*
Kotjee,	*To cut.*
Fatjee,	*To break.*
Fohenna,	*A ſon; a brother.*
Matee,	*A fig-tree.*
Lohee,	*A lie.*
Mato,	*Steep; high.*
Patoo,	*A ſtroke; to ſtrike.*
Hooho,	*The breaſts.*
Momoggo,	*Cold.*
Saiouhai,	*Admiration.*
Noo,	*Mine; of me.*
Valla,	*A piece of cloth worn round the waiſt.*
Doooyoo, a matoo, eeoee,	*A ſong in favour of a victor.*
Mulloo,	*Serene; ſettled; ſmooth.*
Vaitte,	*To untie a thing.*
Moheefo,	*Come down below.*
Fetagee; malowhee,	*To fight.*
Tao,	*A ſpear.*
Eenee,	*Now; immediately.*
Mamanna; au manna manna,	*Engaged; contracted to.*
Fukka, booakka,	*An epithet of abuſe; contempt.*
Aloalo,	*To fan,* or *cool.*
Tammaha,	*Certain great chiefs.*
Tamolao,	*Chief.*
Mahae,	*A torn hole.*

Friendly Iſles.	Engliſh.
Goefai,	*What is.*
Laoo,	*To count*, or *reckon.*
Manakko,	*To give.*
Fooo,	*New*; *lately made.*
Modooa,	*Old*; *worn.*
Maa,	*A ſour plantain, by being put under ground.*
Kaifoo,	*A browniſh yellow.*
Eafee,	*To play on the flute.*
Mou afai,	*When do you go?*
Afaia,	*How many?*
Cheefa,	*A pearl oyſter.*
Gooe, goee,	*A ſaw ſhell.*
Fotoohoa,	*A rock oyſter.*
Ogoo,	*Of me*; *belonging to me.*
Lelange,	*To make.*
Behange,	*Let me ſee it.*
Foo,	*To box.*
Heeva,	*A ſong, with many women ſinging different keys.*
Ooloo pokko,	*The head.*
Koukou,	*To bathe.*
Mabba,	*A three-kernelled nut.*
Eelo,	*To know.*
Fotte, fotta,	*To ſqueeze gently with the hands.*
Fangootooa,	*Wreſtling.*
Momoho,	*Ripe.*
Koffe,	*Bamboo which they beat with on the ground.*
Alla,	*I ſay.*
Waila,	*Hot.*

Friendly Iſles.	Engliſh.
Pango,	*Bad.*
Orlongaa,	*Thread of which they make their nets*, or *the plant.*
Monee,	*Truth.*
Anga,	*A ſhark.*
Laffa,	*Ringworm.*
Fooa,	*Fruit*; *flower.*
Kokka,	*A tree they ſtain their cloth brown with*, i. e. *the bark.*
Moooee,	*Alive*; *life*; *ſoul*; *God*; or *divine ſpirit.*
Tooo,	*A tree, with the berries of which they ſtain their cloth.*
Ogoohaika,	*Who ſhall I give this to? Who ſhall I help?*
Maha,	*Finiſhed*; *empty.*
Pagge,	*A little paddle they exerciſe with.*
Faio,	*Small branched coral.*
Cheeagge,	*To throw a thing away.*
Faiee tamma,	*Pregnancy.*
Lalanga,	*To make.*
Vao,	*A wild uncultivated country.*
Neeoo goola,	*Cabbage-tree.*
Routte,	*Hibiſcus*; *roſa ſinenſis.*
Foa,	*A cuſtom of beating the head with a tooth till it bleeds.*

Cheelee

Friendly Iſles.	Engliſh.
Cheelee neeſo,	*A cuſtom of beating the teeth on the ſame occaſion.*
Hogga tainga,	*A cuſtom of thruſting a ſpear into their thighs; alſo a mourning ceremony.*
Toofatao,	*Thruſting a ſpear into the ſides under the arm-pits on theſe occaſions.*
Tooengootoo,	*Doing the ſame through the cheeks into the mouth.*
Kafoo,	*The garment they commonly wear.*
Offa,	*A term of friendſhip*; as,
Taio offa,	*My friend, I am glad to ſee you.*
Toofa,	*To divide*, or *ſhare out food.*

Friendly Iſles.	Engliſh.
Maeneene,	*To tickle.*
Hailulla,	*Sarcoſma.*
Hooo,	*A wooden inſtrument with which they clear away graſs from their fences.*
Aho,	*The dawn*, or *day-break.*
Gooaa,	*Who is it?*
Avo,	*To go*, or *take away.*
Valle,	*Mad.*
Lelaiee a bee kovee,	*Is it good*, or *bad?*
Taboonee,	*To ſhut*, or *cloſe.*
Taae,	*To beat*, or *ſtrike.*
Ahae,	*Who*, or *where.*
Mamaa,	*Light.*
Mamaffa,	*Heavy.*
Faike,	*A cuttle-fiſh.*
Vai veegoo,	*Wet; moiſt.*

APPENDIX, N° IV.

VOCABULARY of the LANGUAGE of NOOTKA, or KING GEORGE's SOUND, April, 1778.

Nootka.	Engliſh.
Opulſzthl,	*The ſun.*
Onulſzthl,	*The moon.*
Nas, *or* eenaeehl nas,	*The ſky.*
Noohchai,	*A mountain*, or *hill.*
Mookſee,	*Rocks*, or *the ſhore.*
Tanaſs, *or* tanas,	*A man.*
Oonook,	*A ſong.*
Eeneek, *or* eleek,	*Fire.*
Nuhchee, *or* nook-chee,	*The land; a country.*
Koaſſama,	*The ground.*
Mahtai,	*A houſe.*
Neit, *or* neet,	*A candle*, or *lamp-light.*
Neetopok,	*The ſmoke of a lamp.*
Taſſyai,	*A door.*
Ai, *and* aio,	*Yes.*
Wook, *or* Wik,	*No.*
Wik ait,	*None, not any.*
Macook,	*To barter.*
Kaeeemai, *or* kyomai,	*Give me ſome more for it.*
Kootche, *or* kotche,	*To paddle.*
Aook, *or* chiamis,	*To eat, to chew.*
Topalſzthl, *or* too-pilſzthl,	*The ſea.*
Oowhabbe,	*A paddle.*
Shapats, *or* ſhapitz, *or* chapas,	*A canoe.*
Tawailuck,	*White bugle beads.*
Seekemaile,	*Iron*, or *metal of any ſort.*
Ahkoo, *or* ahko,	*This.*
Kaa, *or* kaa chelle,	*Give it me, let me look at it*, or *examine it.*
Wook hak,	*Will he not do it?*
Ma, *or* maa,	*Take it.*
Chakeuk,	*A hatchet*, or *hacking tool.*
Eetche, *or* abeeſh,	*Diſpleaſure.*
Haoome, *or* haooma,	*Food.*
Takho,	*Bad. This iron is bad*, takho ſeekemaile.
Chelle,	*I, me.*

Kaeeo,

Nootka.	Engliſh.
Kaeeo,	*Broken.*
Alle, *or* alla,	(Speaking to one) *Friend; hark ye.*
Klao appe, *or* klao,	*Keep it; I'll not have it.*
Aſko,	*Long*, or *large.*
Iakooeſhmaiſh,	*Clothing in general.*
Tahquoe, *or* toohquoe,	*A metal button*, or *earring.*
Wae,	(Calling to one, perhaps) *you!*
Weekeetateeſh,	*Sparkling ſand, which they ſprinkle on their faces.*
Chauk,	*Water.*
Pacheetl, *or* pachatl,	*To give; give me.*
Haweelſth, *or* hawalth,	*Friendſhip, friend.*
Kleeſeetl,	*To paint, or mark with a pencil.*
Abeetſzle,	*To go away*, or *depart.*
Sheeſookto,	*To remain*, or *abide.*
Seeaik,	*A ſtone weapon, with a ſquare point.*
Suhyaik,	*A ſpear, pointed with bone.*
Taak,	*The wood of the depending pine.*
Lukſheet, *or* lukſheetl,	*To drink.*
Soochis,	*A tree, a wood.*
Haieeaipt,	*A broad leaf, ſhrub*, or *underwood.*
Tohumbeet,	*Variegated pine; ſilver pine.*

Nootka.	Engliſh.
Atlieu,	*The depending pine*, or *cypreſs.*
Koeeklipt,	*The Canadian pine.*
Cho,	*Go.*
Sateu,	*A pine-top.*
Kleeteenek,	*The little cloak that they wear.*
Kleethak,	*A bear's ſkin.*
Klochimme	*Muſcles.*
Ohkullik,	*A wooden box they hold things in.*
H'ſlaiakaſl, *or* ſlaikalſzth,	*Coarſe mats of bark.*
Eeſee,	*An inſtrument of bone to beat bark.*
Chapitz koole,	*The model of a canoe.*
Klapatuketeel,	*A bag made of mat.*
Tahmis,	*To ſpit; ſpittle.*
Waſukſheet,	*To cough.*
Poop,	*Common moſs.*
Okumha,	*The wind.*
Chutzquabeelſl,	*A bag made of ſeal ſkin.*
Konneeemis,	*A kind of ſea weed.*
Quaookl, *or* tookpeetl,	*To ſit down.*
Klukeeſzthl, *or* quoeelſzthl,	*To riſe up.*
Tſookeeats,	*To walk.*
Kummutchchutl,	*To run.*
Klutſklaee,	*To ſtrike*, or *beat.*
Teeſhcheetl,	*To throw a ſtone.*
Teelſzthtee,	*To rub*, or *ſharpen metal.*

Tſook,

Nootka.	Engliſh.
Tſook,	*To cleave*, or *ſtrike hard.*
Mahkatte,	*A ſmall liliaceous root which they eat.*
Eumahtame,	*Fur of a ſea-otter.*
Cheemaine,	*Their largeſt fiſhing-books.*
Mooſtatte,	*A bow.*
Kahſheetl,	*Dead.*
Kleeſhſheetl,	*To ſhoot with a bow.*
Tſeehatte,	*An arrow.*
Katſhak,	*A flaxen garment, worn as their common dreſs.*
Heſhcheene,	*A plain* Venus *ſhell.*
Koohminne,	*A bag rattle.*
Akeeuk,	*A plain bone point for ſtriking ſeals with.*
Kaheita,	*A barbed bone point for ditto.*
Cheetakulheiwha,	*Bracelets of white bugle beads.*
Mittemulſzſth,	*Thongs of ſkin worn about the wriſt and neck.*
Iaiopox,	*Pieces of copper worn in the ear.*
Neeſkſheetl,	*To ſneeze.*
Suchkas,	*A comb.*
Seehl,	*Small feathers which they ſtrew on their heads.*
Wamuhte,	*Twiſted thongs and ſinews, worn about their ankles.*

Nootka.	Engliſh.
Kutſeeoataia,	*Veins under the ſkin.*
Tookquuk,	*The ſkin.*
Muſzthſle,	*Pain.*
Waeetch,	*To ſleep.*
Sikſaimaha,	*To breathe*, or *pant.*
Tuhſheetl,	*To weep.*
Matſkoot,	*A fly.*
Matook,	*To fly.*
Kooees, *or* quoees,	*Snow*, or *hail.*
Aopk,	*To whiſtle.*
Aſheeaikſheetl,	*To yawn.*
Elſthltleek,	*An inſtrument of two ſticks ſtanding from each other with barbs.*
Cheeeeakis,	*A ſcar of a wound.*
Tchoo,	*Throw it down*, or *to me.*
Cheetkoohekai, *or* Cheetkoaik,	*A wooden inſtrument with many bone teeth, to catch ſmall fiſh with.*
Kaenne, *or* Koenai,	*A crow, a bird.*
Keeſapa,	*A fiſh; a white bream.*
Klaamoo,	*A bream ſtriped with blue and gold colours.*
Taaweeſh, *or* Tſuſkeeah,	*A ſtone weapon*, or *tomahawk, with a wooden handle.*
Kamaiſthlik,	*A kind of ſnare, to catch fiſh or other animals with.*
Klahma,	*Wing feathers of a red bird.*

Seetſaennuk,

Nootka.	Engliſh.
Seetſaennuk,	*Anger; ſcolding.*
Heeeai, *or* Heeeee,	*A brown ſtreaked ſnake.*
Klapiſſime,	*A racoon.*
Owatinne,	*A white-headed eagle.*
Kluhmiſs,	*Train-oil; a bladder filled with it.*
Oukkooma,	*Large carved wooden faces.*
Kotyook, *or* hotyok,	*A knife.*
See eema,	*A fiſhing-net.*
Weena,	*A ſtranger.*
Quahmiſs,	*Fiſh roe ſtrewed upon pine-branches and ſea-weed.*
Kaatl,	*Give me.*
Hookſquaboolſthl,	*A whale harpoon and rope.*
Komook,	*Chimæra monſtroſa.*
Quotluk, *or* quot-lukac,	*A ſea-otter's ſkin.*
Maaſenulſthl,	*An oblong wooden weapon, two feet long.*
Hokooma,	*A wooden maſk of the human face.*
Tooquacumilſthl,	*A ſeal-ſkin.*
Cha,	*Let me ſee it.*
Sooma,	*A kind of haddock, of a reddiſh brown colour.*
Aeea,	*A ſardine.*
Koeetſak,	*A wolf-ſkin dreſs.*
Keepſleetokſzl,	*A woollen garment.*
Iſſeu,	*Pine-bark.*

Nootka.	Engliſh.
Wanſhee,	*Wild cat ſkin* (lynx brunneus).
Chaſtimmetz,	*A common, and alſo pine martin.*
Ookoomillſzthl,	*A little, round, wooden cup.*
Kooomitz,	*A human ſkull.*
Keehlwahmoot,	*A ſkin bladder uſed in fiſhing.*
Tſeeapoox,	*A conic cap made of mat, worn on the head.*
Summeto,	*A ſquirrel; they alſo called a rat by this name.*
Maalſzthl,	*A deer's horn.*
Jakops,	*A man*, or *male.*
Kolſheetl, *or* Kolſheat,	*To ſup with a ſpoon.*
Achatla, *or* Achaklak,	*What is your name?*
Achatlaha,	*What is his name?*
Akaſſheha, *or* akaſſche,	*What is the name of that?*
Haiſmuſſik,	*A wooden ſabre.*
Maeetſalulſthl,	*A bone weapon, like the* Patoo.
Kookelixo,	*A fiſh fin; the hand.*
Natcha,	*A fiſh tail.*
Klihkleek,	*The hoof of an animal.*
Klaklaſm,	*A bracelet.*
Ko,	*An article, to give ſtrength of expreſſion to another word.*
Nahei, *or* naheis,	*Friendſhip.*

Teelſthoop,

Nootka.	Engliſh.
Teelſthoop,	*A large cuttle-fiſh.*
Pachas,	*He gave it me.*
Quaeeaitſaak,	*A yellow,* or *red fox.*
Atchakoe,	*A limpet.*
Aheita,	*A ſweet fern-root they eat.*
Kiſhkilltup,	*The ſtrawberry plant.*
Akhmupt,	*A narrow graſs that grows on the rocks.*
Klaiwahmiſs,	*A cloud.*
Mollſthapait,	*A feather.*
Taeetcha,	*Full, ſatisfied with eating.*
Kaaitz,	*A necklace of ſmall* volute *ſhells.*
Tahooquoſſim,	*A carved human head of wood, decorated with hair.*
Moowatche,	*A carved wooden vizor, like the head of a Quebrentahueſſos.*
Mamat,	*A black linnet, with a white bill,*
Klaokotl,	*Give me ſomething.*
Pallſzthpatl,	*Glimmer (ſheet).*
Eineetl,	*The name they apply to a goat; probably of a deer.*
Seeta,	*The tail of an animal.*
Seehſheetl,	*To kill.*
Ooolſzth,	*A ſandpiper.*
Saeemitz,	*Chequered ſtraw baſkets.*
Chookwak,	*To go up,* or *away.*

Nootka.	Engliſh.
Kloofaſht,	*Smoked herrings.*
Keetſma,	*Puncturation.*
Mikeellzyth,	*To faſten,* or *tie a thing.*
Cheeteeakamilzſth,	*White beads.*
Kakkumipt,	*A ſea weed,* or *graſs, on which they ſtrew fiſh roe.*
Eiſſuk,	*A ſort of leek*; allium triquetrum.
Kutſkuſhilzſth,	*To tear a thing.*
Mitzſleo,	*A knot*
Mamakeeo,	*To tie a knot.*
Klukſilzſth,	*To looſen,* or *untie.*
Klakaikom,	*The leaf of a plant.*
Saſinne, *or* ſaſin,	*A humming-bird.*
Koohquoppa,	*A granulated lily-root they eat.*
Seeweebt,	*Alder-tree.*
Kaweebt,	*Raſberry-buſh.*
Kleehſeep,	*The flower of a plant.*
Klumma,	*Large wooden images placed at one end of their houſes.*
Aiahtoop, *or* aiahtoopſh.	*A porpoiſe.*
Toſhko,	*A ſmall brown ſpotted cod.*
Aſzlimupt, *or* ulſzthimipt,	*Flaxen ſtuff, of which they make their garments.*
Wakaſh,	*An expreſſion of approbation,* or *friendſhip.*
Kullekeea,	*Troughs out of which they eat.*

Kaots,

Nootka.	Engliſh.
Kaots,	*A twig baſket.*
Sllook,	*The roof of a houſe; boards.*
Eilſzthmukt,	*Nettles.*
Koeeklaſs,	*A wooden ſtage,* or *frame, on which the fiſh roe is dried.*
Matlieu,	*A withe of bark for faſtening planks.*
Nahaſs,	*A circular hole that ſerves as a window.*
Neetſoanimme,	*Large planks, of which their houſes are built.*
Chaipma,	*Straw.*
Haquanuk,	*A cheſt,* or *large box.*
Chahkots,	*A ſquare wooden bucket, to hold water.*
Chahquanna,	*A ſquare wooden drinking cup.*
Klennut,	*A wooden wedge.*
Kolkolſainum,	*A large cheſt.*
Klieutſunnim,	*A board to kneel on when they paddle.*
Tſeelſzthook,	*A frame of ſquare poles.*
Aminulſzth,	*A fiſh.*
Natchkoa *and* Matſeeta,	*The particular names of two of the monſtrous images called Klumma.*
Houa,	*To go that way.*
Achichil,	*What does he ſay?*
Aeek,	*The oval part of a whale dart.*
Aptſheetl,	*To ſteal.*
Quoeeup,	*To break.*
Uhſhſapai,	*To pull.*
Tſeehka,	*A general ſong.*
Apte, *or* appe,	*You.*
Kai,	*Thanks.*
Kotl,	*Me; I.*
Punihpunih,	*A black beating ſtone.*
Nootka,	*The name of the bay or ſound.*
Yatſeenequoppe, Kakallakeeheelook, Nololokum,	*The names of three men.*
Satſuhcheek,	*The name of a woman.*

NAMES OF DIFFERENT PARTS OF THE BODY.

Oooomitz,	*The head.*
Apſoop,	*The hair of the head.*
Uhpeukel, *or* upuppea,	*The forehead.*
Cheecheetſh,	*The teeth.*
Choop,	*The tongue.*
Kuſſee, *or* kaſſee,	*The eye.*
Neets,	*The noſe.*
Papai,	*The ear.*
Aamiſs,	*The cheek.*
Eehthlux,	*The chin.*
Apuxim,	*The beard.*
Tſeekoomitz,	*The neck.*
Seekutz,	*The throat.*
Eſlulſzth,	*The face.*

Nootka.	Engliſh.
Eethluxooth,	*The lips.*
Klooſhkooah, klah, tamai,	*The noſtrils.*
Aeetchſe,	*The eye-brow.*
Aapſo,	*The arm.*
Aapſoonilk,	*The arm-pit.*
Eneema,	*The nipple.*
Kooquainux, *or* Kooquainuxoo,	*The fingers.*
Chuſhchuh,	*Nail of the finger.*
Kleaſhklinne,	*The thighs and leg.*
Klahtimme,	*The foot.*
Aiahkomeetz,	*The thumb.*
Kopeeak,	*The fore finger.*
Taeeai,	*The middle finger.*
Oatſo, *or* akhukluc,	*The ring finger.*
Kaſleka,	*The little finger.*

APPENDIX,

APPENDIX, N° V.

VOCABULARY of the LANGUAGE of ATOOI, one of the SANDWICH ISLANDS, January, 1778.

Atooi.	Engliſh.
Tehaia,	*Where.*
Mahaia,	*Ditto.*
Aorre, *or* Aoe,	*No.*
He oho,	*The hair.*
E poo,	*The head.*
Papaiee aoo,	*The ear.*
Heraee,	*The forehead.*
Matta,	*The eye.*
Pappareenga,	*The cheek.*
Haieea,	*Fiſh.*
Eeeheu,	*The noſe.*
Oome oome,	*The beard.*
Haire,	*To go.*
Erawha,	*Tears of joy.*
Aee,	*The neck.*
Poheeve,	*The arm.*
Ooma ooma,	*The breaſt.*
Heoo,	*The nipple.*
Peeto,	*The navel.*
Hoohaa,	*The thigh.*
He, wawy,	*The leg.*
Eroui,	*Wait a little.*
Areea,	*Wait a little.*
Myao,	*Finger and toe nails.*
Eeno,	*Bad.*
Hootee, hootee,	*To pluck up*, or *out.*
Tooanna,	*A brother.*
Teina,	*A younger brother.*
Otooma heeva,	*A man's name.*
Nanna,	*Let me ſee it.*
Noho,	*To ſit.*
Hoe,	*To go.*
Hooarra,	*Sweet potatoes.*
E Taeeai,	*Calling to one.*
Waheine,	*A woman.*
Teeorre,	*To throw away a thing.*
He, aieeree,	*The ſkin.*
Ma, ty ty,	*To look at*, or *ſurvey a thing.*
Tommomy,	*Come here.*
Erooi,	*To retch, to puke.*
Too,	*Sugar-cane.*
Maa mona,	*Sweet or ſavoury food.*
Tooharre,	*To ſpit.*

Atooi.	English.
Matou,	*I*, firſt perſon ſingular.
My, ty,	*Good.*
Otaeaio, Terurotoa,	*Names of two chiefs.*
Oome,	*A great number.*
Poe,	*Taro pudding.*
Oohe,	*Yams.*
Booa,	*A hog.*
Eeneeoo,	*Cocoa-nuts.*
Ono,	*To underſtand.*
Eetee,	*To underſtand*, or *know.*
Otae,	*A man's name.*
Maonna,	*Full, ſatisfied with eating.*
Owytooehainoa,	*What is your name?*
Tanata,	*A man.*
Tangata,	*Ditto,*
Pahoo,	*A drum.*
Ehoora,	*A kind of dance.*
Maro,	*A narrow ſtripe of cloth they wear.*
Hoemy; harremy,	*To come.*
Eroemy,	*Fetch it here.*
Taooa,	*We*, firſt perſon plural.
Toura,	*A rope.*
Ooroo,	*Bread fruit.*
Etee,	*Dracæna.*
Appe,	*Virginian Arum.*
Matte,	*Dead.*
Aoonai,	*In a ſhort time; preſently.*
Paha,	*Perhaps.*

Atooi.	English.
Ai,	*Yes.*
Ateera,	*Done; at an end.*
Hevaite,	*To unfold.*
Noona.	*Above.*
Tapaia,	*To abide; to keep* or *reſtrain from going.*
Poore,	*A prayer.*
Tahouna,	*A prieſt.*
Atee,	*To fetch*, or *bring.*
Meeme,	*To make water.*
Ehaia,	*Where.*
Poota,	*A hole.*
Mao,	*That way.*
Mareira,	*This place.*
Eeo,	*There.*
Evaa,	*A canoe.*
Touroonoa,	*A man's name.*
My ty,	*Let me look.*
Aieeboo,	*A veſſel of gourd-ſhell.*
Ahewaite,	*Mullus cretaceus.*
Opoore,	*Sparus parvus punctatus*
Taee,	*The ſea.*
Evy,	*Freſh water.*
Aiva,	*A harbour.*
Eerotto,	*Within, into.*
Owyte eree,	*What is the chief's name?*
Toneoneo,	*A chief's name.*
Motoo,	*To tear*, or *break.*
Toe,	*A ſtone adze.*
Vaheeo,	*Let it lie*, or *remain.*
Haieehe,	*A barbed dart.*
Hooroo manoo,	*Birds feathers.*

Motoo,

Atooi.	Engliſh.
Motoo,	*An iſland.*
Hamoea,	*A ceremony of clapping the hands to the head, and proſtrating themſelves to the chief.*
Worero,	*Loſt; ſtole.*
Aeenoo,	*To drink.*
Tehaia, orooa,	*Where are you?*
Ou,	*I*, firſt perſon ſingular.
Eunai,	*Here; at this place.*
Pororee,	*Hunger; hungry.*
Hereema,	*A ſpecies of Sida.*
Meere, meere,	*To look at*, or *behold.*
Moa,	*A fowl.*
Manoo,	*A bird.*
Dirro,	*Below.*
Modooa, tanne,	*Father.*
Modooa, waheine,	*Mother.*
Naiwe, nawie,	*Pleaſant; agreeable.*
Hai, raa,	*The ſun.*
Hairanee,	*The ſky.*
Abobo,	*To-morrow.*
Heaho,	*A ſmall rope.*
Tereira,	*There; that way.*
Pymy,	*Throw it here.*
Ewououtte,	*Morus Papyrif.*
Moe,	*To ſleep.*
Nooe,	*Large.*
Poowha,	*To yawn.*
Ahaia,	*When; at what time.*
Wehai,	*To uncover and undo a thing.*
Tooto,	*A ſmall ſtraw rope.*
Eaha, nai,	*What is this?*

Atooi.	Engliſh.
Maeea.	*Plantains.*
Parra,	*Ripe*; as, *ripe fruit.*
Toe, toe,	*Cold.*
Matanee,	*The wind.*
Etoo,	*To riſe up.*
Hairetoo,	*To go there.*
Hoatoo,	*To give.*
Eeapo,	*Night.*
Eahoiahoi,	*Evening.*
Oora,	*Red feathers.*
Teehe,	*A preſent of cloth.*
Herairemy,	*A place on which fruit is laid as an offering to God.*
Henananoo,	*A ſquare pile of wicker work*, or *religious obeliſk.*
Hereeere,	*A burying-ground.*
Eteepappa,	*The inſide of a burying-ground.*
Harre,	*A houſe.*
Harre pahoo,	*A drum-houſe in a burying-ground.*
Heneene,	*A wall, the wall of a burying-ground.*
Heho,	*A ſtone ſet up in a burying-ground, conſecrated to the Deity.*
Eatooa,	*A god.*
Tangaroa,	*The name of the god of the place we were at.*
None,	*Morinda citrifolia.*
Hereanee,	*Small twig things in a burying-ground.*

Hemanaa,

Atooi.	Engliſh.
Hemanaa,	*A houſe,* or *hut, where they bury their dead.*
Herooanoo,	*Wooden images in a burying-houſe.*
Tooraipe,	*A kind of head-dreſs,* or *helmet on an image.*
Eahoi,	*Hire.*
Pohootoo noa,	*A cream-coloured whetſtone.*
Poota paire,	*A diſtrict at the Weſtern part of the iſle.*
Eonnotaine,	*A ſhort cloak of black and white feathers.*
Ottahoinoo,	*One article,* or *thing.*
Epappa,	*A board uſed to ſwim upon.*
Oneete,	*A kind of cloth.*
Heorro taire,	*A ſmall ſcarlet bird,* or *merops ſcarlatina.*
Taa,	*An interjection of admiration.*
Epoo,	*A bracelet of a ſingle ſhell.*
Eou,	*To ſwim.*
Tearre,	*Gardenia,* or *Cape Jaſmine.*
Heoudoo,	*A refuſal; I will not do it,* or *take that for this.*
Eeorre,	*A rat.*
Ehooo,	*A gimblet, or any inſtrument to bore with.*
Epaoo, *or* ooapa,	*There is no more; it is done,* or *finiſhed.*
Matou,	*A particular ſort of fiſh-hook.*

Atooi.	Engliſh.
Erahoi, dehoi,	*Thin;* as, *thin cloth, board, &c.*
Pattahaee, *or* he roui,	*A ſort of muſical inſtrument or rattle, ornamented with red feathers.*
Eappanai,	*A plume of feathers they wear.*
Etooo,	*The Cordia ſebeſtina.*
Whatte,	*To break.*
Oeea,	*Yes; it is ſo.*
Heoreeoree,	*A ſong.*
Paraoo,	*A wooden bowl.*
Apooava,	*A ſhallow wooden diſh they drink Ava out of.*
Etoohe, toohee,	*A particular ſort of cloth.*
Ootee, *or* otee, otee,	*To cut.*
Pappaneeheomano,	*A wooden inſtrument beſet with ſharks teeth, uſed to cut up thoſe they kill.*
Maheine,	*A wife.*
Homy,	*Give me.*
Moena, *or* moenga,	*A mat to ſleep on.*
Eeno,	*An adjunct, when they expreſs any thing good, though by itſelf, it ſignifies bad. Thus they ſay,* Erawha eeno, *good greeting, as the Otaheiteans ſay,* Ehoa eeno, or *my good friend.*

Taboo,

Atooi.	English.
Taboo, *or* tafoo,	*Any thing not to be touched, as being forbid. This is an example that ſhews the tranſmutation of the H, F, and B. into each other. Thus at Otaheite yams are* oohe, *at Tonga* oofe, *at New Caledonia* oobe; *and here* taboo *is* tafoo.
Maooa,	*I,* firſt perſon ſingular.
Heno,	*Little rods, about five feet long, with a tuft of hair on the ſmall end,*
Patae,	*Salt.*
Aheia,	*A round pearl-ſhell.*
Teanoo,	*The cold ariſing from being in the water.*
Tammata,	*The ſenſe of taſte.*
Ootoo,	*A louſe.*
Ehone,	*To ſalute by applying one noſe to the other.* Ehogge *at New Zealand, and* Ehoe *at Otaheite.*
My,	*A ſore of any kind.*
Oura, *or* ouraa,	*Cured; recovered; alive; well.*
Mango,	*A ſhark.*
Te *and* he,	*The.*

Atooi.	English.
Heneeoohe,	*An inſtrument made of a ſhark's tooth fixed on a wooden handle, to cut with.*
Eea,	*An adjunct, as at Otaheite, to give ſtrength to an expreſſion.*
Paoo roa,	*Quite done; finiſhed.*
Ee,	*At.*
Taira,	*That; the other.*
Ahoo aura,	*Red cloth.*
Henaro,	*A fly.*
Ehateinoa,	*What is the name of that?*
Heweereweere,	*An outrigger of a canoe.*
Mawaihe,	*The ſail of a canoe.*
Eheou,	*The maſt of a canoe.*
Hetoa,	*The yard of a ſail.*
Ooamou,	*Faſt; ſecure; ſound; whole.*
Hono,	*To go; to move.*
Matou,	*Fear.*
Pooa,	*An arrow.*
Teeto,	*A bow.*
Epaee,	*Wooden bowls made from the Etooo.*
Ohe,	*Bamboo.*
Henaroo,	*The ſwell of the ſea.*
Motoo,	*Land.*
Ehetoo,	*A ſtar.*
Marama,	*The moon.*
Ouameeta,	*A man's name.*

Numerals to Ten, as at Otaheite.

APPENDIX, N° VI.

TABLE to ſhew the Affinity between the LANGUAGES ſpoken at OONALASHKA and NORTON SOUND, and thoſe of the GREENLANDERS and ESQUIMAUX.

Engliſh.	*Oonalaſhka.*	*Norton Sound.*	*Greenland. From Crantz.*	*Eſquimaux.*
A man,	Chengan		Angut	
A woman,	Anagogenach			
The head,	Kameak			Ne-aw-cock
The hair,	Emelach	Nooit		New-rock
The eye-brow,	Kamlik	Kameluk		Coup-loot
The eye,	Dhac	Enga		Ehich
The noſe,	Anoſche	Ngha		Cring-yauk
The cheek,	Oolooeik	Oollooak		Ou-lu-uck-cur
The ear,	Tootooſh	Shudeka		Se-u-teck
The lip,	Adhee	Haſhlaw		
The teeth,	Agaloo			
The tongue,	Agonoc			
The beard,	Engelagoong	Oongai		
The chin,	Iſmaloch	Tamluk		Taplou
The neck,	Ooioc			Coon-e-ſoke
The breaſt,	Shimſen			Suck-ke-uck
The arm,	Toolak	Dallek		Telluck
The hand,	Kedhachoonge	Aiſhet		Alguit
The finger,	Atooch			
The nails,	Cagelch	Shetooe		
The thigh,	Cachemac	Kookdoſhac		
The leg,	Ketac	Kanaiak		Ki-naw-auk
The foot,	Ooleac	Etſcheak		E-te-ket

The

English.	*Oonalaſhka.*	*Norton Sound.*	*Greenland. From Crantz.*	*Eſquimaux.*
The ſun,	Agadac	Maje		Suck-ki-nuch
The moon,	Toogedha			Tac-cock
The ſky,	Enacac			
A cloud,	Aiengich			
The wind,	Caitchee			
The ſea,	Alaooch	Emai		Ut-koo-tuk-lea
Water,	Tangch	Mooe		
Fire,	Keiganach			E-ko-ma
Wood,	Hearach			
A knife,	Kamelac			
A houſe,	Oolac		Iglo	Tope-uck
A canoe,	Eakeac	Caiac	Kaiak	Kirock
A paddle,	Chaſec	Pangehon	Pautik	Pow
Iron,	Comeleuch	Shawik		Shaveck
A bow,	Seiech			Petick ſic
Arrows,	Agadhok			Caukjuck
Darts,	Ogwalook		Aglikak	
A fiſh-hook,	Oochtac			
No,	Net	Ena	Nag	
Yes, or *yea,*	Ah	Eh	Illiſve	
One,	Taradac	Adowjak	Attouſek	Attouſet
Two,	Alac	Aiba	Arlak	Mardluk
Three,	Canoogn	Pingaſhook	Pingajuah	Pingaſut
Four,	Sechn	Shetamik	Siſſamat	Siſſamat
Five,	Chang	Dallamik	Tellimat	Tellimat
Six,	Atoo	*In counting more*		Arbanget
Seven,	Ooloo	*than five, they repeat the ſame*		Arbanget / Attauſek
Eight,	Kamching	*words over again.*		Arbanget mardlik
Nine,	Seching			Kollin illoet
Ten,	Haſc			Kollit

APPENDIX, N° VII.

A TABLE of the VARIATIONS of the COMPASS, obſerved by Captain COOK during his paſſage from ENGLAND to the CAPE OF GOOD HOPE. *See Vol. I. p.* 49.

1776.		Latitude.	Longitude	Variation.	Time.
		° ′	° ′	° ′	
☉ July	14	50 8 N.	4 40 W.	20 18⅓ W.	Evening.
♃	18	48 44	5 20	23 0⅚	Ditto.
☽	22	48 35	5 36	25 4	Morning.
		44 17	8 18	22 42	Ditto.
♂	23	43 55	8 28	22 26	Evening.
☿	24	43 46	8 33	23 14½	Ditto.
♃	25	42 58	9 34	23 14½	Ditto.
♀	26	40 38	10 7	22 56	Ditto.
☽	29	33 51	14 32	18 31	Morning.
♂	30	33 4	14 53	19 3½	Evening.
		32 4	15 4	18 24	Morning.
☿	31	31 10	15 27	18 18⅔	Evening.
At anchor in the Road of St. Cruz in Teneriffe.				14 41⅓	
☿ Auguſt	7	23 54	18 36	15 1	Ditto.
♀	9	20 29	19 56	14 10⅓	Ditto.
		19 41	20 29	13 23½	Morning.
☽	12	15 34	23 10	9 46⅙	Ditto.
☿	14	13 49	23 23	9 28	Ditto.
♃	15	12 21	23 34	9 48	Ditto.
♀	16	11 51	24 2	8 9½	Ditto.
☽	19	9 47	22 52	9 2⅔	Evening.
		8 55	22 39	9 25⅘	Morning.
♃	22	6 33	20 51	10 16½	Ditto.
♀	23	6 29	21 2	11 13	Evening.
		6 9	20 59	10 19	Morning.
☽	26	4 23	21 12	9 5	Ditto.

1776.	Latitude.	Longitude.	Variation.	Time.
	° ′	° ′	° ′	
♂ August 27	3 59 N.	21 40 W.	8 35 W.	Evening.
	3 45	22 10	8 37	Morning.
☿ 28	3 37	22 23	8 36½	Evening.
	By an amplitude.		7 58½	Ditto.
♀ 30	2 40	23 27	7 49	Ditto.
	2 20	24 35	6 49	Morning.
♄ 31	2 5	25 12	6 33¾	Evening.
	1 14	26 12	5 34½	Morning.
☉ September 1	0 51	27 52	5 15½	Evening.
	0 7 N.	27 23	4 42⅓	Morning.
☽ 2	1 13 S.	28 30	3 26⅞	Ditto.
♂ 3	1 50	28 49	3 31½	Evening.
	2 48	29 18	3 20	Morning.
☿ 4	3 37	29 24	2 55⅙	Evening.
	4 20	30 12	2 37	Morning.
♃ 5	5 0	30 51	2 2¾	Evening.
	5 34	31 49	1 21½	Morning.
♀ 6	6 0	32 15	0 21½ W.	Evening.
	6 45	33 11	0 33⅓ E.	Morning.
♄ 7	7 18	33 30	0 3½ W.	Evening.
	7 50	33 48	0 11 W.	Morning.
☉ 8	8 43	34 14	0 12½ W.	Ditto.
☽ 9	9 1	34 14	0 18⅛ E.	Evening.
	9 35	34 29	0 6½ E.	Morning.
♂ 10	10 4	34 19	0 40 W.	Evening.
	11 1	34 19	0 6⅔ E.	Morning.
☿ 11	12 40	34 19	0 41⅔ E.	Ditto.
♃ 12	13 23	34 18	0 40⅙ E.	Evening.
	14 11	34 2	0 16⅚ E.	Morning.
♀ 13	14 47	34 4	1 8 E.	Evening amplitude.
	15 33	34 16	1 20 E.	Morning.
♄ 14	16 12	34 20	1 23⅙ E.	Evening.
	16 58	34 55	2 30½ E.	Morning.
☉ 15	17 40	35 8	2 11 E.	Evening.
	18 30	35 26	2 16⅞	Morning.
☽ 16	20 8	35 49	4 2½	Ditto.
♂ 17	20 46	35 50	2 43⅞	Evening.
	21 37	35 42	2 44⅘	Morning.
☿ 18	22 17	35 41	2 33½	Evening.
♀ 20	25 54	34 37	3 32½	Ditto.
	26 47	33 55	3 16½	Morning.
♄ 21	27 14	33 26	3 5½	Evening.
	27 44	32 35	2 23⅔	Morning.
☉ 22	28 19	31 51	2 1⅓	Ditto.

1776.		Latitude.	Longitude.	Variation.	Time.
☽	September 23	28 36 S.	31 5 W.	2 31¾ E.	Evening.
		29 12	29 59	1 10½	Morning.
♂	24	29 29	29 21	1 30	Evening.
		30 4	28 8	0 31	Morning.
☿	25	30 25	27 30	0 50⅕ E.	Evening.
☉	29	33 43	16 50	3 46 W.	Morning.
☽	30	33 48	16 7	4 45½	Evening.
		33 56	15 28	4 45½	Morning.
☿	October 2	34 16	12 0	7 1	Evening.
		34 16	10 2	7 13⅛	Morning.
♀	4	34 45	8 58	6 32	Evening.
		Amplitude.		7 52	Ditto.
		35 37	9 4	6 9⅖	Morning.
♄	5	35 35½	9 12	6 50⅔	Evening.
		35 49	8 49	7 40⅓	Morning.
♂	8	35 19	7 45	8 47	Evening.
		Amplitude.		6 59¼	Ditto.
		35 30	7 35	9 12	Morning.
☿	9	35 17	7 5	8 45¾	Evening.
				6 59¼	Ditto.
♃	10	35 39	3 47 W.	11 56	Morning.
♂	15	34 57	8 40 E.	19 26¼	Evening.
At the Cape of Good Hope,				21 58½	On board.
				22 14⅔	On ſhore.

THE END.

ERRATUM.

Vol. II. p. 360. l. 22. for *bear* read *veer*.

BL